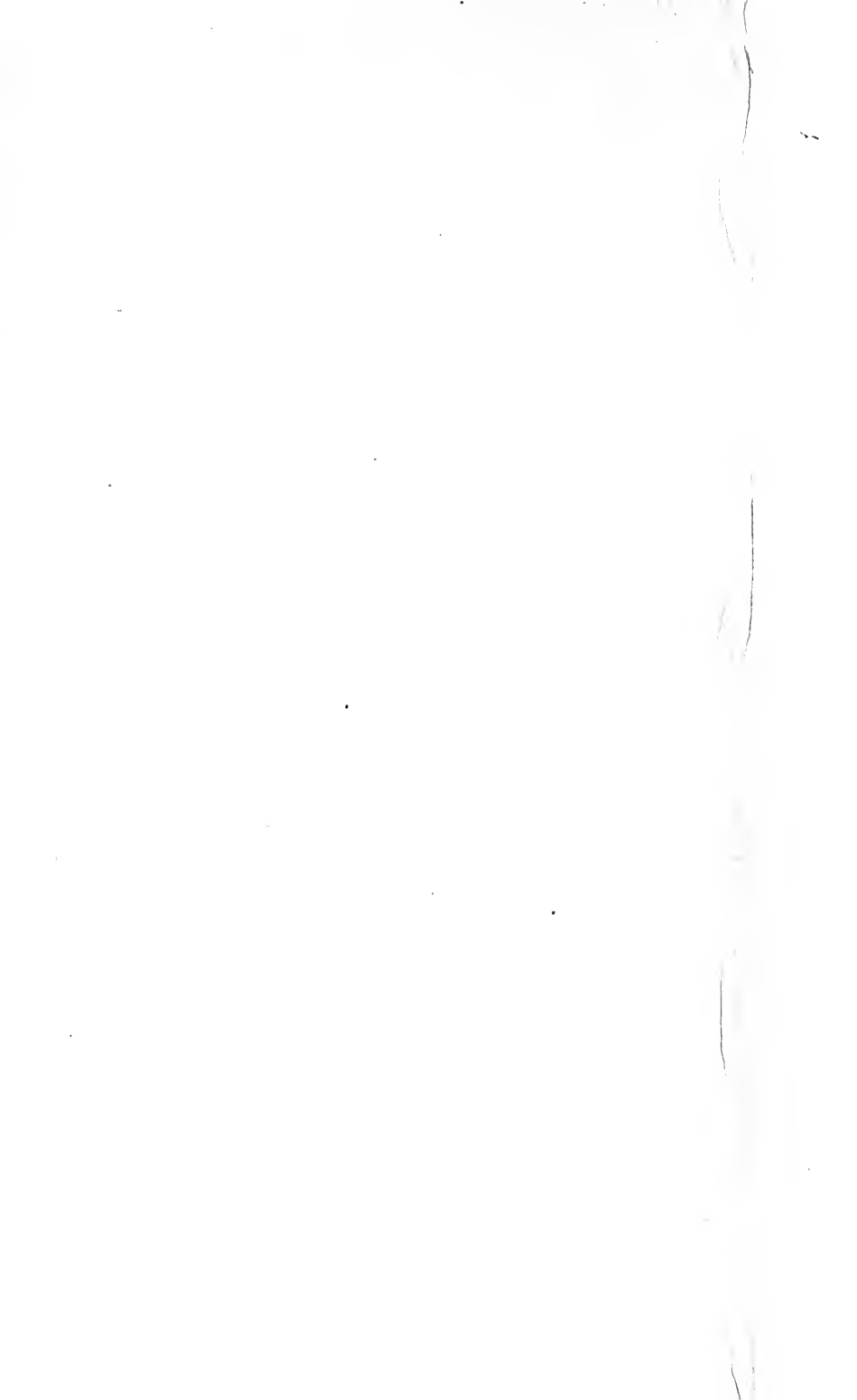


UNIV. OF
TORONTO
LIBRARY



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

W

BULLETIN

OF THE

UNIVERSITY OF WISCONSIN

ECONOMICS, POLITICAL SCIENCE, AND HISTORY SERIES

VOLUME I

(1894-1896)

FREDERICK J. TURNER, PH. D., Editor

Professor of American History

PUBLISHED BY AUTHORITY OF LAW AND WITH THE APPROVAL OF
THE REGENTS OF THE UNIVERSITY

MADISON, WIS.
PUBLISHED BY THE UNIVERSITY
1897

47001
99

2

1111

1111

COMMITTEE OF PUBLICATION OF THE BULLETIN

OF THE

UNIVERSITY OF WISCONSIN

CHARLES KENDALL ADAMS, LL. D., PRESIDENT OF THE UNIVERSITY

WILLIAM H. HOBBS, Ph. D., EDITOR-IN-CHIEF

EDITORS

CHARLES F. SMITH, Ph. D., Professor of Greek

Editor of the Philology and Literature Series

WILLIAM H. HOBBS, Ph. D., Assistant Professor of Mineralogy and Petrology

Editor of the Science Series

FREDERICK J. TURNER, Ph. D., Professor of American History

Editor of the Economics, Political Science, and History Series

NELSON O. WHITNEY, C. E., Professor of Railway Engineering

Editor of the Engineering Series

CONTENTS OF VOLUME I.

| | <i>Page.</i> |
|---|--------------|
| No. 1. The Geographical Distribution of the Vote of the Thirteen States on the Federal Constitution, 1787-8, by Orin Grant Libby, M. L., Fellow in History..... | 1 |
| No. 2. The Finances of the United States from 1775 to 1789, with special reference to the Budget, by Charles J. Bullock, A. B., Fellow in History..... | 117 |
| No. 3. The Province of Quebec and the Early American Revolution, a study in English-American Colonial History, by Victor Coffin, Ph. D., Assistant Professor of European History..... | 275 |



BULLETIN OF THE UNIVERSITY OF WISCONSIN

ECONOMICS, POLITICAL SCIENCE, AND HISTORY SERIES
VOL. 1, NO. 1, PP. 1-116

THE GEOGRAPHICAL DISTRIBUTION OF THE VOTE OF
THE THIRTEEN STATES ON THE FEDERAL
CONSTITUTION, 1787-8

BY

ORIN GRANT LIBBY, M. L.

Fellow in History

PUBLISHED BY AUTHORITY OF LAW AND WITH THE APPROVAL OF
THE REGENTS OF THE UNIVERSITY

MADISON, WIS.
PUBLISHED BY THE UNIVERSITY
JUNE, 1894



EDITOR'S NOTE.

The following paper is one of a series of studies carried on in my seminary in American history, with the design of contributing to an understanding of the relations between the political history of the United States, and the physiographic, social, and economic conditions underlying this history. A preliminary paper by the editor, indicating some aspects of the proposed work, has already been published under the title, "The Significance of the Frontier in American History." (Proceedings of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin, December 14, 1893; and Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1893, Senate Misc. Doc. No. 104, 53d Cong., 2d Sess., in press).

It is believed that many phases of our political history have been obscured by the attention paid to state boundaries, and to the sectional lines of North and South. At the same time the economic interpretation of our history has been neglected. In the study of the persistence of the struggle for state particularism in American constitutional history, it was inevitable that writers should make prominent the state as a political factor. But, from the point of view of the rise and growth of sectionalism and of nationalism, it is much more important to note the existence of great social and economic areas, independent of state lines, which have acted as units in political history, and which have changed their political attitude as they changed their economic organization, and divided into new groups.

American growth has exhibited not only the evolution of the Atlantic coast from sparse settlement to concen-

trated city life, with all the changes in political sentiments involved in these economic and social transformations; it has also exhibited the spread of population steadily westward, with areas of sparse settlement on the borders of this advancing society, contemporaneous with the complex and concentrated settlements of the older regions. Thus the United States has been at once a developed country and a primitive one. The same political questions have been put to a society, advanced in some regions, and undeveloped in others. More than this, each area of settlement has been undergoing continual modifications. Physiographic conditions have facilitated the rapid evolution of some areas and have retarded others, so that the complexity of this grouping has been increased. We have also the peculiar transformation of the South and the slave system — the changes involved in the substitution of cotton culture for rice and tobacco culture, the changes resulting from the Civil War, emancipation, and the gradual development of diversified industry in the South similar to that in the North.

Within the United States there have been exhibited contemporaneously all the stages of social progress, from the hunting to the manufacturing stage. Each of these social conditions has been exhibited on a determinable geographical area. Each of these areas has been evolving into a higher stage of social advance; the grain raising region becomes a region with diversified farming; the region with diversified farming becomes the region of manufacture; the hunting or pastoral region of the arid tracts, is turned by irrigation into a varied agricultural region, with corresponding social transformations. On specific political questions each economic area has reflected its peculiar interests. At a subsequent period, when the geographical area occupied by this stage of economic development has evolved into a higher economic stage, the change is made apparent in changed views on similar political questions. Thus

Wisconsin, once a "Granger state," has now little sympathy with the western Populists.

The effects of these differences in organic areas upon specific political questions has been noted with more or less insight into the real economic territorial divisions, by occasional writers. But no writer has as yet brought out the importance of these groups and their transformations as continuous factors in our history. Since the present paper was completed, I have noted, in Mr. Hildreth's History of the United States, an important example of the use of economic divisions to explain political action, in a limited period. It seen will be that the statement is dogmatic and from the point of view of a Federalist, but the opinion of Mr. Hildreth is of weight, and as it goes to confirm the correctness of the results embodied in the present paper, I quote the passage.

"The Federal party with Washington and Hamilton at its head, represented the experience, the prudence, the practical wisdom, the discipline, the conservative reason and instincts of the country. The opposition headed by Jefferson, expressed its hopes, wishes, theories, many of them enthusiastic and impracticable, more especially its passions, its sympathies and antipathies, its impatience of restraint. The Federalists had their strength in those narrow districts where a concentrated population had produced and contributed to maintain that complexity of institutions and that reverence for social order, which, in proportion as men are brought into contiguity, become more absolutely necessities of existence. The ultra-democratical ideas of the opposition prevailed in all that more extensive region in which the dispersion of population, and the despotic authority vested in individuals over families of slaves, kept society in a state of immaturity, and made legal restraints the more irksome in proportion as their necessity was the less felt. Massachusetts and Connecticut stood at the head of the one party, supported, though not always without some wavering by the rest of New England. The

other party was led by Virginia, by whose finger all the states south and west of the Potomac might be considered to be guided. The only exception was South Carolina, in the tide water district of which state a certain number of the wealthier and more intelligent planters, led by a few men of talents and probity, who had received their education in England, were inclined to support the Federal policy, so ably upheld in Congress by Smith, Harper, Pinckney and Rutledge. But even in South Carolina the mass of the voting population felt and thought otherwise; nor could the influence of a few individuals long resist a numerical preponderancy so decided. As for the states of Georgia, Tennessee and Kentucky, and except for a brief moment, North Carolina, they followed without doubt or hesitation in the wake of Virginia; and the rapidly increasing backwoods settlements of all these states constantly added new strength to the opposition. . . . The decision between Federalism and the so-called Republican party, depended on the two great and growing states of Pennsylvania and New York; and from the very fact that they were growing, that both of them had an extensive backwoods frontier, and that both were constantly receiving accessions of political enthusiasts from Europe, they both inclined more and more to the Republican side.¹

In addition to the light cast by the paper upon the antipathy felt by the interior agricultural settlements to strong government, it is interesting to note the influence of frontier conditions and sparse settlement in permitting lax business honor, inflated paper currency and wild-cat banking. Mr. Libby shows that the colonial and revolutionary interior was the region whence emanated many of the worst forms of an evil currency. The West in the War of 1812 repeated the phenomenon on the frontier of that day, while the speculation and wild-cat banking of the period of the crisis of 1837 occurred on the new frontier belt; and the

¹ Hildreth, *History of United States*, v., 415. 416.

present Populistic agitation finds its stronghold in those western and southern regions whose social and economic conditions are in many respects strikingly like those existing in 1787 in the areas that opposed the ratification of the Constitution. A phase of social transformation has passed westward, and carried with it, in successive areas, similar agitations over questions of debt and taxation. Between paper money agitations in the colonial days, and the present Western unrest and remedial proposals, there is a historical continuity. Like social conditions have wrought like effects. Thus each one of the periods of lax financial integrity coincides with periods when a new set of frontier communities has arisen, and, for the most part, coincides in area with these successive frontiers. A primitive society can hardly be expected to show intelligent appreciation of the complexity of business interests in a developed society. The continual recurrence of these areas of paper-money agitation is another evidence that the similar social and economic areas can be isolated and studied as factors of the highest importance in American history.

It is believed, therefore, that a series of studies upon natural economic groupings in American history will be of service to the investigator who desires to understand political history in the light of economic and social forces. To such a historical geography of organic social and economic areas, Mr. Libby's paper is designed to contribute.

FREDERICK J. TURNER.

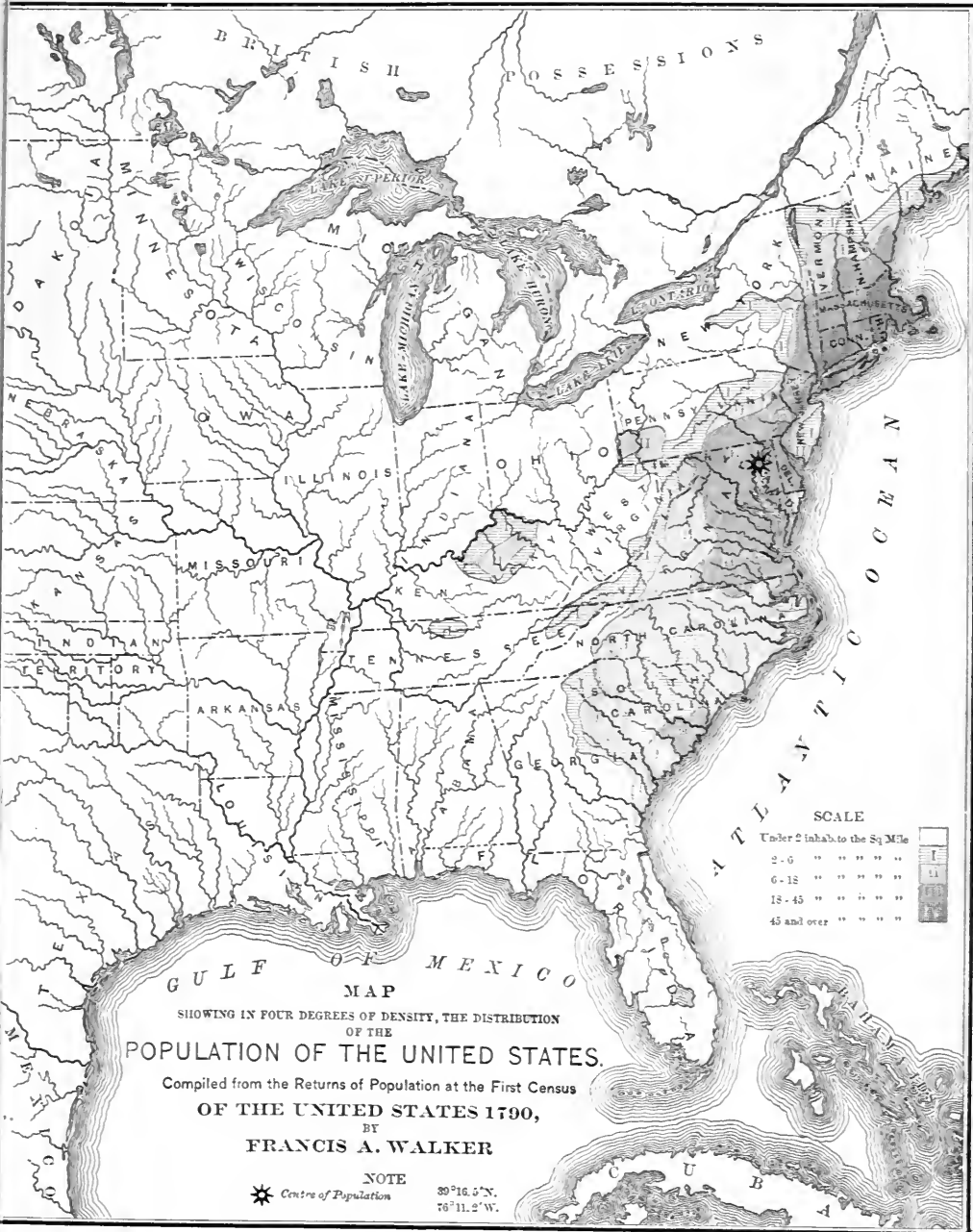
2775



CONTENTS.

| | PAGE. |
|--|---------|
| Map showing the Distribution of the Vote on the Federal Constitution. | |
| Map showing the Distribution of Population in 1790. | |
| Introduction. | 1-6 |
| Chapter I. State Areas of Opposition and Support of the Federal Constitution. | 7-45 |
| Chapter II. Interstate Groupings of the Opposition and Support of the Federal Constitution. | 46-49 |
| Chapter III. Relation of the Paper Money and Debt Fractions to the Ratification of the Constitution. | 50-69 |
| Chapter IV. Instructions to Delegates. | 70-94 |
| Appendix A. Sources for the Mapping of the Local Units. | 95-104 |
| Appendix B. Corrections to the Vote of Massachusetts, as given in Volume II. of Elliot's Debates. | 105-109 |
| Appendix C. Votes of the Delegates in the Respective State Conventions | 110-116 |

2112



THE GEOGRAPHICAL DISTRIBUTION OF THE VOTE OF THE THIRTEEN STATES ON THE FEDERAL CONSTITUTION, 1787-8.

INTRODUCTION.

The history of the period of the ratification of the Constitution of the United States has been studied from various points of view. Some writers have discussed the purely legal aspects of the Constitution. Others have approached it from the side of political science. The debates in the Federal and state conventions have long been text-books for the student of the Constitution, while a whole mass of pamphlet discussion bearing on the question has been carefully collected. The evolution of the

NOTE.—The library of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin has been generously opened for my use by the secretary, Mr. Reuben Gold Thwaites. It has furnished me with most of the material necessary for this paper, but I have supplemented its resources by correspondence with historical investigators and collectors who were able to furnish me needed documents. In particular I am indebted to the following gentlemen, whose courtesies I desire to acknowledge: A. S. Batchellor, editor of the New Hampshire State Papers, Littleton, New Hampshire; Henry P. Rolfe, J. B. Walker, and O. G. Hammond, of Concord, New Hampshire; A. S. Chapman, town clerk, Simsbury, Connecticut; Wm. E. Foster, Librarian of Providence Public Library, Providence, Rhode Island; Sidney S. Rider, Providence, Rhode Island; J. L. Harrison, Assistant Librarian, New York State Library, Albany, New York; F. D. Stone, Librarian of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; Wm. H. Egle, State Librarian of State Library of Pennsylvania, Harrisburg, Pennsylvania; Lyman P. Powell, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; Austin Scott, Rutgers College, New Brunswick, New Jersey; Morris R. Hamilton, State Librarian, New Jersey State Library, Trenton, New Jersey; Bernard C. Steiner, Librarian of Enoch Pratt Free Library, Baltimore, Maryland; R. A. Brock, Secretary of the Southern Historical Society, Richmond, Virginia; Wm. M. Laughlin, Lexington, Virginia; Wm. Wirt Henry, Richmond, Virginia; Stephen B. Weeks, formerly of Trinity College, Durham, North Carolina; Jos. Blount Cheshire, Jr., Charlotte, North Carolina; R. Means Davis, South Carolina College, Columbia, South Carolina; and especially to Professor Chas. H. Haskins, of the University of Wisconsin.

various political institutions provided for in the Constitution has been studiously worked out, and it may be safely assumed that recent writers have corrected the misconception that the instrument was a product of abstract reasoning.

But there is another misconception as firmly rooted, perhaps, in popular opinion as the former; namely, that the fate of the Constitution was determined exclusively, or at least predominantly, by discussions in convention on the various provisions of that instrument, from the point of view of the political scientist, or of the statesman. Doubtless questions of liberty, and of checks to power, had a prominent position in the thought of this generation of Americans. But every student of the antecedents of the movement for a Constitutional convention cannot but be impressed with the fact, that the debates in the conventions called to ratify the action of the Constitutional convention only inadequately present the opinions and prejudices of the voters themselves, as revealed in the struggles of the Confederation period. This period was one of paper money agitation, of efforts to evade the payment of debt, of resistance to taxation, and of counter efforts to give security to interstate commerce and strength to national credit. The state system under the Articles of Confederation served as a shield for the debtor classes. Many of the motives behind the arguments for state sovereignty were not of a character to be urged in the debates on the ratification of the Constitution. Thus questions of the sovereignty of the state, and questions of the dangers to liberty from the power over the purse given to the Federal government, were put prominently forward. Writers have interpreted these discussions rather as evidences of the continuity of the English struggle over the control of the purse, than in the light of the struggles of the debtor factions in the various states in the period which just preceded the convention.¹ The undertow of public opinion, deeper and

¹ Sumner's chapter on ratification in his *Alexander Hamilton* gives the juster view.

stronger than the surface indications, seen in the formal speeches, tracts, and convention arguments, has been neglected. Inaccurate and sweeping generalizations respecting the location of the friends and the enemies of the Constitution have been made; but no detailed investigation has yet been published to show the distribution of the contending forces. For example, it has been asserted that a line drawn fifty miles from the coast would pretty accurately divide the Federalists from the Anti-Federalists.¹ The truth is that were this a correct statement of the matter, the Constitution would have been rejected in New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Virginia, and Georgia!

The plan of this paper is briefly as follows: A map has been prepared to show the location of the Federal and the Anti-Federal areas. This has been done, as shown on the map, by indicating as Federal all those towns, counties, or parishes, whose delegates to the ratification convention of the state voted for the Constitution; and as Anti-Federal, those towns, counties, or parishes, whose delegates voted against ratification. Those local units whose delegates divided have also been indicated, with symbols to show on which side the majority lay. To this method exceptions have been made as follows: When it has been found that the delegate did not correctly represent his constituents the map has been corrected to show the real sentiment of the voters; corrections have also been made where the town, county, or parish was not represented in the convention, and the sentiment of its people could be ascertained from some other source. The full details of these corrections for each state are to be found in Appendix A. The map² showing the density of population in 1790 enables the reader to see in what portion of the large western

¹ Jameson's *Essays in the Constitutional History of the United States*, the chapter by Professor E. P. Smith, p. 67.

² Published with the permission of Henry Holt & Co., New York City.

counties the population was chiefly located,¹ and thus serves to correct misapprehensions arising from the size of these counties.²

Having mapped the local distribution of the friends and the enemies of the Constitution, the sectional groupings revealed within each state are considered. The significance of the position of these areas of opposition and support within the separate states is taken up, and their correspondence to natural physiographic, social, and economic areas is pointed out. The historical foundation of these groups is also discussed, and the explanation of their attitude upon the Constitution is attempted in some detail. The inquiry next turns to the interstate groupings revealed by the map, which are treated in the same manner as those of each state. A general presentation of the relation of the anti-taxation, debt, and paper money agitation to ratification completes the view.

At the outset of the investigation we are confronted with the question, how far may the votes of the delegates in the state conventions be accepted as representative of the sentiments of their constituents? It is believed that the reader can approach the detailed discussion of this question better after a consideration of the results revealed upon the presumption that the delegate did not misrepresent his constituents, in cases where no evidence to the contrary appears. The fuller treatment of the question is therefore postponed to a later chapter. The following are the general grounds for accepting the vote of the delegate in convention as, on the whole, a fair index of public sentiment in his locality.

First, in the period under discussion, especially in New

¹ A comparison of these two maps will show that the area indicated on the population map as having less than two inhabitants to the square mile is shown on the other map by an irregular line extending from Maine to Georgia.

² It is unfortunate that the local unit of the South and the Middle States was so large that a detailed view of their attitude, such as is furnished in the New England region, with its small town organization, was impossible.

England, the representative was bound by a more intimate tie of responsibility to his constituents than obtained in later times. The common use of instructions to representatives in state legislatures, and later to congressmen, shows this very clearly. The fact that the country has now passed away from this attitude with respect to the responsibility of the representative, should not mislead us regarding the practice in the period under consideration.

Second, the presumption is strong that on such a vital question as the ratification of the Constitution, the representative would not incur the odium of misrepresenting his friends and neighbors. Moreover, it is safe to say that, as a rule, the same interest that actuated the constituency would be likely to be shared by the delegate, even in the absence of instructions.

Third, an examination of the map reveals the fact that the sectional groupings do not harmonize with a theory of chance arrangement. The coherence of the various areas is explainable only on the ground of common economic and social interests. Delegations from towns or counties were rarely divided in their vote, except where the town or county itself lay in the transitional belt between Federal and Anti-Federal areas. These facts can be satisfactorily explained only on the hypothesis that, as a rule, delegates acted on the Constitution with the prejudices and interests of their locality, and with the sentiments of their constituents keenly before their minds. To this rule exceptions might be expected, and did actually occur.

Fourth, in a later chapter, it will be shown that very many delegates went instructed to the conventions, and voted according to their instructions; and that in many other cases there was a correspondence between the vote of the delegate and the ascertained attitude of the constituency; only three exceptions have been discovered. When the difficulty of recovering such instructions from

scattered town records, newspapers, etc., is considered, the number of them existing is quite remarkable.

The map represents the town and county divisions as they existed at the time of ratification. I cannot hope to have accomplished entirely without error the task of reconstructing the local geography of the period from the scattered sources in which it must be studied. But I have diligently endeavored to make the map correct. In Appendix A are given the sources which I have used for the various states, together with such explanations of the mapping as will enable the work to be checked by local antiquarians having more adequate resources for the task. It is confidently believed that such errors in mapping towns, counties, etc., as may be found, will not modify the conclusions with respect to the map as a whole.

A short criticism of the vote of Massachusetts, as given in Elliot's Debates, ii., and a detailed statement of the vote of the delegates in the state conventions by towns, counties, parishes, etc., are given in appendices B and C.

CHAPTER I.

STATE AREAS OF OPPOSITION AND SUPPORT.

Proceeding to take up each state in detail, I shall next point out the Federal and Anti-Federal areas in each, discuss the significance of the vote, and offer evidence to show the natural coherence, and the economic and social basis, of the distribution revealed in the map.

New Hampshire.

The opposition area in New Hampshire may be roughly described as an irregular quadrilateral with its north-east corner resting at the middle of the west side of Lake Winnipiseogee, its north-west corner touching the Connecticut river, the south east corner lying a trifle east of the Merrimac river where it enters the state, and the south-west corner resting on the southern boundary line, about half way between the Merrimac and the Connecticut rivers.

The Federal area of the state lay in the south-east along the coast, in a broad belt through Grafton County north of the above mentioned opposition area, and along the Connecticut river to the farthest limit of settlement.

From the foregoing statement of the boundaries of the Federal and Anti-Federal areas, it will be seen that they very naturally fall into three divisions,—the sea-coast, the interior or middle, and the Connecticut valley and border districts. The first two of these are so familiar as to require no more than a passing notice. The former, the coast area, represented the commercial and urban interests; here were to be found most of the professional men, leaders of thought, men of wealth and influence. The second section, the interior, was composed of those representing the small farmers; a population cut off from the outside world by lack of good roads, and which raised little for market except to exchange for the few things that could not be produced at home. The former class, progressive and

liberal, and familiar with the practical details of government, as a rule voted for the Constitution. The latter, conservative by environment and having little knowledge of what went on outside the narrow bounds of the home village or township, quite as generally voted against the Constitution.¹

One factor in the New Hampshire opposition is worth especial mention. There was a large Scotch-Irish element in the region west of the Merrimac river, lying within the opposition area. The towns settled by this nationality, or those which had large accessions after settlement, are: Bedford, Merrimac, Peterborough, Antrim, Deering, Hennicker, Ackworth, Windham, New Boston, Litchfield, Hudson, Amherst, Dunstable, Chester, and Londonderry.² Of these fifteen towns only three voted in favor of the Constitution.

But there was a third district in New Hampshire, the votes of which were cast for the Constitution and were decisive factors in the contest. This was the Connecticut valley or border district—a section as distinct in its economic and social features as if it had been a separate state. Its communication with the outside world was chiefly by the Connecticut river, which united it with Massachusetts and Connecticut. In interests and settlement it belonged rather to Vermont or Massachusetts than to New Hampshire. Its inhabitants, therefore, in so important an event as the adoption of the Federal Constitution would be likely to act as a unit, distinct from the rest of the state and moved by motives peculiarly their own. As early as 1776, sixteen of the border towns sent a delegate to a convention held at Dracut, Massachusetts, to petition the states

¹ It is worth adding here that of the towns with abandoned farms in New Hampshire (excluding Grafton county as exceptional from its leadership and history), 51 Anti-Federal towns show an acreage of 11,203, as against 36 Federal towns with an acreage of 6,923 in abandoned farms. See, *Secure a Home in New Hampshire* (Concord, 1892).

² Parker, *History of Londonderry*, pp. 97 and 99; *History of Bedford*, p. 112; *Life of Zachariah Chandler*, pp. 23-4.

of New Hampshire and Massachusetts to relieve the financial distress of the period. The particular grievance of these towns, however, was unfair representation.¹ At the same time, town meetings were held in Hanover, Lyme, Lebanon, Plainfield, Acworth, Marlow, Alstead, and Chesterfield in which the people voted not to elect representatives to the legislature.² Among the reasons were the lack of a fair system of legislative representation, and the property qualification required of those elected as counselors. In 1778 the "sixteen towns" joined Vermont, a union which came to an end in a year.³ In 1781 a new union was formed between Vermont and thirty-seven New Hampshire towns, east of the Connecticut river. This union like the other continued only one year.⁴ The condition of these towns is well expressed in the following: "From the time of the dissolution of the union between Vermont and the sixteen towns to the east of the Connecticut river, notwithstanding the exciting circumstances under which that union was dissolved, a large number of the inhabitants of the western part of New Hampshire had continued to be solicitous for annexation to that state. Others had a project in their minds for a new state formed out of the eastern part of Vermont and the western part of New Hampshire; others, still, were desirous that New Hampshire should exercise jurisdiction over the whole of the grants. While thus there was no well-considered plan on which all the inhabitants had settled down, there still seemed to be a general desire for change."⁵ Charlestown was a fair type of the lower river towns, not connected with this early border discontent but strongly in favor of union with Vermont in 1781. The following presents the case of this town: "Charlestown undoubtedly exerted its share of influence in

¹ New Hampshire Historical Collections, ii., pp. 61 ff.

² New Hampshire Provincial and State Papers, Boston, x., pp. 236 ff.

³ Saunderson, History of Charlestown, p. 122.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 154-9.

⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 140.

bringing about the union of the New Hampshire towns with Vermont. If we review the early history of the town, from its settlement to 1760, we shall find little in the course pursued by New Hampshire which would be adapted to attach the inhabitants to her jurisdiction. The township was not originally chartered by New Hampshire, and its settlers were disappointed on ascertaining that they were within its limits; and petitioned the King to be set back again to Massachusetts, to which state they had always supposed they belonged. The Old Bay State had been their main source of reliance. It was from thence that had come their defence in every time of trouble. Every important military detachment that had come to their aid, for sixteen years, was from that state."¹ The leader in the movement for Vermont union was Col. Elisha Payne of Lebanon. Says Batchellor in the New Hampshire State Papers (App., p. 848.) "He was educated to the law in Connecticut and came into Grafton county thoroughly imbued with Connecticut ideas as to the rights of towns as independent units of government, and as to what should be the relations of towns to the state. The temporary New Hampshire constitution of 1776 was drawn in conformity to theories that were widely at variance with his conceptions of the methods and province of government. Notwithstanding he was named for important offices under the new state government he held aloof and became a chief mover in the enterprise of establishing a state to be constituted of towns on both sides of the Connecticut river, or failing in that, to join the disaffected towns on the east side of the river to the prospective state of Vermont or a sufficient number of Vermont towns to New Hampshire to carry the balance of power to the Connecticut river."

The Connecticut valley in New Hampshire, or more properly the valley and the inland portion of Grafton county, was, therefore, a section having its own history, its own

¹ History of Charlestown, p. 159.

interests and its own leaders. When the question came up as to the adoption of the Federal Constitution, its vote was consistent throughout. Of those towns in union with Vermont in 1781, two-thirds voted for the Constitution. The "Letter of a Landholder" to the "Citizens of New Hampshire" is peculiarly applicable to these Connecticut river towns, and those of the interior of Grafton county. "New York, the trading towns on the Connecticut river, and Boston, are the sources from which a great part of your foreign supplies will be obtained, and where your produce will be exposed for market. In all these places an import is collected, of which, as consumers, you pay a share without deriving any public benefit. You can not expect any alteration in the private systems of these states unless effected by the proposed government."¹

But leadership in this section was an important element. Says Batchellor: "Judge Livermore was the acknowledged leader of the party which sought the acceptance of the proposed Constitution. The fact that the delegation from the Grafton county towns was practically unanimous in support of Mr. Livermore, gives us the right to assume that he received timely and valuable assistance, not only from those with whom he exercised a large influence through his own personality, but also from those who had long regarded Colonel Payne as their political mentor."²

The conjunction of these two elements at this critical period produced the section which I have called the Connecticut river section. In it were united the town democracy of the valley, led by Payne, and the Grafton county following of Judge Livermore, — alike in being on the frontier and separated from eastern New Hampshire. Their united support proved decisive in carrying the Constitution.

¹ *Connecticut Courant*, March 10, 1788, p. 2 (Letters of a Landholder, xi.). Also, Ford, *Essays on the Constitution*, p. 192

² *New Hampshire State Papers*, App., pp. 848-9 (Batchellor); *The Granite Monthly (New Hampshire Magazine)*, ii., p. 97 (xii., old series), 1889; *Grafton and Coos Bar Association*, 1883-9, i., p. 438; *Magazine of American History*, viii., pp. 1-23.

Massachusetts.

Turning to the map for the Massachusetts vote we can see that the state may be divided into three sections, the eastern, the middle, and the western. The middle section has for its eastern boundary an irregular line extending from about the northeast corner of Rhode Island to the point in the northern boundary of Massachusetts where the Merrimac river enters the state, and for its western boundary the tier of towns along the eastern side of the Connecticut river. The other sections lie respectively to the east and west of it. The vote of these sections on the ratification of the Constitution is as follows:

Eastern section . Yeas, 73 per cent. . Nays, 27 per cent.

Middle section . Yeas, 14 per cent. . Nays, 86 per cent.

Western section . Yeas, 42 per cent. . Nays, 58 per cent.

Such striking differences as these indicate clearly that there is something fundamental lying back of the vote. Each of these sections is an economic and social unit, the first representing the coast region, the second the interior, and the third the Connecticut valley and border districts of the state. In the eastern section the interests were commercial; there was the wealth, the influence, the urban population of the state. This section had been longest settled and was consequently the most thickly populated. Within this section lay two areas of opposition, the interior regions of the eastern section, one in Essex and Middlesex counties, south of the Merrimac river, the other in Bristol, Suffolk, and Plymouth counties, adjoining Rhode Island. The middle section of Massachusetts represented the interior agricultural interests of the state — the small farmers. From this section came a large part of the Shays faction in 1786.¹

¹ The report of the abandoned farms in Massachusetts shows that 56 Anti-Federal towns have had, or now have, such farms with an aggregate acreage of 30,318, and that 30 Federal towns have an aggregate acreage of 8,556. See, Descriptive Catalogue of Farms in Massachusetts (Boston, 1893).

The Connecticut valley or western district may be subdivided into the northern, most interior and predominantly Anti-Federal section, and the southern section, nearest the coast and predominantly Federal, with the trading towns of the Connecticut river in its southeastern part.

A few quotations from contemporary correspondence will show the drift of the parties in Massachusetts.

Extract of a letter of Henry Knox to Washington, Feb. 10, 1788:

"It is a singular circumstance that in Massachusetts the property, the ability, and the virtue of the state are almost solely in favor of the Constitution. Opposed to it are the late insurgents and all those who abetted their designs, constituting four-fifths of the opposition."¹

Extract of a letter from Madison to Washington, Feb. 3, 1788, quoting a letter received from Boston from a member of the convention there:

"Never was there an assembly in this state in possession of greater ability and information than the present convention, yet I am in doubt whether they will approve the constitution. There are, unhappily, three parties opposed to it. First: All men who are in favor of paper money and tender laws. Those are more or less in every part of the state. Second: All the late insurgents and their abettors. In the three great western counties they are very numerous. We have in the convention eighteen or twenty who were actually in Shays' army."²

An extract of a letter of Henry Knox to Washington. Jan. 14, 1788, gives the following classification of parties in the state: "The first is the commercial part of the state to which are added all the men of considerable property, the clergy, the lawyers, including the judges of all the courts, and all the neighborhood of all the great towns. . . . The third party are the insurgents, or their favorers,

¹ Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, 1788 (Boston, 1836), p. 409.

² *Ibid.*, p. 406.

the great majority of whom are for an annihilation of debts, public and private, and therefore they will not approve of the constitution."¹

In the province of Maine the larger part of the Anti-Federal vote was inland, while the Federal towns were mostly along the coast. The vote of Maine was complicated by the new issue of separation from Massachusetts, which had begun to agitate the people of this province. Many votes were cast against the Federal Constitution on account of its being favored by the ruling classes of Massachusetts who were supposed to be opposed to separation from Maine.²

Connecticut.

In Connecticut the sentiment was overwhelming in favor of the Constitution. The opposition was scattered and unimportant. Its two chief centers were in New Haven county on the coast and in five or six towns on each side of the Connecticut river at the northern boundary, connecting with a group of opposition towns in Massachusetts. The following statement of the opposition in Connecticut is from "Letters of a Landholder" (Oliver Ellsworth): "The first to oppose a federal government will be the old friends of Great Britain, who in their hearts cursed the prosperity of your councils. Many of these men are still among us and for several years their hopes of a reunion with Great Britain have been high. They rightly judge that nothing will so soon effect their wishes as the deranged state we are now in, if it should continue. They see that the merchant is weary of the government which cannot protect his property and that the farmer, finding no benefit from the Revolution, begins to dread much evil; and they hope the people will soon supplicate the protection of their old masters. . . . Debtors in desperate circumstances

¹ Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, 1788, p. 399.

² Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, p. 406 (Letter of Madison to Washington, Feb. 3, 1788).

who have not resolution to be either honest or industrious, will be the next men to take the alarm. . . . Paper money and tender acts is the only atmosphere in which they can breathe and live. . . . There is another kind of people will be found in the opposition. Men of much self-importance and supposed skill in politics who are not of sufficient consequence to obtain public employment, but can spread jealousies in the little districts of country where they are placed. . . . But in the present case, men who have lucrative and influential state offices, if they act from principles of self interest, will be tempted to oppose an alteration."¹ . . . The same writer in a later number says: "In Connecticut our wrongheads are few in number and feeble in their influence. The opposition here is not one half so great to the federal government as it was three years ago to the federal impost, and the faction, such as it is, is from the same blindfold party."²

The following account of the opposition is taken from the *New Haven Gazette*: "Extract of a letter from a gentleman in Hartford to his friend in this city. dated January 6th. . . . 'The opposition, headed by General Wadsworth, supported by Colonel W. Williams, Messrs. Joseph Hopkins, Carpenter, Hall and H. Humphreys, is dwindling to nothing. . . . The arguments urged by General Wadsworth have exceedingly injured the cause of the opposition. They have been weak and in some instances urged with great spleen."³

From the journal of the convention: "The paragraph which respects taxes, imports and excises was largely debated by several gentlemen. General Wadsworth objected against it because it gave the power of the purse to the general legislature, another paragraph gave the power of the sword; and that authority which has the power of the

¹ Ford, *Essays on the Constitution, 1787-8* (Letters of a Landholder, ii.), pp. 143 ff.

² Ford, *Essays on the Constitution, 1787-8* (Letters of a Landholder, viii.), p. 177.

³ Jan. 9, 1788, vol. iii., No. 1, p. 5.

sword and purse is despotic. He objected against impost and excises because their operation would be partial and in favor of the southern states."¹

From its strong federal vote Connecticut clearly belongs to the coast area pointed out in New Hampshire and Massachusetts, but its great unanimity must have been based on other grounds than this alone, for the interior as well as the coast districts, were overwhelmingly in favor of ratification. From what has already been said it is seen that both merchant and farmer had reason to lose faith in the Confederation and to desire a stronger Federal government. In a speech of Oliver Ellsworth in the state convention we find the following: "Our being tributaries to our ^{tr}sister states is a consequence of the want of a federal system. The state of New York raises £60,000 or £80,000 a year by impost. Connecticut consumes about one third of the goods upon which this impost is laid and consequently pays one third of this sum to New York. If we import by the medium of Massachusetts she has an impost and to her we pay a tribute. If this is done while we have the shadow of a national government, what shall we not suffer when even that shadow is gone?"² Melancthon Smith, in an address to the people of New York said: "It cannot be controverted that Connecticut and New Jersey were very much influenced in their determinations on the question by local considerations. The duty of impost laid by this state has been a subject of complaint by those states. The new constitution transfers the power of imposing these duties from the state to the general government and carries the proceeds to the use of the union instead of that of the state. This is a popular matter with the people of those states, and at the same time is not advanced by the sensible opposers to the new system in this state as an objection to it."³

¹ *New Haven Gazette*, Jan. 17, 1788, p. 2.

² *Ibid.*, Jan. 9, 1788, p. 4.

³ Ford, Pamphlets on the Constitution, 1787-8., pp. 104-5.

Thus it is seen that in Connecticut the opposition was unimportant but of the same character as that in Massachusetts, and that the pressure of the New York impost united all classes in favoring the new government, which would protect them from the commercial exactions of that state.

Rhode Island.

In Rhode Island the party of opposition was able to prevent ratification till 1790. From the lack of records, it is not now possible to trace very accurately the development of a Federal party in Rhode Island previous to 1790. The following extract from resolutions adopted by the town of Portsmouth, August 27, 1789, is significant of the conditions during the long struggle for ratification: "And as we hope the formal accession of this state to the constitution is not far distant, and as our separation can by no means be imputed to the seaport towns, the inhabitants whereof are, almost unanimously, zealous advocates for the new constitution; and as a continuance of the above mentioned restrictions on the inhabitants of this state will accumulate unmerited distress upon that part of the community which has been most firmly attached to the union, and as we can not but hope that the benign disposition of congress towards the agricultural part of the state, manifested in the admission of their produce and manufactures free, will also be extended to the seaport towns. . . ."¹

The paper money party in the state was in general opposed to the new constitution.²

Thus as in Massachusetts, the wealthy and commercial classes united to favor the Constitution, as opposed to the interior agricultural class who believed, among other things, in paper money issues.

¹ Staples, Rhode Island in the Continental Congress, pp. 636-7.

² Madison to Washington, Oct. 14, 1787, Works i., p. 342; Madison to Jefferson, Oct. 24, 1787, *ibid.*, p. 355; Staples, Rhode Island, p. 621.

New York.

New York presents the problem in its simplest form. The entire mass of interior counties, Ulster, Orange, Albany, Montgomery, Clinton, and Columbia, were solidly Anti-Federal, comprising the agricultural portion of the state, the last settled and the most thinly populated. There were, however, in this region two Federal cities (not represented in the convention), Albany¹ in Albany county and Hudson² in Columbia county, with a population respectively of 3,506³ and 2,584.⁴

The Federal area centered about New York city and county; to the southwest lay Richmond county (Staten Island), to the southeast Kings county and to the northeast Westchester county; while still further extending this area at the northeast lay the divided county of Dutchess, with a vote in the convention of 4 to 2 in favor of the Constitution, and at the southeast were the divided counties of Queens and Suffolk, with a convention vote respectively of 4 to 0 and 3 to 1 in favor of the Constitution. These radiating strips of territory, with New York city as a center form a unit, in general favorable to the new Constitution; and it is significant of this unity that Dutchess, Queens, and Suffolk counties broke away from the Anti-Federal phalanx and joined the Federalists, securing thereby the adoption of the Constitution. The pressure of a badly divided or wavering constituency is very evident in this change. It is also significant that neither in the counties west of the Hudson river nor in those north of Dutchess county was there any wavering in the opposition,—at least but a single Federal vote from Orange county shows signs of any. The classification of the three divided counties with the Federal, therefore, is justified by these facts. The unity of this section

¹ Leake, *Life of Lamb*, p. 332; *Pennsylvania Gazette*, June 18, 1788.

² *Pennsylvania Gazette*, June 18, 1788.

³ Weise, *History of the City of Albany*, p. 514.

⁴ *History of Columbia County*, p. 207.

also appears from the following: "To the Honorable the Convention of the State of New York, . . . The consequences to your state, which may follow the rejection of the proposed constitution should certainly engage a great share of your deliberations. In the event of nine states adopting, Jersey and Connecticut will no longer receive their supplies through you, nor send their produce to your market for sale, for you will be on the footing of foreigners. . . . These things will be most seriously felt throughout your whole commonwealth, but to the islands of New York, Long Island and Staten Island, they will be almost ruinous. These three districts must act together, they are peculiarly placed by nature. Should they fear the ruin of their commerce and manufactures, and the foreign duty on such of their produce as they may send to the ports of the new union, should these considerations induce the honest opponents of the constitution among them to adhere to the new confederacy, what can prevent their secession? If Staten Island were to associate herself with New Jersey and the islands of New York and Long Island with Connecticut, these two respectable states and the new union would be bound to defend them. . . . Suppose for a moment the city and county of New York to have separated themselves from your government. Both banks of the Hudson would then belong to the new confederacy. The destruction of your foreign trade must be the inevitable consequence."¹ To the same effect is the following: "We hear that in event of the rejection of the constitution by New York, the six most southern counties² of that state will declare their readiness to secede from the state of New York and form a distinct state."³

One of the important reasons at work among the Anti-Federalists may be seen from the following extract of

¹ *Pennsylvania Gazette*, June 11, 1788, p. 2; also, May 14, 1788, p. 2.

² Kings, New York, Queens, Richmond, Suffolk, and Westchester.

³ *New Haven Gazette*, July 24, 1788, p. 7; also, Jay to Washington, May 29, 1788, Correspondence, iii., p. 334.

a letter from New York, July 20, 1788: "He (George Clinton) tells them that if they ratify the constitution, they must by heavy taxes support their government, which is now wholly done by the impost, etc. This with the Mynheers is a weighty argument."¹

Oliver Ellsworth said of the Anti-Federalists: "In New York the opposition is not to this constitution in particular, but to the federal impost; it is confined wholly to salary men and their connections, men whose salary is paid by the state impost. This class of citizens are endeavoring to convince the ignorant part of the community that an annual income of £50,000 extorted from the citizens of Massachusetts, Connecticut and New Jersey is a great blessing to New York. And although the regulation of trade and other advantages of a federal government would secure more than five times that sum to the people of that state, yet, as this would not come through the same hands, these men find fault with the constitution."²

The Federalists on the other hand were strengthened by the addition of the tories to their side, as may be seen from the following: "The Tories, to a man, sided with Hamilton and his party, and it was the successful efforts of that gentleman to overcome the public animosities that enabled him to obtain his election to the Assembly of 1787, and to carry out his favorite measure—the repeal of the laws of exclusion under which the Loyalists were disfranchised. There he had the address and influence to procure the abrogation of the most important part of those laws, and, by the accession of the great body of the enfranchised Tories to his party to frustrate at once his opponents in the city, and to secure his election to the general convention of 1787, and afterwards that of his friends from the city in the convention of the state, assembled in 1788."³

¹ *Massachusetts Centinel*, July 26, 1788, p. 3.

² Ford, *Essays on the Constitution*, p. 176. (Letters of a Landholder, viii.)

³ Leake, *Life of Lamb*, App., p. 389.

But after all this statement of evidence for the parties in New York, what has been given seems insufficient to adequately explain why the state should have been so strongly Anti-Federal north of New York county, with such a river as the Hudson and its tributary, the Mohawk, opening up the whole region to settlement and to commercial relations with New York city. We have seen how decisive a factor in New England the Connecticut river valley was, and the question naturally arises why was not the Hudson valley equally a Federal section? To answer this question it will be necessary to take a brief survey of the land grants previous to the Revolution and the effect of the system in vogue in New York upon the settlement and improvement of its lands. As early as 1698 the Earl of Bellomont writes to the Lords of Trade concerning the evil effects of the large grants (made by Colonel Fletcher, former governor) upon the settlement of the province.¹ The following occurs in his letter, in 1700, to the Lords of Trade: "If it were not for Colonel Fletcher's intolerable, corrupt selling away the lands of this province, it would outthrive the Massachusetts province and quickly outdo them in people and trade. The people are so cramped here for want of land that several families within my own knowledge and observation are removed to the new country (New Jersey and Pennsylvania) for, to use Mr. Graham's expression to me, and that often repeated, too, 'What man will be such a fool to become a base tenant to Mr. Dellius, Colonel Schuyler, Mr. Livingston (and so he ran through the whole role of our mighty landgraves), when for crossing the Hudson's river that man can for a song purchase a good freehold in the Jersies?' If I am rightly informed, here will be a world of corruption and fraud discovered in most of these extravagant grants, not only in respect of their vastness, but because they have swallowed up the lands of abundance of private families, who are thereby

¹ New York Colonial Documents, iv., p. 397.

ruined.”¹ The records of the next sixty years are full of such reports and of the ineffectual attempts on the part of the Crown to break up some of the largest grants.² The abuse, however, continued almost unchecked throughout the entire period. The following extract of the report of Lieut. Gov. Colden to the Lords of Trade, September 20, 1764, gives the condition of the land grants at that time: “Your lordships have been informed of several extravagant grants of lands in this province; three of them contain, as the proprietors claim, above a million of acres each, several others above 200,000. All these were made without any previous survey, as usual in other cases, and without mentioning any quantity of land intended to be granted. Though these grants contain a great part of the province, they are made on trifling acknowledgments. The far greater part of them still remain uncultivated, without any benefit to the community, and are likewise a discouragement to the settling and improving the lands in the neighborhood of them, for, from the uncertainty of their boundaries, the patentees of these great tracts are daily enlarging their pretensions, and by tedious and most expensive law-suits, distress and ruin poor families who have taken out grants near them. . . . Three of these great tracts have in their grants privilege each of sending a representative in general assembly, so that the proprietors are become hereditary members of that house. The owners of the other great patents, being men of the greatest opulence in the several counties where these tracts are, have sufficient influence to be perpetually elected for those counties.

“The general assembly then, of this province, consists of the owners of these extravagant grants, the merchants of New York, the principal of them strongly connected with

¹ New York Colonial Documents, iv., p. 791.

² New York Colonial Documents, iv., p. 874; v., pp. 459, 651, 805; vii., pp. 486, 549, 743 876, 950; Documentary History of New York, i., p. 384.

the owners of these great tracts of family interest, and of common farmers, which last are men easily deluded and led away with popular arguments of liberty and privileges. The proprietors of the great tracts are not only freed from the quit-rents, which the other landholders in the province pay, but by their influence in the assembly are freed from every other public tax on their lands. While every owner of improved lands has every horse, cow, ox, hog, etc., and every acre of his land rated, millions of acres, the property of private persons, contribute nothing to the public necessary expense."¹

In Mr. Colden's account of the state of the province of New York in 1767, is the following: "The people of New York are properly distinguished into different ranks.

"1. The proprietors of the large tracts who include within their claims from 100,000 to above one million of acres under one grant. Some of these remain in one single family, others are by devises and purchases claimed in common by considerable numbers of persons.

"2. The gentlemen of law make the second class in which properly are included both the bench and the bar.

"3. The merchants make the third class; many of them have suddenly rose from the lowest rank of the people to considerable fortunes, and chiefly in the last war, by illicit trade. They abhor every limitation of trade and duties on it, and therefore gladly go into every measure whereby they hope to have trade free.

"4. In the last rank may be placed the farmers and mechanics. Though the farmers hold their lands in fee simple, they are as to condition of life, in no manner superior to the common farmers in England, and the mechanics such only as are necessary in domestic life. This last rank comprehends the bulk of the people and in them consists the strength of the province. They are the most useful and

¹ New York Colonial Documents, vii., pp. 654-5 (Lieut. Gov. Colden to Lords of Trade, Sept. 20, 1764).

the most moral, but alwise made the dupes of the former, and often are ignorantly made their tools for the worst purposes The great tracts of land mentioned in the first class were not as usual in other cases surveyed before the grants; the contents of them cannot be known from the description in the grant All of them are granted in trifling quit-rents in comparison to the rents reserved generally on other lands granted at the same time or in earlier times The uncertainty of the grant, both as to quantity of the land and boundaries of the tract granted, which in law invalidates the grants of the crown, turns greatly to the advantage of the owners of these great tracts by the artifices they make use of to enlarge their claims perpetually. Thereby they are in continual contention with the farmers contiguous to them, who have purchased bona fide and improved their lands; and by the expense of law suits many of the most industrious farmers are ruined. The gentlemen of law, both the judges and the principal practioners at the bar, are either owners, heirs or strongly connected in family interest with the proprietors. In general, all the lawyers unite in promoting contention, prolonging suits and increasing the expense of obtaining justice, every artifice and chicanery in the law has been so much connived at or rather encouraged, that the honest men who are not of affluent fortunes are deterred from defending their rights or seeking justice”¹

Governor Tryon, writing in 1773, makes the following comment on the land policy of New York: “Men of property in a country where the soil is of little value, must have it in their power to purchase large tracts, if they choose this method to raise their families For my part I should think it a good policy rather to encourage than to check such a spirit. The subordination which arises from a distinction in rank and fortune, I have found

¹ New York Colonial Documents, vii., p. 795 (Mr. Colden's account of the State of the Province of New York, Dec. 6, 1767.)

from experience to be friendly to government and conducive to the strengthening the bonds of the crown, and perhaps it will prove the only counterpoise against a leveling and republican spirit which the popular constitutions of some colonies and the temper of their inhabitants, who are spreading themselves throughout the continent so naturally excite." ¹

Winterbotham, writing in 1796 says: "New York is considerably behind her neighbors in New England, New Jersey and Pennsylvania in point of improvements in agriculture and manufactures. Among other reasons for this deficiency, that of want of enterprise in the inhabitants is not the least. Another cause which has heretofore operated in preventing agricultural improvements in this state has been their government, which, in the manner it was conducted until the Revolution was extremely unfavorable to improvements of almost every kind, and particularly in agriculture. The governors were many of them land jobbers, bent on making their fortunes, and being invested with power to do this, they either engrossed for themselves or patented away to their particular favorites a very great proportion of the whole province. This, as has been before observed, proved an effective bar to population The genius of the government of this state, however, still favors large monopolies of lands, which have for some years back been granted without regard either to quantity or settlement." ²

To sum up, it has been shown that during the 18th century, when the rest of the thirteen colonies were bidding for European immigrants, when Pennsylvania was receiving the Scotch-Irish and German elements of her population, and the Shenandoah Valley was leading others of the same class to the southern and western states, New York

¹ New York Colonial Documents, viii., p. 374 (Gov. Tryon to Earl of Dartmouth, June 2, 1773).

² Winterbotham's America, ii., p. 337 (New York, 1796).

alone, by her policy of aristocratic land holding was opposing the general current of settlement and interposing obstacles to the increase of her free landholders; that the growth of the great estates continued unchecked in spite of royal instructions and interference of the provincial governors, and the landed aristocracy came to control not only the assembly, but the judiciary as well, and that finally by controlling the administration of justice and the law making power, this aristocracy succeeded in supplanting the freeholder by the semi-servile tenant, wholly dependent on his landlord.¹

The bearing of this state of things upon the question of adoption of the Federal Constitution, is at once apparent. A landed aristocracy is essentially conservative. That aristocracy which had grown up in New York with full control of the state administration, and for the most part free from taxation, would of course oppose any change like the one proposed, which would subordinate their importance among the states, and which, by taking away the impost, would make a land tax necessary. And the significant fact of it is that in the Federal and divided counties of New York the holdings of the small farmers predominated over those of the large landholders, while in the Anti-Federal counties the reverse was true.

Pennsylvania.

In Pennsylvania the opposition to the Constitution came from those counties belonging to the great interior highland of the state, extending from the head waters of the Schuylkill to the Alleghany and Monongahela rivers, with only Huntingdon county (one vote—Federal) interrupting the continuity from east to west. This section was quite distinct from any other in the state and felt itself to be so,

¹ This fact has a special significance in the elections for the state convention of 1788. Unlike most of the states, New York required manhood suffrage alone in this election to render one eligible to vote or to be elected as delegate. (*New York Journal and Register*, April 30, 1788.)

as may be seen from an extract of an address made by Hugh Henry Breckenridge to the inhabitants of the western country: "But I distinguish between the old and new counties. Doubtless, because they are distinct in several great points of interest. Every county in the state is distinct in some local interest and the representatives speak and act on this principle. The western counties are distinct from the eastern in many great local interests. The course of trade is different. The rivers on the one side fall through the territories of the commonwealth, or of a state under the confederacy. On this side they fall through that of the Spanish monarch. The people east of the mountains enjoy the advantage of commerce when we do not. Like the antipodes and the horizon, it is dark to us while it is light to them."¹ This highland region, united by physical features and by a population predominantly Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, very naturally fell into the opposition. As McMaster says: "The reason is plain. The constitution proposed for the United States was in many ways the direct opposite of the constitution of Pennsylvania. . . . But the Pennsylvania constitution of 1776 was the work of the patriot party; of this party a very considerable number were Presbyterians; and the great Presbyterian counties were Cumberland, Westmoreland, Bedford, Dauphin and Fayette. In opposing the new plan these men simply opposed a system of government which, if adopted, would force them to undo a piece of work done with great labor and beheld with great pride and satisfaction. Every man, therefore, who gave his vote for the ratification of the national constitution, pronounced his state constitution to be bad in form, and this its supporters were not prepared to do. By these men the re-

¹ *Pittsburg Gazette*, April 28, 1787, p. 1.

While it is true that the above remarks are only meant for that portion of Pennsylvania drained by the Ohio and its tributaries, a good physical map of the state will show that they apply equally well to the interior highland region farther east, the stronghold of Anti-Federalism.

fusal of the convention to accept the amendments they offered was not regarded as ending the matter. They went back to the counties that sent them more determined than ever, but failed to gain to their side the great body of Presbyterians."¹ To this class Wilson in his speech in the state convention adds the following: "Placemen, tax collectors and excisemen, who, should the new plan go into effect, would be turned out of office by the abolition or transfer to the Federal government of the places they held under the state."²

The Federal area contained a predominating German element, with English, among whom were Quakers, forming a large proportion of the remainder.³ Its counties were York, Lancaster, Chester, Montgomery, Philadelphia, Bucks, Luzerne, and Northampton, and contained the largest population, most of the men of wealth and influence and the commercial classes of the state. Pittsburg, with 400 inhabitants, was Federal in an Anti-Federal county, Westmoreland.⁴ Its location at the head of navigation on the Ohio indicates sufficiently its commercial tendencies and accounts for its Federal attitude. Luzerne county (including the old Wyoming valley), peopled from Connecticut, and led by a staunch Connecticut Federalist, Timothy Pickering, very naturally fell into line for the Constitution.⁵ Huntingdon county seems to be rather an exception to the general grouping, as it clearly belongs to the great interior highland. But it is to be distinguished from the rest as being "the center of Tory strength and activity"⁶ for Western Pennsylvania during the Revolution. Washington, one of the divided counties, lay at the head of the Ohio, and like Pittsburg, was no doubt influenced in its

¹ McMaster and Stone, *Pennsylvania and the Federal Constitution, 1787-8*, p. 21.

² *Ibid.*, p. 10.

³ Madison's Works, i., p. 356. (Letter of Madison to Jefferson, October 24, 1787.)

⁴ *American Museum*, ii., p. 585. Population given for 1788 in *History of Alleghany County*, p. 621.

⁵ *Life of Timothy Pickering*, pp. 296 ff.

⁶ Lytle, *History of Huntingdon County*, p. 75.

attitude by local environment sufficiently to be partly Federal.

We see, therefore, that in this state physical geography dominated the division of parties and that the previous state quarrels over the constitution of 1776 furnished the basis of the new division into parties; and that among the Federalists were enrolled all the commercial and wealthy classes, while on the other side the small farmers of the interior towns largely predominated.

Delaware.

"The first state that ratified the Constitution, although its convention was not the first to assemble, was Delaware. It was a small, compact community, with the northerly portion of its territory lying near the city of Philadelphia, with which its people had constant and extensive intercourse. Its public men were intelligent and patriotic. In the national convention it had contended with great spirit for the interests of the smaller states, and its people now had the sagacity and good sense to perceive that they had gained every reasonable security for their peculiar rights. The public press of Philadelphia, friendly to the Constitution, furnished the means of understanding its merits, and the discussions in the convention of Pennsylvania, which assembled before that of Delaware, threw a flood of light over the whole subject, which the people of Delaware did not fail to regard."¹ The following extract from a letter written by George Read to John Dickinson indicates the attitude of the state: "Finding that Virginia hath again taken the lead in the proposed convention at Philadelphia in May . . . it occurred to me, as a prudent measure on the part of our state, that its legislature should, in the act of appointment, so far restrain the powers of the commissioners, whom they shall name on this service, as that they

¹ Curtis, *History of the Constitution of the United States*, ii., pp. 5, 18-19.

may not extend to any alteration in that part of the fifth article of the present confederation, which gives each state *one vote* in determining questions in congress, and the latter part of the thirteenth article, as to future alterations—that is, that such clause shall be preserved or inserted for the like purpose, in any revision that shall be made and agreed to in the proposed convention. I conceive our existence as a state will depend upon our preserving such rights, for I consider the acts of congress hitherto, as to the ungranted lands in most of the larger states as sacrificing the just claims of the smaller and bounded states to a proportional share therein, for the purpose of discharging the national debt incurred during the war; and such is my jealousy of most of the larger states that I would trust nothing to their candor, generosity or ideas of public justice in behalf of this state. . . . Persuaded I am, from what I have seen occasionally in the public prints and heard in private conversations, that the voice of the states will be one of the subjects of revision, and in a meeting where there will be so great an interested majority, I suspect the argument or oratory of the smaller state commissioners will avail little. In such circumstances I conceive it will relieve the commissioners of the state from disagreeable argumentation, as well as prevent the downfall of the state, which (without an equal vote) would at once become a cypher in the union, and have no chance of an accession of district, or even citizens; for, as we presently stand, our quota is increased upon us, in the requisition of this year, more than thirteen-eightieths since 1775, without any other reason that I can suggest than a promptness in the legislature of this state to comply with all the congress requisitions from time to time. This increase alone, without addition would, in the course of a few years, banish many of its citizens and impoverish the remainder; therefore, clear I am that every guard that can be devised for this state's protection against future encroachment

should be preserved or made."¹ . . . Again he wrote to Dickinson urging his attendance at the Philadelphia convention. He says: "I suspect it to be of importance to the small states that their deputies should keep a strict watch upon the movements and propositions from the larger states, who will probably combine to swallow up the smaller ones by addition, division or impoverishment."² . . . June 15, 1787, John Dickinson made the following remark to Madison in the Federal convention: "Some of the members from the small states wish for two branches in the general legislature, and are friends to a good national government, but we would sooner submit to foreign power than submit to be deprived, in both branches of the legislature, of an equality of suffrage, and thereby be thrown under the domination of the larger states."³

The state followed Read's suggestion and gave their delegates to the Federal Convention at Philadelphia the instructions to alter the Articles of Confederation "provided that such alterations or further provisions, or any of them, do not extend to that part of the fifth article of the confederation of the said states. finally ratified on the first day of March, in the year 1781, which declares *that in determining questions in the United States in Congress assembled, each state shall have one vote.*"⁴

Thus it is to be seen that in Delaware the small state idea of equal representation in one of the law making bodies under the new government, was the leading reason for its ready and unanimous acquiescence to the new Constitution.

¹ George Read to John Dickinson, January 17, 1787, Life and Correspondence of George Read (W. T. Read.), p. 438.

² *Ibid.*, May 21, 1787, p. 444.

³ Madison Papers, ii., p. 862 (note).

⁴ February 3, 1787, Laws of Delaware, ii., ch. 148. B., pp. 892, 893; Life of Geo. Read, p. 492, App. A. to ch. vi.

New Jersey.

New Jersey, voting unanimously for the constitution, was like Delaware, a small state, and had much the same fears of large state domination. But besides this, the pressure of the imposts levied by New York and Pennsylvania upon her citizens, made her all the more willing to accede to a government which provided for national regulation of trade. The following well expresses the attitude of New Jersey upon ratification: "But the people of New Jersey had, in truth, fairly considered the whole matter and had found what their own interests required. They alone, of all the states, when the national convention was instituted, had expressly declared that the regulation of commerce ought to be vested in the general government. They had learned that to submit longer to the diverse commercial and revenue systems in force in New York on the one side of them and in Pennsylvania on the other side, would be like remaining between the upper and nether millstone. Their delegates in the national convention had, it is true, acted with those of New York in the long contest concerning the representative system, resisting at every step each departure from the principle of the confederation, until the compromise was made which admitted the states to an equal representation in the Senate. Content with the security which this arrangement afforded, the people of New Jersey had the sagacity to perceive that their interests were no longer to be promoted by following in the lead of the Anti-Federalists of New York."¹

Maryland.

It is well known that the question of ratification in Maryland was to a considerable extent a matter of personal leadership. Luther Martin led the Anti-Federalists, and Washington practically stood at the head of the Federal

¹ Curtis, History of the Constitution of the United States, ii., pp. 525-6.

party in the state.¹ But with all due allowance to this factor, the constitution was carried by an appeal to economic interests that lay deeper than mere political leadership. In Chapter III will be found a discussion of the part played by the paper money and debt faction. The following contemporary evidence gives some hint at the other elements in the struggle for ratification. Extract of a letter from Baltimore, Dec. 12, 1787: "The mercantile interest in this town and the majority of the inhabitants of the state are in favor of the new federal plan; yet, like the state of New York, it will be strongly opposed by some men of great influence and very leading characters in the state. For which opposition, 'tis said, they are actuated by a dread of the loss of their own popularity."²

"The opposition to the new constitution in Maryland," says a correspondent, "labored under many disadvantages and the little exertion they made early evinced that the others had stolen to the windward of them. . . . In the next place, the aristocratic party in that state is considerable and devoted to the nod of its leaders. And the very idea of Mr. Martin's being connected with the opposition was sufficient to prejudice the Tories (who are another considerable part of the state) in favor of the system. Mr. Martin being very unpopular among that class of citizens, owing to the office he holds."³

"To the working people of Maryland, Feb. 27, 1788.—We common people are more properly citizens of America than of any particular state. Very many of our sort die in different parts from where they were born, and the constitution ordains that wheresoever we may find land for our children, there we shall also find exactly the same general liberty we left. Taxes, too, are to be everywhere equal. I allow that men, seeking power and profit, may wish to

¹ Scharf, *History of Maryland*, ii., p. 547.

² *Massachusetts Gazette*, Jan. 4, 1788.

³ *New York Journal and Register*, May 14, 1788.

keep opportunities of that sort, in the state governments where they live; but I must think the general government, so far as it goes, better for the majority of the people who want land for their children. The interest of money here is said to be 25 per cent. No man can afford to borrow at that rate, to pay debts contracted at 6 per cent. To save bread for his children he had better go to jail. Were the land, which maintains children, now seized and sold, the few monied men here would get it all, for a little indeed; because in Europe, where money is so plenty that the highest interest is 5 per cent., the people there say that we make bad laws and too many of them, and they cannot trust themselves or their money among us, though they are pinched for land there. I think the Constitution will heal this grievous sore, and enable us to borrow money in other countries on reasonable terms to pay workmen for improving our lands and houses that we may make better crops. Taxes on imported goods, which congress will lay can distress none but the rich. . . . We shall be freed from tax gatherers." ¹

Such testimony as this reveals something more than political strife of state factions; it affords us a glimpse of the underlying economic factors that were at work among the majority of the voters in Maryland.

Virginia.

In Virginia four well-marked sections are to be noted on the map. The first, the eastern, comprised all the counties in tidewater Virginia. Its vote on the Constitution stood 80 per cent. for and 20 per cent. against ratification. This was the region of the large towns, and where commercial interests were predominant. The middle district, lying farther west to the Blue Ridge mountains, represented the interior farming interests of the state; the class of small farmers made up the principal part of its population. Its

¹ *Pennsylvania Gazette*, April 2, 1788.

vote on the Constitution stood 26 per cent. for and 74 per cent. against adoption. The third, the West Virginia district, is really double, composed of the Shenandoah valley, in which lay the bulk of the population, and the sparsely settled Trans-Alleghany region. This, also, was an agricultural section, with a population chiefly Scotch-Irish and Germans from Pennsylvania.¹ Its vote stood 97 per cent. for and 3 per cent. against the Constitution.² No section in any other state displayed greater unanimity and it is this peculiar solidarity that stamps it as important in the period under consideration.

The fourth, or Kentucky, district comprised all that territory west of the Great Kanawha to the Cumberland river. Its vote stood 10 per cent. for and 90 per cent. against the Constitution. The two votes for ratification came from Jefferson county, which included a considerable part of the most thickly settled portion of Kentucky.

The question of the opening of the Mississippi river was the decisive one in determining the vote of this section.³

A further complication was added by the attitude of the extreme wing of the opposition party who argued for nothing less than complete separation from the future Union; it was this faction that leaned toward alliance with Spain; and the treacherous behavior of Wilkinson and his coadjutors in attempting a complete separation of Kentucky from the Union made the matter for the time very serious. A recent historian of Kentucky puts the case thus: "The greater part of the political leaders of Kentucky were incensed at the refusal of the federal govern-

¹ The Scotch-Irish Settlers in the Valley of Virginia. (Richmond, 1860.) Alumni address at Washington College, Lexington, Virginia, by Bolivar Christain; Howison, History of Virginia, ii., p. 171; Campbell, History of Virginia, p. 431.

² The one Anti-Federal vote was cast for the divided (1-1) county of Monongalia, lying adjacent to the divided county of Washington in Pennsylvania.

³ Life and Correspondence of George Mason, ii., p. 242; Wm. Wirt Henry, Life of Patrick Henry, ii., pp. 360-1; Madison's Works, i., p. 399, Letter of Madison to Washington, June 13, 1788; *Pennsylvania Packet*, June 20, 1788, p. 3; *New Haven Gazette*, July 10, 1788, p. 5; Rives' Madison, ii., p. 544, (note 2); Green's Spanish Conspiracy, p. 139.

ment to receive them. They desired that the constitution should not be adopted so that they might by the breaking up of the confederation, be left free to deal with their problems in their own way."¹ The following extract from the letter of Wilkinson to Governor Miro of Louisiana, dated February 12, 1789, illustrates the drift of affairs during the preceding year: "The question of separation from the United States, although discussed with vehemence among the most distinguished inhabitants of this section of the country, had never been mentioned in a formal manner to the people at large, but now was the time for making this important and interesting experiment, and it became my indispensable mission to do so. . . . I can give you the solemn assurance that I found all the men belonging to the first class of society in the district, with the exception of Colonel Marshall,² our surveyor, and Colonel Muter, one of our judges, decidedly in favor of separation from the United States and of alliance with Spain. . . . I deem it useless to mention to a gentleman well versed in political history, that the great spring and prime mover in all negotiations is money. Although not being authorized by you to do so, yet I found it necessary to use this lever, in order to confirm some of our most eminent citizens in their attachment to our cause, and to supply others with the means of operating with vigor. For these objects I have advanced five thousand dollars out of my own funds, and half of this sum, applied opportunely, would attract Marshall and Muter on our side, but it is now impossible for me to disburse it."³

The following extract from the objection to the Federal Constitution by George Mason well expresses the ideas of the Anti-Federal party in Virginia: "By requiring only a majority to make all commercial and navigation laws, the five southern states (whose produce and circumstances are

¹ Shaler, *History of Kentucky*, p. 103.

² Humphrey Marshall of the Virginia state convention of 1788.

³ Gayarré, *History of Louisiana - Spanish Domination*, pp. 224-5 and 239-40.

totally different from those of the eight northern and eastern states) will be ruined, for such rigid and premature regulations may be made as will enable the merchants of the northern and eastern states, not only to demand an exorbitant freight, but to monopolize the purchase of commodities at their own price for many years, to the great injury of the landed interest, and the impoverishment of the people; and the danger is greater as the gain on one side will be in proportion to the loss of the other. Whereas requiring two thirds of the members present in both houses would have produced mutual moderation, promoted the general interest and removed an insuperable objection to the adoption of the government."¹

While the commercial interests of the tide-water and West Virginia sections were the chief factors in unifying the Federalists, a previous division of the people of the state on the assessment bill of 1784-5² tended to draw the dissenting sects, especially the Presbyterians and the Baptists, into alliance with Madison, and no doubt strengthened his hold upon those sections where they predominated when the question of ratification came up in 1788. This bill came before the House of Delegates December 23, 1784. "It proposed a small tax on all taxable property for the support of teachers of the Christian religion, each taxpayer to name the society to which he wished his tax dedicated, and in case of refusal to do so, the tax to be applied to the maintenance of a school in the county."³ The occasion was dextrously used by Madison to effect a complete separation of church and state and to turn popular sentiment (especially in the back counties) against his rival, Patrick Henry.

¹ Ford, Pamphlets on the Constitution of United States, p. 331. Objections of Hon. Geo. Mason to the proposed Federal Constitution. Addressed to the citizens of Virginia.

² Life and Correspondence of George Mason, ii., pp. 87 and 90; Henry's Life of Patrick Henry, ii., pp. 207-11.

³ Life of Patrick Henry, ii., p. 207.

North Carolina.

For a fair comparison of sentiment we should, perhaps, present in the main body of the map the vote of 1789, when the Constitution was adopted, rather than that of 1788, in order to show fairly the separation of the people into parties upon issues clearly defined, because thoroughly discussed and well understood by the majority. As it was, in 1788, so little disposed were the large opposition majority in the convention, even to spend time in discussing the merits of the Constitution, that Willie Jones, the Anti-Federalist leader, was for taking a vote at once and saving time and expense by a speedy adjournment.¹ This is significant of the general sentiment in the great mass of interior counties in the state. The intense political activity of her sister states, South Carolina and Virginia, both during the elections and in the convention debates, stands out in marked contrast with this prevailing apathy in North Carolina.² In fact, North Carolina seems only to have reached in 1789 the political stage of the other states in 1787 or 1788. In the arrangement of the vote upon the main map we have, therefore, only the germ of sectional divisions — the first faint lines of social and economic stratification. The counties around Albemarle and Pamlico Sounds constituted the bulk of the Federal area, only one of these counties being any considerable distance from the coast. This region was the earliest settled, the most densely populated, and represented most of the mercantile and commercial interests of the state.

The divided region³ of the state is associated with one Federal county and is cut off from the rest of the Federal counties by a belt of opposition at the east. This divided region, however, seems to have been somewhat peculiar.

¹ Elliot's Debates, iv., p. 4.

² Life and Correspondence of James Iredell, ii., p. 266; *Massachusetts Centinel*, Nov. 5 and Nov. 20, 1788; *Pennsylvania Packet*, June 30, 1788.

³ Bladen, Cumberland, Robeson (Federal) and Wake.

I am informed that it was settled by Scotch who fought for the Pretender at Culloden and who were banished to North Carolina upon condition of never again bearing arms against the King. These counties during the Revolution were full of Tories.¹

The rest of the state, with Tennessee, was predominantly Anti-Federal, with only two Federal counties, one in North Carolina² and one in Tennessee.³

Some of the elements that contributed to the adverse decision of North Carolina in 1788 upon the question of ratification may be indicated by the following extracts: "Mr. Lamb, as chairman of a committee in New York, which he styles the 'Federal Committee,' has written to Mr. Jones, T. Person and Tim Bloodworth, recommending them to be steadfast in opposition and inclosing a large packet of Anti-federal pamphlets to each of them."⁴

"The great deference this state has been accustomed to pay to the political opinions of the Old Dominion will, I believe, have a very bad effect on the determination of this great question."⁵

On Nov. 15, 1788, Patrick Henry wrote to Colonel Lee: "I mean not to take any part in deliberations held out of this state, unless in Carolina from which I am not very distant, and to whose politics I wish to be attentive. If congress do not give us substantial amendments, I will turn my eyes to that country, a connection with which may become necessary for me as an individual. I am indeed happy where I now live⁶ in the unanimity which prevails on this subject; for in near twenty adjoining counties, I think at least nineteen-twentieths are Anti-federal, and this great extent of country in Virginia lies adjoining to

¹ My informant is Prof. Stephen B. Weeks, formerly of Trinity College, North Carolina.

² Lincoln county.

³ Jefferson county.

⁴ Life and Correspondence of James Iredell, ii., p. 230.

⁵ Ibid., p. 217.

⁶ Prince Edward county.

North Carolina, and with her forms a mass of opposition not easy to surmount." ¹

Among the Anti-federal leaders, Willie Jones easily stood first, as is indicated by the following: "Willie Jones, of Halifax, was the most influential politician in the state. . . . A patriot in the Revolution, he was now the acknowledged head of a great party. He was jealous of his authority, and prompt to meet any attempt to undermine his power. His knowledge of human nature was consummate, and in the arts of insinuation he was unrivaled. He had the powers of forecast and combination in an eminent degree. . . . He seldom shared in the discussions. His time of action was chiefly during the hours of adjournment; then it was that he stimulated the passions, aroused the suspicions or moderated the ardor of his followers; then it was that, smoking his pipe, and chatting of crops, ploughs, stock, dogs, etc., he stole his way into the hearts of honest farmers and erected there thrones for himself." ² The case of North Carolina in 1788 was well stated by Mr. Jones himself in the course of the debate in the first convention. He said: "We run no risk of being excluded from the Union when we think proper to come in. Virginia, our next neighbor, will not oppose our admission. We have a common cause with her. She wishes the same alterations. We are of the greatest importance to her. She will have great weight in congress, and there is no doubt but she will do everything she can to bring us into the Union. South Carolina and Georgia are deeply interested in our being admitted. The Creek nation would overturn these two states without our aid. They cannot exist without North Carolina. There is no doubt we shall obtain our amendments and come into the Union when we please." ³

¹ Henry's Life of Patrick Henry, ii., p. 429.

² Life and Correspondence of James Iredell, ii., p. 232.

³ Elliot's Debates, iv., p. 225.

There were other prominent opposition leaders such as David Caldwell of Guilford county and Timothy Bloodworth of New Hanover county, whose influence was also important in their section;¹ but no other one man possessed such control of the Anti-Federal delegates as Mr. Jones.

Six towns² were represented in the convention of 1788 and the delegates of all but Hillsboro', Orange county, were Federal. It is of no little significance that these centers of population so uniformly belonged to this party, especially as three³ of them belonged to counties otherwise Anti-Federal. The conditions in Wilmington are fairly typical, and are thus described: "Soon after the war, commenced a feud between the town of Wilmington and the county of New Hanover. The leading men 'upon change' were either Tories or those whose lukewarmness had provoked suspicion: the agrestic population could but illy brook their prosperity. From that day to the present, the politics of the burgess have been antagonistical to those of the farmer. The merchants have ever been the predominant class in the borough: daily intercourse has enabled them with facility to form combinations that have given them the control of the moneyed institutions; while their patronage has added a potent influence with the press. A majority of the merchants have, generally, as now, been from the North."⁴

From the separate map of the vote of North Carolina in 1789 it will be seen that the Federal area had extended itself so as to include the divided region above mentioned with only the counties of New Hanover and Sampson still remaining Anti-Federal. This, then, is the first of the sections into which the state may be divided. Its population was mixed, Germans, English and French; its interests

¹ Life and Correspondence of James Iredell, ii., p. 232.

² Edenton, Chowan county; Halifax, Halifax county; Newbern, Craven county; Salisbury, Rowan county; Wilmington, New Hanover county.

³ Halifax, Salisbury and Wilmington.

⁴ Life and Correspondence of James Iredell, ii., p. 164 (note.)

were commercial and it contained the great navigable streams of the state.

The opposition, as revealed in the map of North Carolina for 1789, was strongest in the center of the state, a region lying between the section just described and the Catawba river. Here, upon both sides of the Yadkin were settled the Pennsylvania Germans. Their interests were wholly agricultural, they had few towns and, being a German speaking community, were almost wholly isolated from the outside world.¹ It was a section peculiarly conservative, as may be seen from its vote in 1789, when but two of its counties were Federal, one of which was divided.

Crossing the Catawba we come upon a section almost entirely Federal, but which in 1788 had but one Federal county (Lincoln).

In Tennessee the change from the condition of 1788 is still more marked. Every vote was cast for the Constitution except in one county (Sullivan), which was evenly divided (2-2).

Besides the Tennessee district, then, in 1789, three sections are to be noted in North Carolina, each with its own vote, its distinct characteristics and its separate interests. And while these sections were but faintly indicated in 1788, it is important to note that in 1789 they formed along the lines previously laid down by the first vote on ratification.

South Carolina.

The key to the vote of South Carolina on the Constitution lies in the antagonism of sections, similar to that pointed out in Pennsylvania. The rival sections were the coast or lower district, and the upper, or more properly, the middle and upper country. The coast region was the first settled and contained a larger portion of the wealth of the state; its mercantile and commercial interests were important; its church was the Episcopal, supported by the state;

¹ Bernheim, *German Settlements and the Lutheran Church in the Carolinas*, pp. 148-153.

its inhabitants were English or French. The upper district was widely different. It was a frontier section, the last to receive settlement; its lands were fertile and its mixed population were largely small farmers; many of them were Irish and Germans settled on bounty lands from the king; there was also a large number of settlers from other states, notably Scotch-Irish from Virginia.¹ There was no established church, each community supported its own church and there was a great variety in the district.

With such differences as these, conflict might be expected. The coast region, and particularly the city of Charleston, held the balance of power and kept it long after it had been outnumbered in population by the upper country. This trouble began before the Revolution and when the lower district joined in the resistance to England, the upper country held aloof, not only from a feeling of sectional rivalry, but from loyalty to the king among many of the inhabitants, and from lack of a special grievance. Hence this region was, all during the war, full of tories and not to be relied upon.

After the war the old strife was renewed still more bitterly, and when the country took sides on the new Federal Constitution, it was a fresh occasion for the sections in South Carolina, to divide in conflict as they had so often done before. The violence of party strife admitted of but two factions, but between the two lay a belt of divided territory — in general all that portion of the state between the junction of the Broad and Saluda rivers and the northern boundary of the parishes of the lower or coast district, some forty or fifty miles from the coast. The vote of these three districts is respectively: lower, 88 per cent. for, and 12 per cent. against the Constitution; middle, 49 per

¹ Bernheim, *German Settlements and the Lutheran Church in the Carolinas*, pp. 167-171; also, pp. 175-181. Ramsay, *History of South Carolina*, ii., pp. 1 (note), 24. Mill, *Statistics of South Carolina*, pp. 173-176. *Cyclopædia of the Representative Men of the Carolinas*, i., pp. 46 ff.; Calhoun's Works, i., pp. 401-405.

cent. for and 51 per cent. against it;¹ upper, 20 per cent. for and 80 per cent. against it.

As a rule the tories voted for the Constitution, for after the Revolution the victorious whigs showed no mercy to their old enemies, and the tories were quite helpless. When the Constitution was up for adoption, it was welcomed and favored by the tories as a refuge from the lawlessness of whig domination. The two Federal and one divided district in the upper valley of the Broad and Saluda rivers are due, no doubt, to their strong tory element, for it was there alone in South Carolina, that they outnumbered the patriot party.² A more detailed study of the local history of the state would doubtless reveal much else of interest in this connection.

In South Carolina, then, we have the two sections, representing respectively the agricultural and the commercial interests, the former opposed and the latter in favor of the new constitution. The conflict is complicated by previous sectional strife and by the presence of a foreign element which gave rise to a tory-whig strife within the upper section itself, thus breaking up the unity of the sectional opposition to the Constitution. In no other state was there greater division on both sides than in South Carolina; and it argues for the strength of the political hostility between the lower and the upper country that it was able to keep the ranks as they appear in the vote among so many diverse nationalities and clashing interests.

Georgia.

The reasons that prompted the speedy and unanimous ratification of the Constitution by Georgia, may be seen from the following extract from an address by the general assembly of that state to President Washington soon after his inauguration: "In the course of the war, which estab-

¹ Comprised as follows: District of Edisto and Savannah, District east of the Wateree. Orangeburg, Saxe Gotha, Parish of St. Matthews, Parish of St. David's and Fairfield county.

² Mill, *Statistics of South Carolina*, p. 189.

lished our independence, our citizens made proportionate exertions with those of any part of the whole, and in point of property they suffered most. The peace found the country a waste; with many natural advantages, we flattered ourselves with a speedy recovery, when we were attacked by the Indians.

"On this subject we wish to be delicate; much has already been said; we have asserted and it has been contradicted. Removed at a distance from the centre, our actions have been liable to misrepresentation, but we trust that, by this time, they are better explained. In the meantime, while our population has been checked, and our agriculture diminished, the blood of our citizens has been spilled, our public resources greatly exhausted, and our frontier still open to fresh ravages. The failure of the late negotiations for a peace with the Creek nation, and the circumstances which attended the same, are the best evidence of the necessity of our measures, and a proof of the late hostile dispositions of these people; but under the influence of the government and power of the union, it is to be hoped and expected that a different conduct will on their part prevail. On our part nothing shall be wanting to promote so desirable an establishment. Another circumstance of additional calamity, attendant on our being the south frontier of the union, is the facility of our black people crossing the Spanish line, from whence we have never been able to reclaim them. This has already been productive of much injury to private persons, and, if not speedily restrained, may grow into an evil of national magnitude. We take this occasion of bringing this business into view, with a perfect reliance that you will cause such discussions to be made as shall be necessary to bring about a remedy." ¹

It appears, therefore, that the exposed frontier position of Georgia strongly impressed her with the importance of the Federal government.

¹ Sparks, *Life and Writings of Washington*, xii., p. 180. (note).

CHAPTER II.

THE INTERSTATE AND NATIONAL GROUPINGS OF THE VOTE
ON THE FEDERAL CONSTITUTION, 1787-8.

Turning now from the economic and social groupings within the state to the interstate groupings, we find that they not only cross state lines but are arranged with reference to physical geography into great social and economic units. In New England the eastern belt of the Federal area extends along the coast with hardly a break from Maine to New York, Rhode Island being the only considerable interruption in its continuity. The Connecticut valley was another Federal region and was the decisive one for the Constitution in New Hampshire and Massachusetts, and was very important in Connecticut. This coast area and this river valley were the oldest and consequently the richest and most commercial regions of New England, and their combined influence was able to secure the adoption of the Constitution there.

The grouping of the opposition areas in New England is also very significant. It will be seen that from about Lake Winnipiseogee southward through New Hampshire, Massachusetts and Rhode Island, the Anti-Federal area extends with hardly a break, and it also reaches into northern Connecticut, and west of the Connecticut river and south of the Merrimac in Massachusetts, forming the great interior region of New England, the part most remote from commercial centers, with interests consequently predominantly agricultural. This was the debtor and paper money region and one peculiarly sensitive to taxation. It included factious Rhode Island, the Shays region in Massachusetts and the center of a similar movement in New Hampshire. The coincidence of opposition areas will be noted also in eastern New Hampshire and southwestern Maine, and in northwestern Connecticut and southwestern Massachusetts. In the same

way the Federal area of Connecticut will be seen to be coincident with Federal and divided regions in New York, and also that of New Jersey with the same state. From New Jersey southward along the coast the Federal area runs in a belt, widest at the north including all of New Jersey and Delaware, that part of Pennsylvania along the Delaware and Susquehanna rivers which may be called tide-water Pennsylvania, all that part of Maryland east of the Susquehanna and Chesapeake Bay, including Baltimore and Annapolis, tide-water Virginia and the adjoining portion of Maryland, northeastern North Carolina with Wilmington and Newbern, southeastern South Carolina and all of Georgia. This region, it will be noted, includes all the best harbors, all the great sea coast shipping ports, and the most densely populated and wealthiest portions of the middle and southern states and represents, therefore, a predominantly commercial interest. That portion of it in Virginia and North and South Carolina corresponds roughly with the region east of the fall line and geologically with the Tertiary area of the South. Parallel to this larger area lay two other Federal areas, the first including the Shenandoah Valley and adjoining counties, the second the valley of the Ohio river and its great tributaries. The first comprised York county, Pennsylvania, the western part of Maryland, and the valley between the Alleghany and Blue Ridge Mountains still farther to the southwest. This valley was the most fertile in that section of the country. It was the line of the great Scotch-Irish and German migration into the South, and was the interstate highway for the produce of this whole interior region. Its population, largely Scotch-Irish and Germans from Pennsylvania, showed a peculiar independence and clear sightedness in their decision regarding the new constitution, voting not like the isolated land owners farther east, but as members of the commercial class whose interests were bound up in securing an efficient and centralized national government. The second of these west-

ern Federal areas lay along the Ohio river. It is less strongly marked and more broken than the other, because it lay on the frontier where peculiar and often conflicting interests tended rather to separate than to unite it to the east. This region extended from Pittsburg to Louisville and is represented by west Northumberland county and Washington county in Pennsylvania, the western part of the West Virginia District of Virginia, and Jefferson county in the Kentucky district, and perhaps by Sumner county in Tennessee, on the Cumberland river.

We must not omit the city of Albany, at the head of the Hudson river navigation, a fur trade center of long standing and a point of distribution for produce to the south and of supplies to the west along the Mohawk, as well as a starting point for emigration into central New York. In North Carolina there were the interior towns of Halifax and Salisbury which were Federal in a large Anti-Federal district.

The opposition areas in New England have already been referred to. In New York this area seems for the most part isolated except on the southeast where it touches that of Massachusetts. In Pennsylvania the Anti-Federal area lies entirely surrounded, in the great interior highland of the state. In Virginia we come upon an opposition area that is broadly connected with that of North Carolina, Kentucky, South Carolina, and Tennessee. It is the great Anti-Federal area of the country, touching the sea only at scattered points in Virginia, and in North Carolina for nearly one half its coast line where harbors are almost lacking. It contained few harbors, it was less thickly settled and more interior in its ideas and interests. It was an economic and social unit, without reference to state lines, moved by common impulses, sharing common prejudices, alarmed by the same fears. One of the best illustrations of the effect of this sort of environment on a people is seen in the case of the Germans who settled in North Carolina from Pennsyl-

vania. In the latter state the Germans supported the Constitution, in Maryland likewise, and when settled along the Shenandoah valley their votes were unitedly for the Constitution. But those who came into the interior of North Carolina, cut off from all outside interest, on no great commercial highway like the Susquehanna, the Delaware, or the Shenandoah Valley, became conservative, suspicious of new ideas, and were readily led by politicians into opposing what was really for their best interests. While those in Pennsylvania, Maryland, and West Virginia were the strongest supporters of the new constitution, those in North Carolina were its most obstinate enemies, and even in 1789, the only united opposition came from these German counties in central North Carolina.

To sum up, the Constitution was carried in the original thirteen states by the influence of those classes along the great highways of commerce, the sea-coast, the Connecticut river, the Shenandoah valley and the Ohio river; and in proportion as the material interests along these arteries of intercourse were advanced and strengthened, the Constitution was most readily received and most heartily supported. In other words, the areas of intercourse and wealth carried the constitution. It was these sections that Hamilton rallied to support his far-seeing financial policy for continued national development. And it was in the interior and agricultural sections of the country that Jefferson found material for a party to oppose his great rival.¹

As these commercial lines multiplied in number and importance the national idea became more and more dominant. But the initial conflict was fought out in the period of ratification.

¹ See the quotations from Hildreth in Editor's Note, *ante*.

CHAPTER III.

RELATION OF THE PAPER MONEY AND DEBT FACTIONS TO
THE RATIFICATION OF THE CONSTITUTION.

One of the fundamental reasons for calling the Constitutional Convention of 1787 was a desire to provide for the public necessities a revenue adequate to the exigencies of the Union. Various attempts of the old congress to secure amendments to the Articles of Confederation having this end in view had been fruitless, on account of what Madison mentions as a reason for the refusal of Rhode Island to attend the convention at Philadelphia, namely: "An obdurate adherence to an advantage which her position gave her of taxing her neighbors through their consumption of imported supplies."¹ Obviously, a relinquishment of this source of state revenue and a diversion of it to the uses of the Union meant for these states the imposition of internal taxes to make good the resulting deficiency. Such a proposition would be opposed by those regions which were averse to taxation in general. The deeply-rooted antipathy to systematic taxation felt by interior agricultural regions has been well shown by Professor Sumner in his biography of Alexander Hamilton. In his introduction to the debates in the convention, Madison says: "In the internal administration of the states, a violation of contracts had become familiar, in the form of depreciated paper made a legal tender, of property substituted for money, of installment laws, and of the occlusions of the courts of justice, although evident that all such interferences affected the rights of other states, relative to creditors, as well as citizens within the state. Among the defects which had been severely felt, was want of a uniformity in cases requiring it, as laws of naturalization and bank-

¹ Elliot's Debates, (1854), v., p. 118.

ruptcy, a coercive authority operating on individuals, and a guaranty of the internal tranquility of the states." ¹

In a letter of Madison to Edmund Randolph of Virginia, April 8, 1787, occurs the following: "Let it (the Federal government) have a negative, in all cases whatsoever, on the legislative acts of the states, as the king of Great Britain heretofore had. This I conceive to be essential, and the least possible abridgment of the state sovereignties. Without such a defensive power, every positive power that can be given on paper will be unavailing. It will also give internal stability to the states. There has been no moment, since the peace, at which the Federal assent would have been given to paper money." ²

At the outset of the Convention, Governor Randolph is reported as follows: "In speaking of the defects of the Confederation, he professed a high respect for its authors, and considered them as having done all that patriots could do, in the then infancy of the science of constitutions and of confederacies; when the inefficiency of requisitions was unknown — no commercial discord had arisen among any states — no rebellion had appeared in Massachusetts — foreign debts had not become urgent — the havoc of paper money had not been foreseen — treaties had not been violated; and perhaps nothing better could be obtained, from the jealousy of the states with regard to their sovereignty." ³

Such statements as these reveal the presence of a debtor party, whose opposition to the new constitution was to be expected, a party favoring paper money and stay and tender laws, and opposing added taxation. If the commercial classes were in favor of a constitution that promoted national credit, commercial intercourse, and the rights of the creditor, it is just as certain that one of the most important factors with which the historian of the period has

¹ Elliot's Debates, v., p. 120.

² Ibid., v., p. 108.

³ Ibid., v., pp. 136-7.

to reckon was the existence of an opposition party which found its interests endangered by such constitutional provisions, as the clause forbidding the states to issue bills of credit or to make anything but gold and silver a tender for debts, and the clause forbidding the violation of the obligation of contracts. On the surface of the debates in the Constitutional Convention and in the ratification conventions of the various states, these issues do not appear so clearly as do controversies concerning the danger of the extension of the taxing power and respecting general abstract principles of liberty and state sovereignty. Nevertheless they were issues up for settlement, and the people felt themselves vitally concerned in the matter. Seven of the states had issued paper money between 1785 and 1786, and there was a paper money party in every one of the thirteen states at the time of the ratification of the Constitution. This party demanded not only paper money, but also stay and tender and debt laws of such a character as would, if enacted, defraud the creditor of his dues. The same spirit made itself felt in the resistance encountered in many of the state legislatures to passing the necessary legislation to give effect to the British treaty of 1783, especially as relates to the securing of British debts. And it was to be expected, that, wherever this party was found, there would be a center of opposition to the Constitution; since its ratification meant an end to paper-money issues and a strict enforcement of debts.

It is proposed, in this chapter, to examine the evidence in each of the states as to the character and location of this paper money party and to ascertain whether or not it corresponds to the party of opposition to the Federal Constitution.

New Hampshire.

The demands of the paper money party in this state in 1786 may be clearly seen in the following extract: "There are perhaps (if it could be impartially known), three quar-

ters at least, and more likely seven eighths of the people so factious and discontented as to wish paper money on loan may be made by government to give a spring to commerce and agriculture extreme disorders require extreme medicines as their remedies. Paper money, or even leather buttons, when stamped by authority and funded with realities, will answer for internal commerce as well as silver and gold The legislatures of those very opulent states, North Carolina, South Carolina, Virginia, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, New York and Rhode Island have absolutely made a paper currency, and the people in the state of Delaware are now violently calling on the legislature to do the same If you would wish the like blessings of seven and perhaps now eight states in the union, who have made paper money on loans, summon resolution to speak out your minds and be no longer kept in a state of insensibility to your own sufferings, while your relief is so near at hand." ¹

The state legislature was finally induced in 1786 to form a plan for the emission of £50,000 in bills of credit on land security, to be a tender for state taxes and for fees and salaries of state officers. The vote on this bill stood 53 to 12.² Of the affirmative vote, 24 were from towns Federal in 1788, and 27 were from those Anti-Federal. Of the 12 votes against the emission, 11 were from Federal towns and 1 from Anti-Federal towns.³ When the plan was submitted to the towns for their consideration, three Federal towns, Mason,⁴ Salisbury,⁵ and Portsmouth⁶ declared against paper money on any plan. The Anti-Federal towns of Atkinson

¹ *New Hampshire Gazette*, July 20, 1786; also, the same, May 25 and Sept. 28, 1786, and May 20, Oct. 7, and Oct. 14, 1785.

² *New Hampshire State Papers*, xx., p. 696, *Journal of the House of Representatives*, September 14, 1786.

³ Atkinson and Plaistow.

⁴ *New Hampshire Town Papers*, xi., p. 530.

⁵ *History of Salisbury*, p. 79.

⁶ *Annals of Portsmouth*, p. 236.

and Plaistow, from which came the single vote in the legislature against the plan, voted subsequently for paper money on a more radical plan,¹ while Concord, an Anti-Federal town voted against paper money on any plan.²

Altogether the opposition to paper money came from 16 towns or districts, 15 of which were Federal in 1788, and 1 Anti-Federal. Moreover, 13 of these towns or districts were in Rockingham and Grafton counties, the counties which furnished one half the Federal vote in 1788. In the act of the state legislature to give effect to the British treaty of 1783, the following vote appears:³ In favor, 38, opposed 31. Of the 38 votes, 25 came from towns or districts Federal in 1788, and 13 from those Anti-Federal. Of the 31 votes against the measure, 18 came from towns or districts Anti-Federal in 1788, and 13 from those Federal. These majorities show on which side lay the preponderance of Federal or Anti-Federal sentiment in 1788; and it may safely be concluded that in the party of opposition to the Constitution were arrayed most of the advocates of paper money legislation in New Hampshire.

Massachusetts.

In 1785 Massachusetts had voted not to issue paper money, but the distress among the farmers of Western Massachusetts, and the debtors generally in the state, kept the matter constantly before the people. The outcome was the well known Shays' rebellion. The relation of this insurrection to the adoption of the new constitution and the attitude of the followers of Shays on the question of ratification is well shown in the following extract of a letter from Henry Knox to Washington, February 10, 1783: "The Constitution has labored in Massachusetts exceedingly more than was expected. The opposition has not arisen from a con-

¹ New Hampshire Town Papers, xi., pp. 122 and 230.

² Bouton, History of Concord, p. 298.

³ New Hampshire State Papers, xx., p. 693, Journal of the House of Representatives, September 15, 1786.

sideration of the merits or demerits of the thing itself, as a political machine, but from a deadly principle levelled at the existence of all government whatever. The principle of insurgency expanded, deriving fresh strength and life from the impunity with which the rebellion of last year was suffered to escape. It is a singular circumstance that in Massachusetts, the property, the ability and the virtue of the state are almost solely in favor of the Constitution. Opposed to it are the late insurgents and all those who abetted their designs, constituting four fifths of the opposition."¹ Again, Oliver Ellsworth, of Connecticut, addressing himself to Gerry said: "In Massachusetts the opposition began with you, and from motives most pitifully selfish and despicable, you addressed yourself to the feelings of the Shays' faction, and that faction will be your only support."²

Among the most characteristic features of the agitation in Western Massachusetts were the county conventions of Middlesex, Worcester, and Hampshire counties. In Middlesex county (containing 41 towns in 1790) a convention was held at Concord, August 23, 1786; there were present delegates from a majority of the towns.³ In Worcester county (containing 50 towns in 1790) a convention was held at Paxton, October 6, 1786, in which 41 towns were represented.⁴ In Hampshire county (containing 61 towns in 1790) a convention was held at Hatfield, August 22-25, 1786, in which 50 towns were represented.⁵

In these three counties there were, then, (out of a total of 152 towns in 1790), in county conventions in 1786 delegates from over 112 of these towns. In 1788 the total vote of the delegates from these counties in the state convention

¹ Massachusetts Convention, 1788. (Boston, 1856), p. 409.

² Ford, *Essays on the Constitution*, 1787-8, p. 176.

³ *Massachusetts Gazette*, September 5, 1786.

⁴ *Ibid.*, October 6, 1786.

⁵ *Ibid.*, September 8, 1786.

upon the question of ratification was 44 for, and 101 against it.

The character of the resolutions adopted by these county conventions is significant. They may be classed as follows: First, those aimed at the Constitution, asking for amendment; second, those expressing dissatisfaction with the administration of the state, the salaries paid, etc.; third, those asking that the government issue paper money. The following from the resolutions of the Hampshire county convention is typical for this last class: "Voted, That this convention recommend to the several towns in this county that they instruct their representatives to use their influence in the next general court to have emitted a bank of paper money, subject to a depreciation, making it a tender in all payments, equal to silver and gold, to be issued in order to call in the commonwealth's securities." ¹

The following extract from the charge given to the grand jury of the county of Middlesex, sums up the whole effect of the county conventions in Massachusetts: "These conventions have done more than the supreme legislature have a right to do—more than they *dare* do. The whole legislature dare not attack a single article of the constitution. And that man who attempts it does the greatest injury in his power to his fellow-citizens. . . . Emboldened by all this, and under full countenance of county conventions, as they imagined, being actually encouraged by some of their members, a lawless set of men involved in debt, began the treasonable insurrection in the upper part of Hampshire, in arms, to oppose and pull down all courts of justice. For you find it a fact that in every county which has been visited with county conventions, open rebellion and outrages have actually taken place, and in no other." ²

From the foregoing it may be safely concluded that in

¹ *Massachusetts Gazette*, Sept. 8, 1786.

² *New Hampshire Spy*, Dec. 1, 1786.

Massachusetts the Shays movement was favored by the paper money party; and, in fact, they were but phases of the same difficulty. Upon this supposition I have made a comparison of results obtained by placing in one class all towns that favored paper money or supported the Shays movement, and in the other those towns opposed to the issue of paper money or that did not support Shays.¹ Of the towns favoring paper money or supporting Shays in 1786, 2 were Federal and 21 Anti Federal in 1788. Of those opposing paper money and not supporting Shays in 1786, 20 were in 1788 Federal and 8 Anti-Federal.

One more fact is worth noting. On the third reading of the bill before the general court, giving effect to the British treaty of 1783, there were 18 votes cast in the negative.² Of these, 13 came from towns Anti-Federal in 1788, and 4 from Federal towns.

This evidence is certainly conclusive proof that in Massachusetts the Anti-Federal stronghold in 1788 was the Shays stronghold in 1786, as well as the center of the paper money and debt agitation and the rallying ground for the county conventions. With all these facts in mind, the estimate of Knox that four-fifths of the Anti-Federal party were connected directly or indirectly with the Shays movement, seems not very far from the truth.

Connecticut.

Connecticut was so overwhelmingly Federal that difference of sentiment respecting the fundamental provisions of the Constitution was not so marked as in the rest of the New England states. Nevertheless, we find here a paper money party, though insignificant in its numbers and influence. A bill providing for a tender act and one for the issue of paper money were summarily disposed of

¹ This information was obtained chiefly from local histories and contemporary newspapers. The lists are incomplete but the ratios they reveal are decisive.

Massachusetts Gazette, Dec. 26, 1785.

by the assembly, the former by a vote of 124 to 22.¹ The town of Sharon, Anti-Federal in 1788, allowed a Shays leader to raise and equip a body of men for service under Shays.² The same town also voted in town meeting that the state should emit paper money, and their delegate tried at two successive sessions to introduce a bill for that purpose.³

The following extract of a letter written from Sharon, March 8, 1787, well expresses the sentiments of the paper money party of this state: "Letter to the printers: I desire to see you manifest your impartiality by printing equally for both sides . . . for my part, I acknowledge boldly I am one of what they call the Anti-Federal party or faction . . . Friends and fellow citizens:— I will conclude with one word of advice to you concerning making choice of proper persons to do your business for you at the General Assembly . . . Don't be influenced by anybody's talking and nonsense. Choose for yourself. Choose then without favor or affection men of simplicity, not men of shrewdness and learning; choose men that are somewhat in debt themselves that they may not be too strenuous in having laws made or executed for collection of debts, nothing puts a poor, honest man so much out of ready money as being sued, and sheriffs after him. Choose such men as will make a bank of paper money, big enough to pay all our debts, which will sink itself (that will be so much clear gain to the state)"⁴

Rhode Island.

It is hardly necessary to enter into a detailed discussion as to whether, in the state whose paper money proclivities were only equaled by its opposition to the Federal Consti-

¹ *New Haven Gazette*, June 21, 1787, p. 141; also, June 22, 1786.

² Sedgwick, *History of Sharon*, p. 56.

³ *Connecticut Courant*, June 18, 1787.

⁴ *New Haven Gazette*, March 22, 1787, p. 8.

tution, there was any correspondence between these two factions. I offer the following contemporary evidence upon the question, as illustrating the general state of the case. On May 11, 1786, the towns of Providence, Newport, Portsmouth and Westerly appear on record as opposed to paper money.¹ These four towns furnished fourteen out of the thirty-four Federal votes in the convention of 1790, when Rhode Island finally ratified the Constitution. Madison wrote to Washington October 14, 1787:—"Rhode Island will be divided on this subject [Federal Constitution] in the same manner that it has been on the subject of paper money."²

New York.

New York passed a bill issuing £200,000 (tender in suits only) March 6, 1786.³ The analysis of the vote shows the following facts: No vote was cast against the bill by members of counties north of the county of New York. In the city and county of New York, and in Long Island and Staten Island the combined vote was 9 to 5 against the measure. Comparing this vote with the vote on ratification in 1788, it will be seen that of the Federal counties 3 voted against paper money and 1 for it; of the divided counties, 1 (Suffolk) voted against paper money and 2 (Queens and Dutchess) voted for it. Of the Anti-Federal counties, none had members voting against paper money.

The merchants as a body were opposed to the issue of paper money and the Chamber of Commerce adopted a memorial against the issue.⁴

The following extract of a letter written from New York City, March 4, 1787, throws further light upon conditions in this state: "This morning the Governor, the Attorney Gen-

¹ *Pennsylvania Packet*, May 25, 1786.

² Madison's Works, i., p. 342.

³ *Journal of the House*, March 6, 1786.

⁴ *History of the Bank of New York, 1784-1884*, p. 31.

eral, Adjutant, etc., etc., set out for Albany to take measures to quell any insurrections that may happen in that quarter. The legislature of this state are decided in preventing any adherents from joining Shays, but there are a great proportion of people who are ripe for confusion and war. This is not because they are discontented under their own government, but because they are so embarrassed in their affairs that they believe no disturbances can make them worse."¹

Thus it is seen why New York issued paper money, and the location of the party of discontent and financial distress in 1786 is found to correspond with that of Anti-Federalism in 1788.

New Jersey.

The issue of paper money in this state was provided by a bill passed March 9, 1786, by a vote of 20 to 17.²

The following comment upon the measure is significant:

"A law passed by the legislature in 1786, creating an issue of £100,000 in bills of credit was rejected by the governor and council, who were afraid of again having recourse to this desperate venture, but the people grew violent and their tumults became so alarming for the relief which they supposed would be afforded them by the measure that a special session of the legislature was forced to be convened in May, in order to pass the law which, then, to appease the populace, the governor was obliged to sign."³

An analysis of the above vote reveals the following facts: The vote against the measure came from members of counties⁴ in the most thickly populated portion of the state and those nearest the great cities of Philadelphia and New

¹ *Massachusetts Gazette*, March 13, 1787.

² *Journal of the House*.

³ Phillips, *American Currency*, i., pp. 84-5.

⁴ Bergen, Burlington, Gloucester, Salem, Cape May, and Cumberland. With the exception of Bergen and Cape May the population of these counties was confined quite largely to their western portions, along the Delaware river.

York, and consequently those whose interests were predominantly commercial and urban as opposed to the interior agricultural portions of the state. Furthermore, the counties¹ furnishing the bulk of the vote in favor of paper money lay in the northern half of the state, a portion most remote from the great commercial centers and possessing little or no means of communication with the outside world,² partly from distance and partly from the inaccessibility of the region itself, it being broken and mountainous in the northwestern part.

From a letter in the *Massachusetts Gazette* of Nov. 13, 1787, dated from Salem county, we find that the Federal Constitution was opposed only by those who had not yet paid their debts, and who wished the states to retain the power to issue paper money. The writer adds, however, that these objections do not gain ground in his section.

Delaware.

Delaware did not commit herself to paper money though the lower house voted to issue it, 12 to 6. The council, however, refused to agree to the measure and it was pushed no farther.³ But the excitement in the state over the question ran high. In one instance, a petition was presented to the legislature asking for an act suspending all executions in cases of debt for the term of five years.⁴ This request bears a familiar appearance, it is so similar, indeed, to the usual county convention resolution of Massachusetts that it might have been written by the same hand. The significant thing about the agitation on this question in Delaware and New Jersey is that it gives us a means of ascertaining the presence of a faction hostile

¹ Essex, Middlesex, Monmouth, Somerset, Hunterdon, Morris, and Sussex.

² Not true for Essex and Middlesex counties. (The latter county gave one vote against paper money.)

³ *Pennsylvania Packet*, July 11, 1786.

⁴ *New Hampshire Gazette*, June 29, 1786.

to the Federal Constitution, an opposition that is overborne by the stress of other considerations,¹ but which is still to be reckoned with in locating popular sentiment upon ratification.

Pennsylvania.

In Pennsylvania the issue of paper money was secured by incorporating it in a general funding measure passed March 16, 1785.² The character of the measure is well indicated in the following: "Germantown, February 14, 1785: At a meeting of the delegates from a majority of the townships of the county of Philadelphia. . . . Resolved, That the funding bill is unjust and oppressive. . . . First, because it bears too hard upon the landed property instead of taxing the luxuries of life. . . . Second, because it abrogates a former law, in ordering the interest of depreciation certificates to be paid in paper money and commits, in so doing, a breach of public faith of the most dishonorable kind. Third, because paper money is a necessary consequence for the establishment of the fund, which experience has sufficiently shown can not be supported equal to gold and silver."³

Of the same character is the following: "Philadelphia, February 24. On Monday evening last, agreeable to notice given, a large number of the merchants and traders met at the city tavern, to take into consideration the proposed emission of paper money. . . . After a pretty full investigation of the subject, the company divided on the question, when not one fiftieth part appeared in favor of paper money."⁴

On the passage of the funding bill, 17 members dissented from the action of the legislature and published their rea-

¹ New Jersey, "the cask tapped at both ends," desired efficient protection against her powerful neighbors.

² Minutes of Assembly of Pennsylvania, 1784-1787.

³ *Pennsylvania Packet*, February 17, 1785.

⁴ *Pennsylvania Packet*, February 24, 1785.

sons in full in the next week's paper.¹ Of this number, 13 were from counties Federal in 1788,² 3 from Anti-Federal counties³ and 1 from a divided county.⁴

The following contemporary evidence is valuable as showing still further the connection between the advocates of paper money in 1785-6, and the Anti-Federalists of the ratification period:

"In the list of the signers of the protest of the minority of the convention against the Federal Constitution, we find six . . . whose names are upon record as the friends of paper money. . . . In the minutes of the second session of the ninth general assembly of the commonwealth of Pennsylvania we find in the 212th page the following persons among the yeas who voted for the emission of paper money, which by its depreciation so much injured the trade and manufactures of the state, and, which, by impairing its funds has weakened the strength of our government and thereby destroyed the hopes and support of the public creditors. The persons are Wm. Findley, John Smith, Robt. Whitehill, Adam Orth, Nicholas Lutz and Abraham Lincoln. . . . I wish the public creditors to look to themselves. The funding system of Pennsylvania is on its last legs. It cannot exist another year without convulsing our state. . . . It is only by adopting the Federal government that this enormous, unequal and oppressive burthen can be taken off our shoulders, and the state rescued out of the hands of speculators, sharpers and public defaulters. It is, moreover, only from a Federal treasury that the public creditors of all descriptions can expect substantial and permanent justice.—A Citizen of Philadelphia."⁵

¹ *Pennsylvania Gazette*, March 23, 1785.

² Chester and York.

³ Bedford and Westmoreland.

⁴ Washington.

⁵ *Pennsylvania Gazette*, January 23, 1788.

"We are informed from good authority that petitions are circulating in the vicinity of Carlisle, in Cumberland county, praying for a further emission of paper money to be made a legal tender. . . . We cannot but remark that the depraved or unwise measure is adopted in a county wherein the new constitution of Federal government is more opposed than in any other part of Pennsylvania."¹

It may thus be concluded that in Pennsylvania the paper money and debt factions of 1786 quite largely joined the Anti-Federalists of 1788, and that a leading reason for opposing the Constitution was its prohibition of state issues of bills of credit.

Maryland.

In Maryland the firmness of the state senate alone prevented an issue of paper money.² The following is typical of the sentiment in the state during the period of 1785-7:

"Baltimore, July 9.—From the universal complaint respecting the scarcity of money, it is justly concluded that the quantity in circulation is not sufficient for a medium of domestic trade; . . . A paper medium is our *dernier* resort; we have no other. . . . Thousands are suffering the ninety-nine plagues of an empty purse. . . . Paper money, like other good things, is subject to abuses; but it must not therefore be laid aside; a paper medium has been useful, and it may again become a blessing to the community if we are not wanting to ourselves."³

The condition of public sentiment on this question in 1786 reminds one of that in Massachusetts during Shays' rebellion. The following extract of a letter from Baltimore gives the condition of affairs at this time:

"Charles county court has lately been compelled to adjourn all civil causes by a tumultuary assemblage of the

¹ *Pennsylvania Gazette*, April 2, 1788.

² *Connecticut Courant*, March 5, 1787.

³ *New Hampshire Gazette*, August 5, 1785. To the same effect—*Ibid.*, September 14, 1786; *Pennsylvania Packet*, October 21, 1786 and February 2, 1787.

people, and it is to be apprehended that other counties are disposed to follow the baneful precedent. No person in Harford county is, by the inhabitants, permitted to bid for property seized upon execution for debt and disposed of at public auction."¹ Says Bancroft: "In Maryland the impassioned struggle was renewed within five months of the opening of the constitutional convention. Luther Martin led the partisans of paper emissions in the house of delegates to victory and a secession was threatened if it should be rejected by the other branch."²

The above quotations are seen to be still more significant when we remember that Harford county sent Luther Martin as one of its delegates to the state convention and that he was the great opponent in Maryland of the Federal Constitution.

The following extract of a letter dated at Baltimore, April 24, 1788, adds further evidence as to the party divisions in the Anti-Federal counties of the period: "We had our election a fortnight ago, and sixty-four Federalists are chosen out of seventy-six, if all keep the promises made at the hustings. Baltimore and Harford counties alone are clearly Anti-Federal, in which are many powerful and popular men who have speculated deeply in British confiscated property and for that reason are alarmed at shutting the door against state paper money. The same men, their relations and particular friends are more violently Anti-Federal because they paid considerable sums into the treasury in depreciated continental currency and are scared at the sweeping clause . . . which may bring about a due execution of the treaty between Great Britain and America, to their loss. All these men are unanimous against the Federal government; they are here called the Black List, by way of emphatical distinction. Anne

¹ *New Hampshire Gazette*, July 13, 1786.

² Bancroft, *Plea for Constitution of the U. S. of America* (N. Y., 1886), p. 37.

Arundel county, though naturally Federal, have elected four Anti-Federalists, owing to the popular electioneering talents of Mr. Chase, who has represented them for twenty years. Mr. Chase is an Anti-Federal, both from ambition, because he cannot expect to be so powerful in the general government as he is in the state and because his, shattered circumstances render him interested in discord and civil war." ¹

In Maryland, then, we find a correspondence between the friends of paper money and debt laws and the Anti-Federal party of 1788, both as to leaders and to the rank and file of the respective parties.

Virginia.

The paper money question and the question as to the passage of legislation necessary to give effect to the British treaty of 1783, caused great divisions in Virginia, and very important results have yet to be worked out by a more detailed study than was possible from the sources at my command. The evidence here given is important, however, in that it is in full agreement with the results arrived at in the preceding investigations. On January 22, 1786, Madison wrote to Jefferson concerning the session of the House of Delegates just closed: "A considerable itch for paper money discovered itself, though no overt attempt was made. The partisans of the measure, among whom Mr. M. Smith may be considered as the most zealous, flatter themselves, and I fear upon too good ground, that it will be among the measures of the next session." ²

It will be remembered in this connection that Meriwether Smith was a delegate to the state convention in 1788 from the Anti-Federal county of Essex.

On November 1, 1786, the House of Delegates of Virginia voted, 85 to 17, that an emission of paper money

¹ *Pennsylvania Gazette*, April 30, 1788.

² Madison's Works, 1., p. 218.

would be "unjust, impolitic and destructive of public and private confidence, and of that virtue which is the basis of republican government."¹ The occasion of the vote was a petition for an emission of paper money sent in by the counties of Campbell and Brunswick, Anti-Federal counties in 1788. Of the 17 votes cast in the negative, 12 were from counties Anti-Federal in 1788, and 3 were from counties Federal at that time; all of these votes came from counties of the interior. It is also worth noting that the great opponent of the Constitution in Virginia, Patrick Henry, is charged with favoring an issue of paper money by both Washington² and Madison.³ The latter is especially explicit in his statement of the matter. He says: "I learn from Virginia that the appetite for paper money grows stronger every day. Mr. Henry is an avowed patron of the scheme, and will not fail, I think, to carry it through, unless the county (Prince Edward) which he is to represent shall bind him hand and foot by instructions. I am told that this is in contemplation." In a letter written from Richmond, Feb. 24, 1788, is the following description of the enemies of the Constitution: "Most of those now opposed to it are persons whose estates are much involved by owing large British debts, which they think must be paid when we have a Federal head."⁴

Such facts serve to identify the believers in paper money and tender laws in Virginia with the later party of Anti-Federalists.

North Carolina.

In North Carolina little material is available upon the question. After the rejection of the Federal Constitution in 1788, and until its final ratification in the following year, there appear to have been repeated efforts to secure an emission of paper money. This was successfully com-

¹ Journal of the Virginia House of Delegates.

² Sparks, *Life and Writings of Washington*, ix., p. 368, Letter to Madison, Oct. 10, 1787.

³ Madison's Works, i., p. 832, Letter to Jefferson, June 6, 1787.

⁴ *New Haven Gazette*, April 10, 1788.

batted by the great Federal leaders of 1788, Iredell, Davie, Johnston and Maclaine.¹

In the state convention of 1788, the counties of Tennessee were with a single exception² Anti-Federal. The following incident in Jackson's early career gives a view of the conditions of 1789. "When General Jackson first visited the settlements upon the Cumberland, there was but one licensed lawyer in West Tennessee. The debtors who, at important points in new settlements often compose a powerful class of the population, had conspired to set their creditors at defiance, and, as a means of effecting their object, had retained this gentleman in their service. On Jackson's arrival the creditors flocked around him and he immediately instituted a multitude of suits. To maintain the impunity they had hitherto enjoyed, the debtors signified to Jackson their displeasure at his interference, and some of them threatened him with personal violence if he did not desist."³

South Carolina.

The relation of the Anti-Federalists and the paper money party in South Carolina is indicated by the following extract of a letter dated from Charleston, April 21, 1786:

"This day three weeks our convention meets to deliberate on the Constitution. I am pretty confident that it will be ratified. Some opposition is expected from the framers of the installment, pine barren valuation and legal tender laws. Excepting from this quarter our convention has little to apprehend."⁴

Georgia.

In August, 1786, Georgia issued paper money to the amount of £30,000. The issue was opposed by the mem-

¹ Life and Correspondence of James Iredell, ii., pp. 132, 216, 240, 246-7, 266.

² Sumner county.

³ Kendall, Life of Jackson, p. 89.

⁴ *Pennsylvania Gazette*, May 7, 1788.

bers of the assembly from the lower or coast regions¹ and favored by those from the back country, who were in the majority.²

Thus in each of the original thirteen states that ratified the Constitution the testimony is of the same general character, confirming the original thesis stated at the beginning of the chapter. And it is not the least significant fact revealed in the evidence that in the three states ratifying unanimously in 1788, there was found to be a faction in favor of paper money corresponding in location and character to similar factions in the remainder of the states. Hamilton, in giving an enumeration of the factors in opposition to the new constitution mentions "the disinclination of the people to taxes, and of course to a strong government; the opposition of all men much in debt, who will not wish to see a government established, one object of which is to restrain the means of cheating creditors."³

It has been shown in previous chapters that the opposition to the Constitution was confined to those interior or sparsely settled districts that were the last to receive population, and whose interests were agricultural as opposed to commercial; rural as opposed to urban. It has been shown in this chapter that the factions in favor of paper money issues, and tender laws and opposed to the enforcement of the British treaty of 1783, were to be found in the great interior agricultural sections of the country, where the debtor class outnumbered the creditor, where taxes were unpopular and capital scarce. And finally the conclusion has been reached that these factions of 1785-6 were closely related to the Anti-Federalist party of 1788.

¹ *New Hampshire Gazette*, Sept. 7, 1786.

² *Ibid*, Sept. 21, 1786.

³ *Works*, i., 401. (Lodge, 1885.)

CHAPTER IV.

INSTRUCTIONS TO DELEGATES.

It is proposed in this chapter to offer evidence as to how close the feeling of responsibility actually came to the delegates of the state conventions of 1787-8, as well as how completely the passions, prejudices, and grievances of each section found expression in the voice of its delegates, or in their votes.

Especially in New England was the responsibility of the delegate to his constituents most demonstrable. Here, no doubt, it was a result of the numerous and clearly-marked local units, each with its own problems of self government, and its representation in the state legislature. The smaller number of voters, and the ease with which the town meeting could be called, brought the constituents and representative so close that responsibility for action was easily developed, and became one of the best understood and most frequently used methods of securing local interests on any or all questions.

In the following evidence it will be shown, not that instruction of delegates was complete for any state or section, but that there is sufficient proof of a general correspondence between the sentiment of the constituency and the vote of the delegate at the state convention to warrant the conclusion, that the votes of these representatives registered the public sentiment in each state on the question of ratifying the Federal Constitution.

New Hampshire.

The state convention to ratify the Federal Constitution met first on February 13, 1788, and adjourned after a ten days' session to meet again in June. The second session began June 18, 1788; and on June 21 the Constitution was ratified by a vote of 57 to 47.

In discussing the question of instructions of towns to the delegates of the convention of this state, four classes may be distinguished, as follows:

I. Those towns in which there is record of a direct vote of the town on the question of ratification,—fifteen towns or classes:¹ Dunstable;² Eaton, Burton, Conway, and Locations; Francestown, Hollis, Keene, Lyme and Orford, Lyndeborough, Marlborough, Newmarket, New Hampton and Meredith, Peterborough, Rindge, Sharon, Walpole, Warner.³

II. Those cases in which biographies, local histories, newspapers, etc., state the political complexion of the delegate or of the town in connection with the election for delegates,—five towns: Amherst (History of Amherst, p. 860); Boscawen (History of Boscawen and Webster, p. 134; Goodwin Collection of Town Records); Epping (Life of Wm. Plumer, p. 97); New Ipswich (History of New Ipswich, p. 116); Newbury (*Pennsylvania Packet*, Jan. 18, 1788).

III. Those towns of which there is record of committees on instructions being appointed at the town meeting, but nothing is given of the tenor of the instructions; and in but one case (Windham) is it stated whether the committee reported,—thirteen towns:⁴ Atkinson, Chichester, Claremont, Dublin, Fitzwilliam, Goffstown, Kensington, Lebanon, Litchfield, Londonderry, Loudon, Merrimac, and Windham.

IV. Those towns that changed their instructions of opposition after the first session of the convention and allowed their delegates to vote as they wished,—two towns:

¹ The references for most of these towns are still unpublished. They consist of a collection of copies of town records made by Capt. W. F. Goodwin, 1868-69, and now in the state library at Concord, New Hampshire. My copy of them was obtained through the kindness of O. G. Hammond of Concord, and A. S. Batchellor of Littleton, editor of the New Hampshire State Papers.

² History of Dunstable, p. 188.

³ History of Warner, p. 233.

⁴ The reference for these towns is the Goodwin Collection of Town Records, a above referred to.

Hopkinton (History of Hopkinton, p. 94; Goodwin Collection of Town Records); Salisbury (History of Salisbury, p. 115; Walker, The New Hampshire Federal Convention, 1788, p. 7, note 1).

The total number of towns is thus thirty-five, in which there is to be seen: first, a correspondence between the attitude of the town as to the Federal Constitution and the vote of the delegate in the state convention; second, evidence of instructions or the assertion of the right to instruct the delegates to the ratifying convention. Taking the whole number of possible delegates as 112,¹ this makes nearly one third (31 per cent. exactly) of the representation in convention. Moreover, the delegates of those towns given in I. and II., twenty in all, voted in every case, as was indicated by the vote of the town or was stated by the other authority cited.

The general evidence consists chiefly of contemporary newspaper material. The chief fact brought out by it is, that the adjournment of the convention from February 22 to June 18, 1788, was owing to the lack of a Federal majority, and the desire of a number of members to return to their constituents and have their instructions of opposition removed.

" Extract from a letter dated Exeter, New Hampshire, February 22, 1788: 'So confident were we of the prevailing voice in favor of the constitution that no pains were taken to counteract the intrigues of a few notoriously vile characters, who were too successful in the dark and dirty business of seducing a great number of the interior towns by false representation to fetter their delegates with positive instructions to vote in all events against the constitution. After discussing the subject seven or eight days, and finding many of the members, who were instructed to the contrary, convinced of the expediency and necessity of adopting the plan, and desirous

¹ Walker, The New Hampshire Federal Convention, 1788.

to consult their constituents, the convention agreed to adjourn to June, next, when, I have no doubt, the ratification will take place.' " ¹

" Extract of a letter from Boston, Feb. 24: 'The convention of New Hampshire have adjourned to June next. This measure was proposed by the Federalists, rather than to attempt to adopt the constitution by a small majority. Upwards of forty towns have absurdly fettered their delegates with instructions against the constitution.' " ²

" March 7. Further particulars of the New Hampshire Convention from the *Massachusetts Centinel*: 'No one circumstance attending the discussion of the proposed federal constitution has demonstrated its superior excellence and perfection more than the measure of adjournment adopted by the convention of New Hampshire on Friday the 22d ult., if we consider the situation of affairs then respecting it. Almost the whole of that state is inland, and a great part of it remote from the regular channels of information — by far the greater part of the people had not seen it, and received their information from factious demagogues and popularity-seekers, who had rode through the back part of the state, inflaming and prejudicing the people's minds against it. While under this infatuation, they chose delegates to meet in convention and bound them by instructions to vote against it,—and no delegate would have consented to have acted under such instructions unless his sentiments on the subject were in unison with those of his constituents. This being the case, on the meeting of the convention, a majority, all of whom were from remote parts of the state, were found to be opposed to the adoption of the constitution. It was, however, discussed for several days, and such lights thrown on the subject and so many objections obviated, as induced many thus instructed, and who had considered the constitution as dangerous, to

¹ *New York Journal and Register*, March 3, 1788, p. 3.

² *Pennsylvania Packet*, March 5, 1788, p. 3; *New York Advertiser*, March 2, 1788, p. 3.

change their sentiments. But these, considering their instructions sacred, could not on conviction vote for it; and their consciences forbade their voting against it. What was now the alternative? Either to reject the constitution (which they certainly would have done had their opinions of it continued the same) or for those thus convinced (who, with those originally in favor of it, made a considerable majority) to return home to their constituents, acquaint them of the conviction that had arisen in their minds, and of the arguments which produced it—and to prevail on them to annul the instructions, which bound them to act contrary to their opinions. The latter was thought the most proper, and therefore the convention adjourned to a distant day to give time for the circulation in every part of the state of the information and arguments which had thus proved so convincing to the members of the convention."¹

Letter to Timothy Pickering from Paine Wingate (New Hampshire delegate to Congress): "New York, March 29, 1788. . . . In New Hampshire, when the convention met, there was a majority prejudiced against the plan. They were chiefly from the interior parts of the state and many of the delegates were instructed to vote against it. The most distinguished characters were in favor of it; and, after debating it for some time, there were a few converts made, who did not think themselves at liberty to go against their instructions, and therefore obtained an adjournment."²

Much more might be quoted to the same effect. Making all allowance for partisanship on the part of these authorities just quoted, it is quite evident that both the voters and their representatives understood the binding force of town instructions, and that at the particular period under consideration there was a very general effort put forth to make the decisions of the town meetings felt in the coun-

¹ *Pennsylvania Packet*, March 10, 1788, p. 3.

² *Life of Timothy Pickering*, ii., p. 378; also, *Connecticut Gazette*, March 7, 1788, p. 3.

sels of the state convention of 1788 and in the final vote on the ratification of the new constitution. And in view of the fragmentary condition of the town records, the meagreness of newspaper material, and the poverty of the local histories on this period, the evidence thus far presented, both general and particular, certainly warrants the conclusion that in New Hampshire we may consider those towns Anti-Federal in sentiment whose delegates in the state convention voted against the ratification of the Federal Constitution.

Massachusetts.

The case of New Hampshire is evidently typical for the rest of New England, for the central institution, the town meeting, is common to all; and the proof adduced in the case of this state strengthens and supports whatever proof is to be found for the other states along this line.

Upon the question of instructions in Massachusetts, four classes of towns may be distinguished:

I. Those towns in which there is found to have been a direct vote on the question of ratification: Andover, Essex county (History of Andover, pp. 68-69); Newbury, Essex county (History of Newbury, p. 261); Sandwich, Barnstable county (History of Cape Cod, ii., Annals of Sandwich, p. 135; *New York Journal and Register*, January 25, 1788).

II. Those towns in which there is found to have been a direct vote on giving the delegates instructions: Amherst, Hampshire county (History of Hadley, p. 426; *Connecticut Gazette*, February 25, 1788); Fitchburg, Worcester county (History of Fitchburg, p. 90); Lancaster, Worcester county (History of Lancaster, p. 322); Milford, Worcester county (History of Milford, p. 92); Sutton, Worcester county (History of Sutton, 1704-1876, p. 128; *Massachusetts Centinel*, May 24, 1788).

III. Those towns whose attitude upon the Federal Constitution is given by some contemporary authority or by

local histories: Belcherton, Hampshire county (*Massachusetts Centinel*, May 24, 1788); Cambridge, Middlesex county (*Pennsylvania Packet*, January 8, 1788); Douglass, Worcester county (*Connecticut Gazette*, February 25, 1788); Easton, Bristol county (History of Easton, p. 624); Gloucester, Essex county (History of Gloucester, Cape Ann, pp. 471-2); Great Barrington, Berkshire county (History of Great Barrington, pp. 317-8); Hardwick, Worcester county (History of Hardwick, p. 118); Hopkinton, Middlesex county (*Massachusetts Centinel*, May 24, 1788); Lancaster, Worcester county (History of Lancaster, p. 322); Norton, Bristol county (*Connecticut Gazette*, February 25, 1788); Petersham, Worcester county (*Massachusetts Centinel*, May 24, 1788); Sterling, Worcester county (*Worcester Magazine and Historical Journal*, ii., p. 45); Stockbridge, Berkshire county (*Pennsylvania Packet*, December 24, 1787); Woburn, Middlesex county (History of Woburn, p. 384); Worcester, Worcester county (*Massachusetts Centinel*, May 24, 1788).

IV. Those towns in which evidence is found of the assertion by the town of the right of instruction or of an intention of instructing the delegates to the state convention: Braintree, Suffolk county (Braintree Town Records, 1640-1793, p. 577); Dunstable, Middlesex county (Elliot's Debates, ii., p. 96); Great Barrington, Berkshire county (History of Great Barrington, pp. 317-8); Northampton, Hampshire county (*Pennsylvania Packet*, December 10, 1787); Sharon, Suffolk county (Elliot's Debates, ii., p. 40); Stoughton, Suffolk county (History of Canton, p. 433).

Summing up the results, we see that in 18 towns there are records that show the attitude of the town on the question of ratification, and in each one the vote of the delegate corresponds to it; also, that in 11 towns there is evidence either of direct instructions or of the assertion of the right or intention of instructing the delegates. It is to be further noted that every county of importance but Plymouth is represented in these lists. In Andover, Essex

county, the vote of the town on the question of ratification was 115 for and 124 against it. In the convention, one of the three delegates voted for the Constitution, thus representing the Federal part of this closely-divided town.

The general conclusions above stated are further strengthened by the following: "Extract of a letter from a gentleman in Boston, dated January 30, to his friends in this city [New York]: 'Some of the delegates, who were instructed by the towns they represented to vote against it at all events, have returned home and informed their constituents that so much light had been thrown upon the subject that they could not, as honest men, hold up their hands in opposition to the Constitution. The towns have sent them back and directed them to vote as they thought best'"¹ . . .

"This direct interference of the people with the state legislature, by means of instructions to their representatives having been long discontinued, it is rather a subject of curiosity, in reading them now, to see how many of the general topics that would be likely to come under the notice of the legislature, were embraced within their scope. If representatives held themselves bound by their instructions, there was hardly a subject of interest that could arise, upon which they were not ready to act at once. This was literally the government of the people. The town was as prompt in acting upon subjects affecting the whole nation as upon those of local interest alone."²

In the province of Maine, the evidence on the instruction of delegates is as follows:

I. Those towns voting directly on the Constitution were Brunswick, Cumberland county³ (History of Brunswick, Topsham, and Harpswell, p. 132); Topsham, Lincoln county (Ibid., p. 187).

II. Those towns either instructing their delegates or asserting the right of instructing them by town vote were:

¹ *New York Advertiser*, February 8, 1788, p. 2.

² *Worcester Magazine* ii., p. 117. This was written in 1836.

³ The county names for Massachusetts and Maine are those used in Elliot's Debates, ii.

Harpswell, Cumberland county (History of Brunswick, Topsham and Harpswell, p. 171); Fryeburg, York county (Centennial Celebration of the Settlement of Fryeburg, p. 32); Wells, York county (History of Wells and Kennebunk, p. 540).

III. Those towns in which evidence was found as to the attitude of the town on the Constitution were: New Gloucester, Cumberland county (*Connecticut Gazette*, February 25, 1788); Wells, York county (History of Wells and Kennebunk, p. 540).

In all of the cases just cited where the opinion of the town is clearly known, the vote of the delegate in the convention corresponds with it. In but a single case, the only instance which I can find in New England, does the delegate violate the express wishes of his constituents. This is in the case of Barrell of York, York county.¹ Such instances are sufficiently rare to be treated as exceptions among the mass of evidence of an opposite nature. Yet full credit must be given to all such conflicting testimony, as it has its place in the makeup of a complete view of the conditions of the time.

The following quotation from a contemporary newspaper illustrates the general fact of instructions in Maine: "Several Anti-Federalist characters from the eastern parts of Massachusetts passed through this town yesterday on their way to join the convention to be holden at Boston this week for the purpose of ratifying or rejecting the new constitution; they appeared to be 'heavy laden' with their instructions of opposition: but we hope our federal brethren will be prepared for them."²

¹ *Massachusetts Centinel*, March 5, 1788, pp. 2 and 3.

² *New York Journal and Register*, January 25, 1788, p. 3.

Connecticut.

In Connecticut, the evidence is not abundant; but none of it is conflicting.

I. The following towns voted directly upon the question of ratification: Durham (Fowler, *History of Durham*, p. 148); Greenwich (*History of Greenwich*, pp. 188-9); Simsbury (personal letter from Town Clerk, Aaron Chapman).

II. The following towns voted directly to give their representatives instructions: Greenwich (*History of Greenwich*, pp. 188-9), Hampton (*History of Windham county*, ii., p. 212); Mansfield (*New York Advertiser*, February 9, 1788); Simsbury (see above).

III. In the following list are given towns whose attitude is revealed by newspapers, local histories, etc.: Derby,—asked for a convention—(*Connecticut Gazette*, October 19, 1787); New Haven (*Connecticut Courant*, October 3, 1787, *New Haven Gazette*, November 15, 1787, p. 6); Sharon (*History of Sharon*, p. 58); Stratford (*History of Stratford*, pp. 423-4); Woodstock (*History of Windham county*, p. 869).

The following general evidence on instructions in Connecticut is also significant: "Hartford, November 26, 1787: A correspondent remarks that all good men must be pleased with the prospect that this state will adopt Federal Government. . . . The principal towns acted at the election with uncommon unanimity in favor of the Constitution. In many of them there was scarcely a dissenting voice; particularly in those where the people have the best information. In other towns, it is expected that positive instructions in favor of the Constitution will be given to the delegates at the annual December meeting."¹

"In the late Convention in Connecticut, the members from New London and Fairfield counties were unanimously for the proposed Constitution; and the Hon. Mr. Williams, from Lebanon and Mr. Hopkins from Waterbury, who

¹ *Connecticut Courant*, November 26, 1787, p. 3.

were the leaders of the opposition, came over and voted for the Constitution, being fully convinced it was for the interest of that State and United States to adopt it. Many others who were in the opposition and of the minority declared, after the vote was taken, their intention to use their influence with their friends to give it all the force in their power."¹

Rhode Island.

The course of Rhode Island regarding the Federal Constitution was exceptional, on account of the length of time that elapsed before ratification. This in itself would tend to sharpen and intensify factional feeling on the matter, as the discussion continued, and would make it quite certain that the delegates correctly represented their constituencies. This view is held by Staples in his Rhode Island in the Continental Congress, pp. 634-5. He says: "Generally the delegates came to the convention without any definite instructions from their constituents to control their acts. Such instructions were not, in fact, requisite. The opinions of each delegate and of his constituents on the great question to come before them were as definite and as well known as instructions could make them. Several towns, however, gave instructions, among which were Richmond² and Portsmouth."³

New York.

Passing on to New York we come to a section where the county takes the place of the town as the local political unit; and in endeavoring to ascertain the sentiment of the people we encounter difficulties not experienced in New England. The greater extent of the country, its scattered population, the absence of anything corresponding to the

¹ *New York Advertiser*, February 9, 1788, p. 3.

² Richmond—Instructions of opposition. The delegates voted nay. Staples, Rhode Island in the Continental Congress, pp. 635-673.

³ Portsmouth—Instructions favoring ratification. The delegates voted yea. *Ibid.* pp. 636-9 and 672.

annual town meeting, the varied interests and often differing nationalities in the same county, make it difficult to ascertain whether a given expression of popular sentiment represents a majority or only a vigorous and organized minority. This is true for all the middle states, and the southern states as well. For the latter section, moreover, its intense political activity and the almost undisputed preponderance of influential leaders in such states as Virginia, Maryland, and South Carolina, differentiates it sharply from the middle section.

For New York no definite instructions have been found. It will be shown, therefore, what the attitude of the counties was, and that it corresponded to the vote of the delegate in the state convention.

In Hammond's Political History of New York, occurs the following, upon the general question of instructions. He says: "The election of delegates took place in the spring of 1788. The sole question which appears to have governed the electors in the choice of delegates was whether the candidates were for or against the adoption of the new constitution."¹

There seems to be no doubt as to the sentiments of the great majority in the counties west of the Hudson and also in those east of that river and north of Dutchess county. But one vote came from all this region in favor of the Constitution. Two contemporary newspapers give these counties as Anti-Federal in the election returns for the convention.² Hammond, as quoted above, gives these counties as Anti-Federal and states as his authority the *Albany Gazette* of July, 1788, which, in its turn, copied its report from a Poughkeepsie journal, containing the proceeding of the convention.³ In Ulster county a convention was called to select Anti-Federal delegates.⁴

¹ Vol. i., p. 19.

² *New York Journal and Register*, June 5, 1788, p. 2; *Pennsylvania Gazette*, June 18, 1788.

³ Hammond, Political History of New York, i., p. 21.

⁴ *Pennsylvania Gazette*, March 12, 1788.

It is stated for Columbia county, that its delegates obtained their election by a very large Anti-Federal majority.¹ A delegate from Albany county (Lansing) said: "I stand here the representative of others; and, as far as I can ascertain the views of my constituents, it is my duty to promote them with the utmost assiduity."² . . .

It seems equally undisputed that Kings, New York, Richmond and Westchester counties elected Federal delegates who voted for the Constitution in the convention. The authorities just quoted above are explicit on this point. In the remaining counties, Suffolk, Queens, and Dutchess, the sentiment of the people seems to have been divided. The evidence on this point is conflicting, however; and the proof is not so clear as for the other counties of the state. The convention vote of these counties is as follows:

Dutchess, yeas, 4, nays, 2; Queens, yeas, 4, nays, 0; Suffolk, yeas, 3, nays, 1.

The *New York Journal and Register*³ gives these counties in the election returns as Anti-Federal. In Hammond's Political History of New York,⁴ Dutchess county is given as electing Anti-Federalists, and Queens and Suffolk as divided. A letter from Poughkeepsie of June 3, 1788, quoted in the *Pennsylvania Packet*,⁵ states that at least one-third of the votes cast in Dutchess county were for the Constitution. This evidence, coupled with the fact that these counties furnished the votes that turned the scale in the convention in favor of ratification, seems to warrant the conclusion that they were divided counties, as shown on the map; but on which side the majority lay, it is not now possible to state.

Pennsylvania.

In Pennsylvania the evidence as to instructions is incomplete, and some of it is conflicting. For the counties whose

¹ *New York Journal and Register*, July 21, 1788, p. 3.

² Elliot's Debates (1854), ii., p. 220.

³ *New York Journal and Register*, June 5, 1788, p. 2.

⁴ Vol. 1., p. 21.

⁵ *Pennsylvania Packet*, June 9, 1788, p. 3.

delegates voted for ratification, only Huntingdon seems doubtful. The delegates of all the Federal counties but this one clearly represented the sentiments of their constituents in their vote in the convention. The evidence in detail is as follows: "Philadelphia county, the delegates were pledged to support the Constitution;¹ the same was true for Northampton county;² Northumberland county, the delegates were elected in opposition to the usually dominant Anti-Federal party of the county.³ In the Reasons of Dissent of the Minority, occurs the following: "In the city of Philadelphia and some of the eastern counties, the junto that took the lead in the business agreed to vote for none but such as would solemnly promise to adopt the system *in toto*, without exercising their judgment."⁴

The *Independent Gazetteer* of December 19, 1787, contains the following: "I believe the leaders of the majority in our convention did not publish their address and reasons of assent on two accounts: first, because nearly one-half of their number were obliged to vote according to their solemn engagements and promises (by which they were tied down before their election) and not according to their judgments."⁵

The counties of Franklin and Washington sent delegates whose votes were divided on the question of ratification. The evidence is conflicting and is as follows: In Franklin county the delegates are said to be favorable to the Constitution;⁶ a petition is presented to the legislature from Franklin county asking that the Constitution be not ratified;⁷ the "*Centinel*," Letter 18,⁸ states that the Anti-Federalists are in an overwhelming majority in Franklin and Cumber-

¹ *Massachusetts Gazette*, Nov. 27, 1787, p. 4.

² *Pennsylvania Packet*, Oct. 27, 1787.

³ McMaster and Stone, *Pennsylvania and the Federal Constitution, 1787-1789*, p. 759.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 460.

⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 503.

⁶ *Pennsylvania Packet*, Nov. 29, 1787.

⁷ *New York Journal and Register*, March 3, 1788.

⁸ *Pennsylvania and the Federal Constitution*, p. 23.

land counties. McMaster gives the following for Thos. Scott, the Federal delegate from Washington county: "He was a delegate to the Pennsylvania convention to ratify the Federal Constitution in 1787, and in 1788 elected a member of the First Congress under that instrument which he so zealously supported against the protests of his constituents and the contrary action of his colleagues."¹ The "*Centinel*," Letter 18, just referred to, gives Washington county as Anti-Federal; but the value of this authority is questionable, since it gives as Anti-Federal the two Federal counties of Huntingdon and Northumberland. And the Federal attitude of Thos. Scott must have been well known at the time of his election, and not something suddenly sprung upon his constituents after arriving at the convention; otherwise there would have been some evidence of his desertion of the trust reposed in him by his constituency. Until such evidence is forthcoming, it is safest to consider the county as simply divided in sentiment.

The opposition section of Pennsylvania, as indicated by the votes of the delegates in convention, seems to have very generally coincided with the avowed sentiments of the majority of the people of the section. Berks, Dauphin, Cumberland, Fayette, Westmoreland and Bedford counties are given in the "*Centinel*," Letter 18 (above quoted), as overwhelmingly Anti-Federal; and, in absence of any conflicting evidence, we may assume that to have been true. Some little confirmatory evidence can be added. In Fayette county the delegate is said to have opposed the Constitution out of deference to the wishes of his constituents.² Cumberland county is declared by a contemporary newspaper to be Anti-Federal in sentiment.³

¹ Pennsylvania and the Federal Constitution, p. 751.

² *Ibid.*, p. 721.

³ *New York Journal and Register*, Feb. 22, 1788 and April 8, 1788; *American Museum*, 1787, II., p. 393. It will be seen from these references that the inhabitants of the borough of Carlisle, Cumberland county, were divided on the subject of the adoption of the Constitution. The rest of the county was clearly Anti-Federal.

New Jersey.

The state of New Jersey ratified the Federal Constitution unanimously. Public opinion on the matter is well shown by the extract of a letter from Salem county, West Jersey, dated October 22, 1787: "Nothing is talked of here, either public or private, but the new constitution. All read, and almost all approve it. Indeed it requires only to be read with attention and without prejudice to be approved of. . . . There are several petitions in this and the neighboring counties, ready to be transmitted to our assembly. In this, the numerous subscribers pray the assembly, earnestly as they ever did to God Almighty for the forgiveness of their sins, immediately to call a convention for the ratification of the proposed constitution. One of these petitions has the following strong and expressive sentence in it: 'We are convinced, after the most serious and unprejudiced examination of the different articles and sections of articles of this constitution, that nothing but the immediate adoption of it can save the United States in general and the state in particular from absolute ruin.' " ¹

Delaware.

Delaware, like New Jersey, ratified unanimously; and its action seems to have been in accordance with the desire of the people. The following quotation sufficiently indicates the conditions in that state: "The legislature of Delaware met on the 24th of October, and, following 'the sense and desires of great numbers of the people of the state, signified in petitions to their general assembly,' adopted speedy measures to call together a convention." ²

Maryland.

In Maryland the delegates from Baltimore and Annapolis and from most of the Federal counties declared themselves

¹ *Massachusetts Gazette*, Nov. 13, 1787, p. 3.

² Scharf, *History of Delaware*, i. p. 369.

in the convention as instructed to ratify the Constitution and do nothing else.¹

A contemporary newspaper states, that, if the members elect carry out the pledges made at the hustings, sixty-four Federalists are elected out of a total of seventy-six.²

The pledge to oppose ratification seems to have been given openly by the delegates elected to represent the three Anti-Federal counties, Anne Arundel, Baltimore, and Harford.³

The pledges of the delegates were kept with but a single exception, that of Mr. Paca of Harford. And he declared in convention that without amendments he should be opposed to the Constitution and that he voted for it only with the understanding that it would be amended.⁴

Virginia.

The vote of ratification in Virginia was the decisive victory in the contest for the Federal Constitution. It is particularly difficult, therefore, to arrive at correct conclusions in regard to the constituency in a state where the two parties were so evenly balanced and so sharply separated, and in a section where politics was the occupation of the upper classes, and political leadership quite often counted for more than majority votes.

The divided counties will be considered first, as it is to them, and not to the great mass of Federal or Anti-Federal counties, that we must look for the decisive votes in the contest. The divided counties were Monongalia, Loudon, Louisa, King and Queen, Powhatan, Chesterfield, Warwick, Accomac, and Charlotte. In Scott's *Lost Principle*⁵ the whole question of these divided counties is dis-

¹ Elliot's Debates, ii., p. 548; *New Journal and Register*, May 1, 1783; *Pennsylvania Packet*, April 15, 1788; *New York Daily Advertiser*, April 26, 1788.

² *Pennsylvania Gazette*, April 30, 1788.

³ *New York Journal and Register*, April 24, 1788, p. 2, and May 1, 1788; *New York Advertiser*, April 26, 1788.

⁴ Elliot's Debates, ii., p. 549.

⁵ *The Lost Principle* by "Barbarossa" [Scott] (1890), pp. 161-3; App. ii., pp. 159-164.

cussed at length. He considers the delegates of these counties who voted with the Federalists as having deserted their trust and betrayed their constituents. He is followed by Wm. Wirt Henry in his life of Patrick Henry, as follows: "As it was, the result [adoption of the Constitution] was obtained by inducing several of the delegates to vote against the wishes of their constituents. Among these may be mentioned Humphrey Marshall, of Fayette county, Kentucky; Andrew Moore and William M'Kee, of Rockbridge; George Parker, of Accomac; Paul Carrington, of Charlotte; Levin Powell, of Loudon; William Overton Callis, of Louisa; and William M'Clerry, of Monongalia. Had these voted the sentiments of their constituents as indicated by instructions, or by the votes of their associated delegates, the result would have been against ratification without previous amendments." ¹

Grigsby, in his Virginia Convention, 1788,² is more conservative. After stating that Moore and M'Kee of Rockbridge county did not obey the instructions of their constituents, he says: "That some of the delegates voted in opposition to the wishes of their constituents was well known at the time." He mentions the case of Paul Carrington of Charlotte, but does not say he was a converted Anti-Federalist. Neither of these authorities quoted offer any evidence to sustain their contention. It is necessary, therefore, to go back to Scott, the earliest author to elaborate this theory, and see on what grounds he bases his conclusions. In his *Lost Principle*, pp. 161-3, is given the argument, which depends primarily upon the effect of Randolph's defection from the Anti-Federalists. This, he claims, was sufficient to turn enough votes to secure ratification. It is significant, however, that Randolph's sentiments regarding ratification were well known in Virginia as early

¹ Wm. Wirt Henry, *Life of Patrick Henry*, ii., p. 377.

² *History of the Virginia Federal Convention of 1783*, i., p. 346. (Va. Hist. Coll., ix. and x.)

as the time for election of delegates to the convention. He himself speaks of his Federalist leanings as being an obstacle to his election in Henrico county.¹ In a letter written from Fairfax county, Virginia, March 24, 1788, occurs the following. "Gov. Randolph is elected a member of convention for Henrico county. This is pleasing to the Federalists; for, although he did not sign the constitution in the convention, yet even in his objections stated to the assembly, as well as in private conversation, he has uniformly declared that he is for adopting as it now stands rather than to reject it altogether,—which he has declared, in his opinion, would endanger the existence of the union. Possessing these sentiments and having good abilities and great influence, I think his being a member of the convention will be serviceable to the union."² This evidence somewhat breaks the force of Scott's argument concerning the suddenness and decisive character of Randolph's change. Whatever influence his attitude had was not confined to the one session of the convention, but must have been at work long before that time. But, assuming for the moment, that the defection of Randolph had the weight ascribed to it in the convention, let us see how the argument proceeds as to the divided counties. Scott rests his entire case upon three assumptions: first, that the original majority in the convention was opposed to the Constitution; second, that the waverers were all Anti-Federalists and the "conversions" all came from their side: third, that there were no wavering constituencies. In point of fact, however, none of these assumptions are sustained by a particle of evidence, nor does he offer any, but rests his case wholly upon inference. Positive evidence upon the other side, therefore, renders his position untenable.

1. As to the original majority in the convention, Mr. Henry, in his *Life of Patrick Henry*, seems to admit it to

¹ Conway, *Edmund Randolph*, p. 101, Letter to Madison, February 29, 1788.

² *Pennsylvania Packet*, May 27, 1788.

be Federal.¹ He says: "When the result of the elections was made public, the people of the State, a majority of whom were decidedly opposed to immediate ratification, as appeared in the legislature elected about the same time, were astonished to find that the Federalists claimed a majority. This had been the more easily obtained by the manner of constituting the body."

Patrick Henry admitted that numbers appeared equal on both sides.² Col. Grayson wrote June 9, 1788: "Our affairs in the convention are suspended by a hair."³ These admissions by leading Anti-Federalists confirm the evidence already given, and make it probable that the majority was not with the Anti-Federalists.

2. Were the waverers all Anti-Federalists? Colonel Grayson wrote June 9, 1788 "there are seven or eight dubious characters, whose opinions are not known and on whose decisions the fate of this important question will ultimately depend."⁴ Patrick Henry made good use of the Spanish claim to the Mississippi river in winning over the delegates from Kentucky,⁵ who would, it was thought, give at least a few Federal votes.⁶ A letter from New York, April 27, 1788, giving returns of the election in Virginia, states the "neutrals" as three, all of whom, it is affirmed, would vote for the Constitution.⁷ Among them were Carrington and his colleague of Charlotte county; and it will be remembered that Carrington's colleague voted against the Constitution.

3. Were there no wavering constituencies? Marshall and Randolph were elected to the convention from Henrico county, which Scott counts as Anti-Federalist. The choice

¹ Vol. ii., pp. 339-40.

² Henry, *Life of Patrick Henry*, ii., p. 342.

³ *Ibid.*, ii., p. 344; Leake, *Life of John Lamb*, p. 311.

⁴ Henry, *Life of Patrick Henry*, ii., p. 314; Leake, *Life of John Lamb*, p. 311.

⁵ *Life of Henry*, ii., p. 360.

⁶ Correspondence and Public Papers of John Jay, iii., pp. 337-8; *Pennsylvania Packet*, June 20, 1788.

⁷ *Massachusetts Centinel*, May 7, 1788.

was made wholly from considerations of personal popularity, and against a strong Anti-Federalist candidate, Randolph's opinion being, as I have shown, well known at this time.¹ Paul Carrington, an avowed Federalist, was elected delegate from Charlotte county. The statement of his attitude on the Constitution is to be found in a letter of Madison to Jefferson, Oct. 24, 1787.² Ralph Wormley, of Middlesex county, wrote before the convention assembled: "The minds of the people of this county are greatly divided."³ Andrew Moore, of Rockbridge county, refused in the convention to obey his instructions of opposition to the Constitution, and at the next election he was vindicated by an overwhelming majority.⁴ The influence of Stuart of Augusta county at the Botetourt election was sufficient to change the complexion of the delegates from Anti-Federal to Federal and bind them by instructions.⁵

These instances reveal no compact and thoroughly organized constituency, but rather a doubting, wavering one, easily turned one way or the other as a leader may determine for them. The important thing in such counties would be not what the majority might vote, but what was the opinion of its leaders—one of the characteristic political aspects of the South, as has already been pointed out.

It is thus seen that Scott's contention has nothing to rest on and is contradicted by much undisputed evidence. On the other hand, if viewed in the light of the proof just cited, the existence of divided counties becomes not only explicable, but extremely probable. It is hardly to be supposed that, in all the sharp divisions among the people of the state, county lines should always coincide with party lines. Bitter political contests within the same county would result quite as often in a tie between con-

¹ Conway's Randolph, p. 101.

² Madison, Works, i., p. 357.

³ *Pennsylvania Packet*, Jan. 8, 1788, p. 3.

⁴ *Virginia Historical Collections*, x. p. 34.

⁵ *Ibid.*, ix., p. 346, note.

testants as that one party would be completely victorious: and in spite of the best calculations, personal popularity, as in Henrico county, might be more than enough to balance political antagonisms, and Federal delegates, in whole or in part, would be returned from otherwise Anti-Federal constituencies, or *vice versa*. But in giving so much prominence to the effect of Randolph's change of opinion regarding the Constitution, the author of *The Lost Principle* has neglected to make allowance for an influence equally potent on the side of Anti-Federalism. This was the wonderful eloquence and persuasive powers of that idol of the common people, Patrick Henry. The position of Virginia is unique in possessing a speaker of such ability, whose presence in the convention and whose personal magnetism as a debater carried such decisive weight as did his. Even his political opponents have left striking tributes to his powers. One of the best known of them is that of John Marshall:¹ "If I were called upon to say who of all men I have known had the greatest power to convince, I should perhaps say Mr. Madison; while Mr. Henry had without doubt the greatest power to persuade."

To the wavering constituencies of Virginia or the *neutral* delegates in the convention the speeches of this great Anti-Federalist would appeal with telling effect. And certainly the Federal leaders in Virginia dreaded, more than all else, the persuasive eloquence of Patrick Henry.

Regarding the remaining counties, the evidence is as follows:

I. Counties voting direct instructions to their delegates: Botetourt (Virginia Historical Collections, ix., p. 346, note); Fairfax (*American Museum*, ii., p. 392); Frederic (*Ibid.*, ii., p. 510); Rockbridge (Virginia Historical Collections, x., p. 34).

II. Counties in which either the views of the majority or the attitude of the delegates is given: Amherst (*Penn-*

¹ Henry, *Life of Patrick Henry*; ii., p. 376.

sylvania Packet, March 21, 1788); Charlotte (Madison's Works, i., p. 357); Fayette,¹ Kentucky (Marshall, History of Kentucky, i., pp. 287-88); Henrico (Conway's Randolph, pp. 100-101); Isle of Wight (Virginia Historical Collections, x., p. 376;); Western counties (Madison's Works, i., p. 388).

III. General statement of instructions in Virginia: Mr. Mason calls the minority party together after ratification to "prepare an address to reconcile the minds of their constituents to the new form of government."² Extract of a letter from Richmond, Virginia, April 4, 1788: "I am informed that some counties are so convinced of the necessity of the adoption of the Constitution that they are about to instruct their members so to do."³ Washington, in a letter to James Wilson, April 4, 1788, said: "It is impossible to say, with any degree of certainty, what will be the determination of the convention in this State upon the proposed plan of government. . . . Some judgment may be formed when the members chosen by the several counties to serve in convention are known, as their sentiments will be decided and their choice determined by their attachment or opposition to the proposed system."⁴ We have already seen how certain counties were not thus explicit for their delegates; but the statement, nevertheless, holds true for the great bulk of the counties of Virginia, as, no doubt, Washington intended it.

It has been thus shown that for Virginia there was a very well understood relation of responsibility of representative to constituency in the period of 1787-8, and that, with very trifling exception, it dominated the action of the delegates in their votes in the convention.

¹ Humphrey Marshall of this county violated the instructions of his constituency.

² *Pennsylvania Packet*, July 17, 1788.

³ *Connecticut Gazette*, May 2, 1788.

⁴ Works (1891), xi., p. 243.

North Carolina.

In North Carolina positive instructions seem to have been given in but two counties, Wilkes¹ and Northampton.² But very few delegates came to the convention without a pretty clear understanding of the wishes of their constituents and a determination to carry them out. The attitude of the following counties concerning ratification was well known: Beaufort (Address of Grand Jury, *New York Advertiser*, May 14, 1788); Chowan (*American Museum*, iii., p. 71); Davidson (History of Nashville, p. 90); Edenton, town, (Address of Grand Jury, *American Museum*, iii., p. 72; Speech of Iredell, *Elliot's Debates*, iv., p. 5); Franklin (*Elliot's Debates*, iv., p. 215); Halifax (*Ibid.*, p. 4).

Willie Jones of Halifax county made the following statement concerning instructions: "He said that the Constitution had so long been the subject of the deliberations of every man in this county, and that the members of the Convention had had such ample opportunity to consider it, that he believed every one of them was prepared to give his vote then upon the question."³ The western part of the state was stated to be decidedly Anti-Federal by Wm. Harper in a letter to Iredell, April 15, 1788.⁴

South Carolina.

In South Carolina the question of instructions comes up in the case of but a single locality, Prince Frederick's Parish. Alexander Tweed of this parish declared in convention, that, though he knew that the sentiment of his constituents was clearly Anti-Federal, he did not feel bound to vote against the Constitution on that account.⁵ His colleague expressed the opposite opinion and declared him-

¹ *Elliot's Debates*, iv., p. 202.

² *Life and Correspondence of James Iredell*, ii., p. 96.

³ *Elliot's Debates*, iv., p. 4.

⁴ *Life and Correspondence of James Iredell*, ii., p. 222; to the same effect, *Massachusetts Centinel*, October 25, 1788.

⁵ *Elliot's Debates*, iv., p. 332.

self as pledged to vote as the majority of his constituents desired.⁴

An attempt was made in the convention, after the discussion had proceeded for some time, to procure an adjournment. One of the reasons given was as follows:

"That many delegates from the country had come down, biased themselves and instructed by their constituents against the constitution — that since they had heard the debates, their sentiments had greatly changed; in consequence of this they wished to have time to return to their constituents and bring them over also."¹

In summing up the evidence offered in this chapter, it may safely be concluded that, on the whole, the delegates of the ratification conventions knew the wishes of their constituents and voted in accordance with them. The evidence given furnishes a large number of specific cases of this, and, what is still more important, it reveals a habit of instructing representatives, firmly fixed in the political ideas of the time. The instances of delegates violating the instructions of their constituents are shown to have been but three in number¹ (omitting the doubtful case of Mr. Paca, of Harford county, Maryland). So small a percentage of error in the general statement of the problem is remarkable. It shows conclusively, that however much new evidence may change details, the conclusions of this chapter will be abundantly confirmed.

¹ Elliot's Debates, iv., p. 337.

² *Pennsylvania Packet*, May 31, 1788, p. 3.

³ Nathaniel Barrell, York, York county, Maine; Humphrey Marshall, Fayette county Kentucky; Alexander Tweed, Prince Frederick's Parish, South Carolina.

APPENDIX A.

SOURCES FOR THE LOCAL GEOGRAPHY, 1787-8.

Materials for accurately mapping the local units of the states in 1787-8 are not abundant. I publish this map with the hope that those whose local knowledge is more accurate than mine, and whose resources are more adequate for such a task, will criticise any defects in particular sections. It is believed that the general conclusions reached will not be materially modified by detailed criticism.

The method pursued to secure a working map for the period, was to make use of as early a map as was available for each state, and then by study and comparison of maps, town and county histories, statutes relating to boundaries, etc., to reconstruct the conditions of 1787 or 1788. In some cases this was a comparatively simple task, but in others not so easy. The following statement of sources used for the various states, and the results arrived at in each case are given in detail in order that the correctness of the mapping may be tested.

NEW HAMPSHIRE.

The map used was one published by A. J. Coolidge in 1859, to be found in the History and Description of New England by Coolidge and Mansfield, 1860. (Maine, New Hampshire, and Vermont.)

I. The alterations necessary to make this map correspond to the conditions of 1788, are as follows:

1. Alton. Originally called New Durham Gore, p. 409.¹
- . Auburn. Till 1845 the west parish of Chester, p. 415.
- Bridgewater. A part of New Chester (Hill) until February 3, 1788, p. 428. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xi., p. 238.)
4. Bristol. In 1819 set off from New Chester and Bridgewater, p. 429.
5. Brookfield. A part of Middletown till 1794, p. 430.
6. Centre Harbor. A part of New Hampton till 1797, p. 436. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xi., p. 276.)
7. Danbury. A part of Alexandria till 1795. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xi., p. 477.)
8. Derry. A part o Londonderry till 1828, p. 466. (History of Rockingham County, p. 168.)

¹The number of the page refers to the History and Description of New England by Coolidge and Mansfield, unless specific reference is given to some other work.

9. Derryfield. Became Manchester in 1810; that part of the town east of Merrimac river was called Derryfield, p. 564.
10. Dunstable. Called Nashua in 1836. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xii., p. 622; History of the Old Township of Dunstable, p. 188.)
11. Farmington. A part of Rochester till 1798, p. 493.
12. Franklin. Taken from Salisbury, Andover, Sanbornton, and Northfield, and incorporated in 1828, p. 497.
13. Freedom. The north part of Effingham till 1831. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xi., p. 605.)
14. Gilford. A part of Gilman till 1812, p. 500.
15. Gorham. A part of Shelburne till 1836, p. 504. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xiii., p. 424.)
16. Goshen. Taken from Newport, Sunapee, Newbury, Washington, Lempster, and Unity, and incorporated in 1791, p. 505. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xii., p. 47.)
17. Greenfield. Taken from Society Land, Peterborough, Lyndeborough, and Lyndeborough Gore, and incorporated in 1791. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xii., p. 61; History of Peterborough, p. 359 and map on p. 356.)
18. Hebron. Taken from Groton and Plymouth, and incorporated in 1792, p. 521.
19. Hooksett. Taken from Chester, Dunbarton and Goffstown. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xii., p. 252.) That part of Hooksett east of the Merrimac river was taken from Chester. (History of Town of Chester, p. 133 and map in same.)
20. Laconia. A part of Meredith till 1855, p. 546.
21. Locations. Not given on the map of the state in the History and Description of New England before referred to. It probably included the towns of Jackson and Bartlett, as well as a strip of territory called Halle's Location. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xi., p. 160 (2-25); xii., p. 289 (5-174.)
22. Madison. A part of Eaton and Effingham, and incorporated 1852, p. 564.
23. Milford. Composed chiefly of parts from Amherst and Hollis. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xii., p. 603.)
24. Milton. A part of Rochester till 1802, p. 582.
25. Monroe. A part of Lyman till 1854, p. 582.
26. Mount Vernon. A part of Amherst till 1803, p. 583. (History of Hillsborough County, p. 731.)
27. Rollinsford. A part of Somersworth till 1849, p. 636. (History of Rockingham and Strafford Counties, p. 660.)
28. Roxbury. The greater part taken from Keene and Nelson (Packersfield). Two ranges of lots and a certain gore of land at the

- north end of Marlborough completed the territory. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xii., p. 566, and xiii., p. 352; History of Marlborough, pp. 77-78 and map on p. 20.)
29. Sharon (Peterborough Slip), incorporated in 1791. (Hurd, History of Hillsborough County, p. 670; New Hampshire Town Papers, xiii., p. 505.)
 30. Society Land. A small portion of territory north of the north line of Peterborough and west of the west line of Francestown. (New Hampshire Town Papers, xii., pp. 61, 152, and 516.)
 31. South Newmarket. A part of Newmarket till 1849, p. 652; (History of Rockingham and Strafford Counties, p. 525.)
 32. Strafford. A part of Barrington till 1820, p. 655. (Ibid., p. 701.)
 33. Troy. Composed chiefly of territory from Fitzwilliam, Richmond, and Marlborough; incorporated in 1815, p. 566. (History of Marlborough, map on p. 20.) The territory taken from Swanzey was insignificant. (History of Swanzey, p. 76.)
 34. Webster. A part of Salisbury till 1860. (History of Boscawen and Webster, p. 217.)
 35. Wilmot. Taken from New London and Kearsarge Gore and incorporated in 1807. [The "Gore" given in the town vote on page 17 of Walker's The New Hampshire Federal Convention, 1788, is Kearsarge Gore.]

II. The following additions and corrections are made to the usual list of delegates ¹ given for the state convention and the record of their votes.

1. Piermont and Warren were represented by Captain Isaac Patterson, who voted in favor of the Constitution. Haverhill and Coventry were represented by Colonel Joseph Hutchins, who voted against the Constitution. Lincoln and Franconia were not represented in convention. (New Hampshire State Papers, xx; p. 844; New Hampshire Town Papers, xi., pp. 685-96; *Granite Monthly*, xii. (old series), pp. 39, 59, and 60.)
2. Salisbury. Its delegate cast no vote, but the action of the town shows it to have been Federal in sentiment. (Dearborn; History of Salisbury, p. 115.)
3. Hancock, Antrim, and Deering. The delegate cast no vote, but he is stated to have voted against the Constitution. (Cochrane, History of Antrim, p. 78; Hayward, History of Hancock, p. 104.)
4. Epping. An Anti-Federal town. (Life of Wm. Plumer, p. 97.)

¹ Walker, The New Hampshire Federal Convention, 1788, pp. 7-41.

5. Peterborough. Direct vote of the town against ratification of the Federal Constitution. (Copied from Capt. W. F. Goodwin's Collection of Copies of Town Records in the state library at Concord, New Hampshire.)
6. Meredith and New Hampton. Direct vote of town against ratification. (See above for reference.)

III. In the following lists are given the names of those towns for which no record can be found respecting their attitude on the adoption of the Federal Constitution.

1. Towns represented in the convention, but whose delegates did not vote: Hinsdale, Lee, Pembroke, Surry and Gilsum.
2. Towns on the list, but not represented in the convention: New London, Andover, and Gore; Protectworth (Springfield).
3. Those not mentioned in the list of delegates to the convention: Bennington, Langdon, Lisbon (Concord, alias Gunthwaite), Sullivan.

MASSACHUSETTS.

The map used for this state is one to be found in Bradford's History of Massachusetts, 1620-1820 (Boston, 1835.) It was made by James G. Carter and published by Hilliard, Gray & Co., Boston, 1835.

The first alteration of this map to make it correspond with that of 1788, concerns the names and boundaries of the counties. The original county of Hampshire had been divided into three,—Franklin, Hampshire and Hampden. Old Suffolk had become Norfolk, and a few minor changes also took place which need not concern us at present. In the following list of towns, the nomenclature of the counties is that of 1788, and any changes are indicated in parentheses at the right.

I. Changes in town names and boundaries since 1788 up to the time the map was published.

1. Barnstable county.

- (1) Brewster. A part of Yarmouth till 1793. (Massachusetts Census, 1885. Population and Statistics, part i., p. 83; Nason, Gazetteer of Massachusetts, p. 179.)
- (2) Dennis. A part of Harwich till 1803. (Massachusetts Census, 1885, part i., p. 83; Freeman, History of Cape Cod, ii., p. 744.)

2. Berkshire county.

- (1) Cheshire. Taken from Adams, Lanesborough, New Ashford, and Windsor, and incorporated in 1793. (History of Berkshire County, i., p. 617.)

2. Berkshire county—continued.

- (2) Hinsdale. A part of Peru (Partridgefield) till 1804. (Nason, Gazetteer of Massachusetts, p. 406; Holland, History of Western Massachusetts, ii., p. 501.)
- (3) New Ashford. Incorporated in 1836. United with Lanesborough in choice of representatives. (History of Berkshire County, ii., p. 249; Nason, Gazetteer of Massachusetts, p. 360.)
- (4) Otis. Original name, Loudon, changed in 1810. (Holland, History of Western Massachusetts, ii., p. 540.)
- (5) Peru. Original name, Partridgefield, changed in 1806. (Nason, Gazetteer of Massachusetts, p. 406; History of Berkshire County, ii., p. 266.)

3. Bristol county.

- (1) Fairhaven. A part of New Bedford till 1812. (Nason, Gazetteer of Massachusetts, p. 201.)
- (2) Pawtucket. A part of Seekonk till 1828. (Ibid., p. 399.)
- (3) Seekonk. A part of Rehoboth till 1812. (Ibid., p. 455.)
- (4) Somerset. A part of Swanzev till 1790. (Ibid., p. 465.)
- (5) Troy (Fall River). A part of Freetown till 1803. (Ibid., p. 203.)

4. Essex county.

- (1) Essex. A part of Ipswich till 1819. (History of Essex County, ii., p. 1190; History of Essex, p. 278.)
- (2) Hamilton. A part of Ipswich till 1793. (History of Essex County, ii., pp. 1210-17.)
- (3) Saugus. A part of Lynn till 1815. (History of Essex County, i., p. 391.)
- (4) West Newbury. A part of Newbury till 1819. (History of Essex County, ii., p. 1863.)

5. Hampshire county.

- (1) Enfield. Taken from Greenwich, Belcherton, and Ware, and incorporated in 1816. (Holland, History of Western Massachusetts, ii., p. 201.)
- (2) Gill (Franklin county). Taken from Greenfield and incorporated in 1793. (Ibid., p. 363.)
- (3) Holland (Hampden county). A part of Brimfield till 1836. (History of Brimfield, 1701-1876, pp. 8-9.)
- (4) Leyden (Franklin county.) A part of Bernardston till 1809. (Holland, History of Western Massachusetts, ii., p. 389.)
- (5) Norwich (Northwick?). Incorporated in 1786. (Hampshire County Gazetteer, 1654-1887, p. 316.)
- (6) Prescott. Taken from Pelham and New Salem and incorporated in 1822. (Holland, History of Western Massachusetts, ii., p. 268.)

5. Hampshire county—continued.

- (7) Russell (Hampden county). A part of Westfield till 1792. (*Ibid.*, p. 110.)
- (8) Tolland (Hampden county). A part of Granville till 1810. (*Ibid.*, p. 138.)

6. Middlesex county.

- (1) Boxborough.¹ Taken from Stow, Harvard, and Littleton, and incorporated in 1836. United with Stow in choosing representatives till 1836. (Drake, *History of Middlesex County*, i., p. 273; *History of Boxborough*, p. 12; *Centennial Celebration, Boxborough, Massachusetts* (1883), p. 20.)
- (2) Brighton. A part of Cambridge till 1837. (Paige, *History of Cambridge, 1630-1877*, p. 5.)
- (3) Burlington. A part of Woburn till 1799. (Drake, *History of Middlesex County*, i., p. 298.)
- (4) Lowell. Taken mostly from Chelmsford and incorporated in 1826. (*Ibid.*, ii., p. 53.)
- (5) South Reading. A part of Reading till 1812. (Eaton, *History of Reading*, p. 409.)
- (6) Tyngsborough. A part of Dunstable till 1809. (Drake, *History of Middlesex County*, ii., p. 391.)
- (7) West Cambridge. A part of Cambridge till 1807. (Paige, *History of Cambridge*, p. 5.)

7. Plymouth county.

- (1) Carver. A part of Plympton till 1790. (Nason, *Gazetteer of Massachusetts*, p. 145; *History of Plymouth County*, p. 444.)
- (2) East Bridgewater. A part of Bridgewater till 1823. (*History of Plymouth County*, p. 869.)
- (3) Hanson. A part of Pembroke till 1820. (*Ibid.*, p. 341.)
- (4) North Bridgewater. A part of Bridgewater till 1821. (*Ibid.*, p. 555.)
- (5) West Bridgewater. A part of Bridgewater till 1822. (Nason, *Gazetteer of Massachusetts*, p. 538.)

8. Suffolk county.

- (1) Canton. A part of Stoughton till 1797. (*Massachusetts Census, 1885. Population and Statistics, part i.*, p. 95.)
- (2) Dover. A part of Dedham till 1836. (*Ibid.*, p. 95.)
- (3) Quincy. A part of Braintree till 1792. (*History of Quincy*, p. 270.)
- (4) Randolph. A part of Braintree till 1793. (*History of Braintree and Quincy*, p. 13.)

¹ On p. 34 of *Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, 1788*, Boxborough is given in the roll of towns, but no delegate is named.

9. Worcester county.

- (1) Berlin. A part of Bolton till 1812 and uniting with that town in choice of representatives. (*History of Worcester County, i., p. 272.*)
- (2) Dana. Taken from Hardwick, Petersham, and Greenwich, and incorporated in 1801. (*Ibid., p. 408.*)
- (3) Milbury. A part of Sutton till 1813. (*Ibid., ii., p. 100.*)
- (4) North Brookfield. A part of Brookfield till 1812. (*History of Worcester County, i., pp. 348-50.*)
- (5) Southbridge. Taken from Sturbridge, Charlton, and Dudley in 1816. (*Sturbridge and Southbridge, p. 189.*)
- (6) West Boylston. Taken from Boylston, Holden, and Sterling in 1808. (*History of West Boylston, p. 8.*)

II. Additions and corrections to the roll of delegates to be found in Elliot's Debates, ii., pp. 178-81. For full discussion of these corrections of Elliot, see Appendix B.

1. Bernardston, Hampshire county (Franklin county). Delegate voted nay (Agrippa Wells).
2. Haverhill, Essex county. Delegate voted yea (Nathaniel Marsh).
3. Hopkinton, Middlesex county. Delegate voted nay (Gilbert Dench).
4. Lanesborough, Berkshire county. Delegate voted yea (Jonathan Smith).
5. Pittsfield, Berkshire county. Delegate did not vote at all (David Bush).
6. Raynham, Bristol county. Delegate voted yea (Israel Washburn).

III. In the following list are given the names of those towns for which no record was found of their being represented at the state convention, or of their attitude regarding ratification of the Federal Constitution:¹ Chatham, Barnstable county; Chilmark, Dukes county; Clarksburg, Berkshire county; Cohasset, Suffolk county; Dalton, Berkshire county Eastham, Barnstable county; Florida, Berkshire county; Gardner, Worcester county; Goshen, Hampshire county; Hawley, Franklin county; Heath, Franklin county; Middlefield, Hampshire county; Middleton, Essex county; Monroe, Berkshire county; Montgomery, Hampshire county (Hamptden county); Orleans, Barnstable county; Phillips-ton, Worcester county; Province Town, Barnstable county; Rowe, Hampshire county (Franklin county); Savoy, Berkshire county; Truro, Barnstable county; Wellfleet, Barnstable county; Wendell, Hampshire county (Franklin county); Zoar, Berkshire county.

¹ These towns are given in the roll of delegates on pp. 31-43 of Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts (1836). They seem to have sent no delegates.

IV. The following list of towns is taken from pages 31-43 of *Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts (1856)*. It contains those towns whose full delegation did not appear as voting. The names of the missing delegates are given in parentheses. Barnstable, Barnstable county (Nymphas Marston); Berkeley, Bristol county (Samuel Tobey); Brookfield, Worcester county (James Nichols); Danvers, Essex county (Samuel Holten); Freetown, Bristol county (Richard Bordon); Westfield, Hampshire county (John Phelps); Woburn, Middlesex county (James Fowle); Worcester, Worcester county (Samuel Curtis).

For the province of Maine the map used was copied from one to be found opposite page 9 of *History and Description of New England*, Coolidge and Mansfield (Boston, 1860).

The corrections and additions are as follows:

1. Alfred. A part of Sanford till 1794, p. 27.¹
2. Bremen. A part of Bristol till 1828. (Johnston, *History of Bristol, Bremen and Pemaquid*, 1873, p. 79.)
3. Cornish. A part of Parsonsfield till 1811, p. 96.
4. Damariscotta. A part of Bristol till Nov. 20, 1788, pp. 100 and 230.
5. Dayton. A part of Hollis till 1854, p. 101.
6. Freeport. A part of North Yarmouth till 1789, p. 131.
7. Kennebunk. A part of Wells till 1820. (Bourne, *History of Wells and Kennebunk* (1875), p. 703.)
8. Limington. A part of Parsonsfield till 1792, p. 192.
9. Newfield. A part of Parsonsfield till 1794, p. 225.
10. Nobleborough. A part of Bristol till Nov. 20, 1788, p. 230.
11. Pepperellborough (Saco), p. 289.
12. Phipsburg. A part of Georgetown till 1814, pp. 259-60.
13. Westbrook. A part of Falmouth till 1814, p. 353.

The town of Parsonsfield is said to have been an Anti-Federal town. (Dearborn, *History of Parsonsfield* (1888), p. 190.) Three counties were represented in the convention of 1788—Cumberland, Lincoln, and York. In the list of delegates, 31 towns are given as sending no delegates; their names are omitted as not of enough importance to need detailed notice. Besides the above references, use was made of the map in Sullivan's *History of the District of Maine*, (Boston, 1795).

CONNECTICUT.

The map used for Connecticut is to be found in *Carey's American Atlas* (Philadelphia, 1800).

¹ Unless otherwise stated, the page references will refer to *History and Description of New England*, as above.

It gives the towns as they were in 1788,¹ so that no correction of names or boundaries is necessary.

The towns of Colebrook, Litchfield county, and Hampton, Windham county, were not represented in the convention.

The following correction is to be made in the vote on the Federal Constitution in the state convention, as given in Hollister's Connecticut, ii., p. 611: The town of Hamden voted to reject the Constitution 73 to 5 and a delegate was elected to attend the convention at Hartford. (Blake, History of Hamden, 1786-1886, p. 211.)

RHODE ISLAND.

The map used for Rhode Island is to be found in the Gazetteer of Connecticut and Rhode Island, Pease and Niles (Hartford, 1819.) It contains the boundaries and nomenclature of 1788, and no correction has been found necessary.

NEW YORK.

For New York the map used is one to be found in Documentary History of New York, vol. i. (1779.)

The following corrections were made:

1. Columbia county was created out of Albany county in 1786. (See the above map for northern boundary as given in Laws of New York, ch. 28, sec. 1, April 4, 1786.)
2. The name of Tryon county was changed to Montgomery. (Laws of New York, ch. 17, April 2, 1784.)
3. The name of Charlotte county was changed to Washington. (Laws of New York, ch. 17, April 2, 1784.)
4. Clinton county was set off from Washington county in 1788. (History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, Philadelphia, 1880, p. 118.)

The western boundary of Montgomery county is left indefinite, as the population there was scattered along an irregular frontier line.

PENNSYLVANIA.

The map for Pennsylvania is one taken from Carey's American Atlas, (Philadelphia 1800), Reading Howell's map by Samuel Lewis. The following corrections were made:

1. Mifflin county. Taken from parts of Cumberland and Northumberland counties. (Laws of Pennsylvania, ch. 1425, September 19, 1789).
2. Alleghany county. Taken from parts of Washington and Westmoreland counties. (History of Alleghany County (1889), p. 120; map opposite page 222 in History of Washington County (1882).)

¹ Except for the town of Huntington, which was taken from Stratford in 1789. (History of Fairfield County, p. 410.)

MARYLAND.

For Maryland the map used was taken from one in Carey's American Atlas made by Samuel Lewis (Philadelphia, 1800).

VIRGINIA.

The map of this state is one to be found in Jefferson's Notes on Virginia (1853). No county boundaries are indicated on any early map of this state; and, as it was quite impossible to work out such a county map from Hening's Statutes of Virginia, from lack of sufficient local knowledge, the state has been mapped into counties in only an approximately accurate manner.

For the counties of Kentucky the map was copied from one made by Joseph Purcell: Map of the states of Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia, engraved for Morse's Geography, published by John Stockdale, 1792. On this map the boundaries of Virginia and Kentucky end at the Cumberland river.

NORTH CAROLINA.

The map used for North Carolina was taken from Carey's American Atlas (Philadelphia, 1814). The necessary corrections are found in a monograph¹ by Kemp P. Battle, formerly president of Trinity college, North Carolina.

For that part of North Carolina now embraced in the present state of Tennessee, the map was copied from Joseph Purcell's map of the states of Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia, referred to above. On this map the territory of North Carolina is made to extend to the Mississippi river. The additions and corrections to this map are all indicated on page 740 of Ramsay's Annals of Tennessee (Philadelphia, 1853).

SOUTH CAROLINA.

The map used for South Carolina was copied from one to be found in Carroll's Historical Collections of South Carolina, vol. i. (New York, 1836). For the location and boundaries of the parishes in the state the chief authority was Dalchos, Historical Account of the Protestant Episcopal Church in South Carolina (Charleston, 1820). Additional references are Mill, Statistics of South Carolina; Ramsay, History of South Carolina; Carey, American Atlas (Philadelphia, 1800), map of South Carolina, 1795, by Samuel Lewis.

GEORGIA.

The map of Georgia was taken from Carey's American Atlas (Philadelphia, 1800).

¹ The Names of Counties of North Carolina, pp. 8-12.

APPENDIX B.

The chief source of authority for studying the ratification of the Federal Constitution is the work familiarly known as Elliot's Debates. In making use of this work for the details of the Massachusetts convention I discovered several errors in the roll of delegates and also in the yeas and nays. And, as it was necessary to have an accurate list of delegates, in order to make the map correct, other authorities were consulted, with the following results:

AUTHORITIES CONSULTED.

1. Elliot's Debates, ii. The Debates in the Several State Conventions on the Adoption of the Federal Constitution. Jonathan Elliot (Washington, 1854).
2. Massachusetts Constitutional Convention, 1788. Debates, Resolutions, and other Proceedings of the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. Oliver and Munroe (Boston, 1808).
3. Federal Convention of Massachusetts. Debates, Resolutions, and other Proceedings of the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. Adams and Nourse (Boston, 1788).
4. Massachusetts Convention, 1788. Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, 1788. Printed by Authority of Resolves of the Legislature, 1856.
5. Contemporary newspapers: *Massachusetts Centinel*, Feb. 9, 1788; *Connecticut Courant*, Feb. 11, 1788; *Massachusetts Gazette*, Feb. 8, 1788; *New York Journal and Register*, Feb. 15, 1788.

The last three of these authorities agree, in the main, with each other; the first two agree neither with each other nor with the last three. Two of these three are contemporary sources; and the other is compiled by a committee of the legislature of Massachusetts. They form a consistent body of evidence that ought to have great weight in settling disputed points. The last authority, the newspapers, gives only the yeas and nays, the others give besides this the roll of delegates by towns and counties.

The following tables show the correspondence and disagreement in the authorities cited; the footings of the county votes for Berkshire, Essex, Middlesex, Plymouth, and Worcester appear to show the greatest variation.

*I.—Analysis of vote as given by Elliot's Debates (Washington, 1854),
ii, pp. 178-181.*

| COUNTIES. | YEAS. | | NAYS. | |
|--------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| | Figures as given in totals. | By actual count of delegates. | Figures as given in totals. | By actual count of delegates. |
| 1. Barnstable..... | 7 | 7 | 2 | 2 |
| 2. Berkshire..... | 6 | 6 | 16 | 16 |
| 3. Bristol..... | 10 | 10 | 12 | 12 |
| 4. Dukes..... | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 |
| 5. Essex..... | 33 | 37 | 6 | 7 |
| 6. Hampshire..... | 33 | 19 | 19 | 32 |
| 7. Middlesex..... | 17 | 18 | 25 | 24 |
| 8. Plymouth..... | 22 | 21 | 6 | 6 |
| 9. Suffolk..... | 34 | 34 | 5 | 5 |
| 10. Worcester..... | 8 | 7 | 43 | 43 |
| | 202 | 186 | 155 | 168 |

Actual vote of Massachusetts.....187 yeas, 168 nays
 Total vote of Massachusetts..... 355
 Total vote by figures as given in totals..... 357
 Total vote by actual count of delegates..... 354

*II.—Analysis of vote as given by Massachusetts Constitutional Convention,
1788. Oliver and Munroe (Boston, 1808), pp. 225-229.*

| COUNTIES. | YEAS. | | NAYS. | |
|--------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| | Figures as given in totals. | By actual count of delegates. | Figures as given in totals. | By actual count of delegates. |
| 1. Barnstable..... | 7 | 7 | 2 | 2 |
| 2. Berkshire..... | 7 | 6 | 15 | 16 |
| 3. Bristol..... | 10 | 10 | 12 | 12 |
| 4. Dukes..... | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 |
| 5. Essex..... | 33 | 33 | 6 | 6 |
| 6. Hampshire..... | 33 | 19 | 19 | 33 |
| 7. Middlesex..... | 17 | 17 | 25 | 25 |
| 8. Plymouth..... | 22 | 21 | 6 | 6 |
| 9. Suffolk..... | 34 | 34 | 5 | 5 |
| 10. Worcester..... | 7 | 7 | 43 | 43 |
| | 202 | 186 | 159 | 169 |

Actual vote of Massachusetts.....187 yeas, 168 nays
 Total vote of Massachusetts..... 355
 Total vote from figures as given in totals..... 361
 Total vote by actual count of delegates..... 355

III.—Analysis of vote as given by Federal Convention of Massachusetts. Adams and Nourse (Boston, 1788), pp. 213-216.

| COUNTIES. | YEAS. | | NAYS. | |
|--------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| | Figures as given in totals. | By actual count of delegates. | Figures as given in totals. | By actual count of delegates. |
| 1. Barnstable..... | 7 | 7 | 2 | 2 |
| 2. Berkshire..... | 7 | 7 | 15 | 15 |
| 3. Bristol..... | 10 | 10 | 12 | 12 |
| 4. Dukes..... | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 |
| 5. Essex..... | 33 | 38 | 6 | 6 |
| 6. Hampshire..... | 23 | 19 | 19 | 33 |
| 7. Middlesex..... | 17 | 17 | 25 | 25 |
| 8. Plymouth..... | 21 | 21 | 6 | 6 |
| 9. Suffolk..... | 34 | 34 | 5 | 5 |
| 10. Worcester..... | 7 | 7 | 43 | 43 |
| | 201 | 187 | 154 | 163 |

Actual vote in Massachusetts .. 187 yeas, 163 nays
 Total vote in Massachusetts .. 355
 Total vote from figures as given in totals .. 355
 Total vote by actual count of delegates .. 355

A comparison of the tables I., II., and III. will reveal that they are quite unlike, both in sum totals and in details. The works from which their evidence is taken were published respectively in 1854, 1808, and 1788. So that only one of them could be called a contemporary authority, and the fact that the evidence in table III. is taken from this work, gives it a special value. It will be seen from this table (III.) that the sum totals correspond with those of the actual vote of the state, and that by actual count the yeas and nays are also accurate. Only the figures from the county totals foot up wrong. The error consists simply in transposing the figures for the total yeas and nays in Hampshire county, making them read 33 to 19 instead of the reverse. With this change, both the figures and the count of delegates correspond exactly.

Comparing table II. with III., it is seen that the former contains the same transposition of yeas and nays for Hampshire county that we had noticed for the latter; also that there is a discrepancy between the figures and the count for Berkshire and Plymouth counties. The yeas and nays are wrong, and the total vote seems to be right only for the count of the delegates. In table I. there is a still wider departure from the showing of table III. The same error of transposition appears in the

yeas and nays of Hampshire county, with a still further error (32 for 33), and the total vote is not right. The yeas are wrong, and the nays right for the actual count of delegates only. Besides this, in the counties of Berkshire, Essex, Middlesex, Plymouth, and Worcester there are discrepancies between the actual count and the figures for the county totals. Thus far we may conclude that, of the tables, III. is the most accurate and I. the most in error; but they all seem to be connected by the same error of transposing the yeas and nays of Hampshire county, which persists through all three of the editions.

It has been pointed out above that the error of table III. is merely one of transposing the figures in the yeas and nays of Hampshire county. The source of the discrepancies in the other tables will be seen from the following table:

| IV. | Elliot's Debates, ii. (Washington, 1854). | Massachusetts Constitutional Convention 1788. Oliver and Munroe (Boston, 1808). | Debates and Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, 1788 (Boston, 1856). | Federal Convention of Massachusetts. Adams and Nourse (Boston, 1788). | Contemporary Newspapers. ¹ |
|--|---|---|--|---|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Gilbert Dench..... (Hopkinton, Middlesex Co.) | Yea. | Nay. | Nay. | Nay. | Nay. |
| 2. Nathaniel Marsh..... (Haverhill, Essex Co.) | Nay. | Yea. | Yea. | Yea. | Yea. |
| 3. Jonathan Smith..... (Lanesborough, Berkshire Co.) | Nay. | Nay. | Yea. | Yea. | Yea. |
| 4. Agrippa Wells..... (Bernardston, Hampshire Co., (Franklin Co.) | ..... | Nay. | Nay. | Nay. | Nay. |

It is seen from table IV. that the contemporary newspapers, an edition of the debates for 1788, and the legislative edition of 1856 agree in every particular, while the Elliot edition and that of Oliver and Munroe are in agreement in only one of the cases. It is quite evident that these two latter editions are in error, and in just those respects indicated in the table. If the votes of these four delegates are changed so as to correspond with those of the three authorities in agreement, the totals of the Elliot and the Oliver and Munroe editions will then be correct in every particular.

There are also several other corrections to be made to the list of yeas

¹ *Massachusetts Centinel*, February 9, 1788; *Massachusetts Gazette*, February 8, 1788; *Connecticut Courant*, February 11, 1788; *New York Journal and Register*, February 15, 1788.

and nays, which, while not affecting the totals, are important as bearing on the question of how each town voted in the convention.

1. Raynham (Bristol county) (Israel Washburn) voted yea. The legislative edition, 1856, of the Debates in the Massachusetts Convention, before referred to, gives Washburn as the delegate from Raynham; but all the other editions give him as a delegate from Freetown. In the History of Raynham (Sanford), p. 7, it is stated that Israel Washburn was sent as a delegate to the convention from that town. I have mapped Raynham as voting yea.

2. Pittsfield (Berkshire county). In all the editions but that of the legislative edition of 1856, Valentine Rathbun is given as a delegate of Pittsfield, in the latter authority, however, he is given as representing Richmond, with Comstock Betts as a colleague. But according to the census of 1790¹ the town of Richmond contained but 1,255 inhabitants, while Pittsfield contained 1,992, so that if either were entitled to two delegates, the latter would have the best right. Moreover, in the History of Pittsfield, 1800-1876, p. 94, note 1, the names of both Rathbun and Bush are given, as delegates from that town to the Federal convention. This seems evidence enough to convict the edition of the debates (1856), of an error in its roll of delegates.

A few minor corrections may further be made:

The delegate from Berwick, York county, Maine, is given variously as Elijah Hays, Hayes, Thayr and Thayer; the last seems to be the most accurate.

The delegate from Adams, Berkshire county, is given in Elliot as J. Pleroe, but is given (correctly) in the other authorities as Jeremiah Pierce.

The delegate from Rehoboth, Bristol county, appears in Elliot as Frederick Brown, and in the other authorities it is Frederick Drown.

It is not assumed that this completes the list of corrections to the Elliot and other editions, but it suggests a fruitful field for local historians and one as yet little worked.

¹ Massachusetts Census, 1885. Population and Statistics, part I., p. 64.

APPENDIX C.

VOTE OF THE LOCAL UNITS UPON THE FEDERAL
CONSTITUTION, 1787-8.¹

The principal authorities for the following statement of the local vote on the Federal Constitution are given in the notes under each of the states. These authorities have been supplemented and corrected as seen in Chapter IV. and Appendices A. and B., *ante*.

NEW HAMPSHIRE.²*Cheshire County.*

FEDERAL: Alstead, Charlestown, Cornish, Dublin, Keene, Langdon, Packersfield, Plainfield, Swanzey, Walpole, Westmoreland, Winchester.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Acworth, Chesterfield, Claremont, Croyden, Fitzwilliam, Jaffrey, Lempster, Marlborough, Marlow, Newport, Richmond, Rindge, Springfield (Protectworth), Stoddard, Unity, Washington, Wendell.

Grafton County.

FEDERAL: Alexandria, Bath, Bridgewater, Campton, Canaan, Cockburne, Colebroke, Concord (Gunthwaite), Dalton, Dorchester, Enfield, Grafton, Groton (Cockermouth), Hanover, Lancaster, Landaff, Lebanon, Littleton, Lyman, Lyme, New Chester, New Holderness (Holderness), Northumberland, Orange (Cardigan), Orford, Percy, Plymouth, Rumney, Stratford, Thornton, Wentworth.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Bartlett, Burton, Coventry, Haverhill, Piermont, Warren.

Hillsborough County.

FEDERAL: Boscawen, Derryfield, Henniker, Hillsborough, Hopkinton, Mason, Raby, Salisbury, Wilton.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Amherst, Antrim, Bedford, Bradford, Deering, Dumbarton, Dunstable, Fishersfield, Francestown, Goffstown, Hancock, Hollis, Litchfield, Lyndeborough, Merrimack, Milford, New Boston, New Ipswich, Nottingham West, Peterborough, Sharon, Society Land, Sutton, Temple, Warner, Weare.

Strafford County.

FEDERAL: Alton, Barnstead, Barrington, Dover, Durham, Moultonboro, New Durham, Ossipee, Sandwich, Somersworth, Tamworth, Tuftonborough, Wolfeborough.

¹ The following lists include many towns who sent no delegates to their state convention but whose attitude in the Federal Constitution was ascertained in some other way.

² Walker, *The New Hampshire Federal Convention, 1788*, pp. 7-21.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Conway, Eaton, Effingham, Gilmanton, Madbury, Meredith, Middleton, New Hampton, Rochester, Sanbornton, Wakefield.

Rockingham County.

FEDERAL: Allenstown, Brentwood, Chester, Deerfield, Epsom, Exeter, Greenland, Hampstead, Hampton, Hampton Falls, Kensington, Kingstown, Newcastle, Newington, Newmarket, Northfield, North Hampton, Northwood, Nottingham, Pelham, Portsmouth, Rye, Seabrook, Stratham, Windham.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Atkinson, Bow, Candia, Canterbury, Chichester, Concord, East Kingstown, Epping, Hawke, Londonderry, Loudon, Newtown, Pittsfield, Plaistow, Poplin, Raymond, Salem, Sandown, South Hampton.

MASSACHUSETTS.¹

Barnstable County.

FEDERAL: Barnstable, Falmouth, Harwich, Wellfleet, Yarmouth.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Sandwich.

Berkshire County.

FEDERAL: Becket, Great Barrington, Mt. Washington, New Ashford, New Marlborough, Lanesborough, Sheffield, Stockbridge, Williamstown.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Adams, Alford, Egremont, Hancock, Lee, Lenox, Loudon (Otis).

ANTI-FEDERAL: Partridgefield (Peru), Pittsfield, Richmond, Sandisfield, Tyringham, Washington, West Stockbridge, Windsor.

Bristol County.

FEDERAL: Attleborough, Dighton, Freetown, New Bedford, Raynham, Westport.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Dartmouth, Easton, Mansfield, Norton, Rehoboth, Somerset, Swanzey.

Dukes County.

FEDERAL: Edgarton, Tisbury.

Essex County.

FEDERAL: Amesbury, Beverly, Bradford, Gloucester, Haverhill, Ipswich, Lynn, Lynnfield, Manchester, Marblehead, Newbury, Newburyport, Salem, Salisbury, Topsfield, Wenham.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Boxford, Danvers, Methuen, Rowley.

DIVIDED: Andover (1-2).

Hampshire County.

FEDERAL: Brimfield, Buckland, Charlemont, Chester, Chesterfield, Cummington, Easthampton, Hadley, Hatfield, Huntingdon, Long Meadows, Northfield, Northampton, Northwick (Norwich?), Plainfield, South Hadley, Southampton, Sprnigfield, Westfield, West Hampton, Worthington.

¹ Elliot's Debates, ii., pp. 178-181.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Amherst, Ashfield, Belcherton, Bernardston, Blandford, Coleraine, Conway, Deerfield, Granby, Granville, Greenfield, Greenwich, Leverett, Leyden, Ludlow, Monson, Montague, New Salem, Orange, Palmer, Pelham, Shelburne, Shutesbury, South Brimfield (Holland), Southwick, Sunderland, Ware, Warwick, West Springfield, Whately, Wilbraham, Williamsburg.

Middlesex County.

FEDERAL: Boxborough, Cambridge, Charlestown, Concord, Dracut, Dunstable, Framingham, Lexington, Lincoln, Malden, Medford, Newtown, Sherburne, Stow, Sudbury, Tyngsboro, Waltham, Weston.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Acton, Ashby, Bedford, Billerica, Carlisle, Chelmsford, East Sudbury, Groton, Holliston, Hopkinton, Littleton, Marlborough, Natick, Pepperell, Reading, Shirley, Stoneham, Tewksbury, Townsend, Watertown, Westford, Wilmington, Woburn.

Plymouth County.

FEDERAL: Abington, Bridgewater, Duxbury, Halifax, Hanover, Kingstons, Marshfield, Pembroke, Plymouth, Wareham, Scituate.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Rochester, Plympton.

DIVIDED: Middleboro' (2-2).

Suffolk County.

FEDERAL: Boston, Braintree, Brookline, Chelsea, Dedham, Dorchester, Dover, Foxboro, Franklin, Hingham, Hull, Medfield, Milton, Needham, Roxbury, Walpole, Weymouth.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Bellingham, Medway, Sharon.

DIVIDED: Stoughton (1-1), Wrentham (1-1).

Worcester County.

FEDERAL: Athol, Bolton, Lancaster, Leominster, Princeton, Southboro', Sterling, Western.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Ashburnham, Barre, Boylston, Brookfield, Charlton, Douglass, Dudley, Fitchburg, Grafton, Hardwick, Harvard, Holden, Hubbardston, Leicester, Lunenburg, Mendon, Milford, New Braintree, Northboro', Northbridge, Oakham, Oxford, Paxton, Petersham, Royalston, Rutland, Shrewsbury, Spencer, Sturbridge, Sutton, Templeton, Upton, Uxbridge, Ward, Westboro', Westminster, Winchendon, Worcester.

Province of Maine.—Cumberland County.

FEDERAL: Brunswick, Cape Elizabeth, Gray, Harpswell, North Yarmouth, Portland, Scarboro'.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Gorham, New Gloucester.

DIVIDED: Falmouth (1-1).

Lincoln County.

FEDERAL: Bath, Boothbay, Edgcombe, Georgetown, Pownalborough
Wiscasset), Thomaston, Vassalboro', Woolwich.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Bodoinham, Bristol, Hallowell, Newcastle, Topsham,
Winslow, Winthrop.

York County.

FEDERAL: Buxton, Coxhall (Lyman), Saco (Pepperelboro'), Wells.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Berwick, Fryeburg, Kittery, Lebanon, Parsonsfield,
Sanford, Shapleigh, Waterboro', York.

CONNECTICUT.¹*Fairfield County.*

FEDERAL: Danbury, Fairfield, Greenwich, New Fairfield, Newton,
Norwalk, Reading, Ridgefield, Stamford, Stratford.

Hartford County.

FEDERAL: Berlin, Bristol, East Hartford, East Windsor, Farmington,
Glastenbury, Hartford, Southington, Wethersfield, Windsor.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Enfield, Granby, Simsbury, Suffield.

Litchfield County.

FEDERAL: Bethlem, Canaan, Goshen, Hartland, Kent, Litchfield, New
Milford, Salisbury, Southbury, Warren, Washington, Watertown, Win-
chester, Woodbury.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Barkhamstead, Cornwall, Norfolk, Sharon.

DIVIDED:² Harwinton, New Hartford, Torrington.

Middlesex County.

FEDERAL: Chatham, East Haddam, Haddam, Killingworth, Middleton,
Saybrook.

New Haven County.

FEDERAL: Derby, Milford, New Haven, Waterbury.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Branford, Durham, East Haven, Guilford, Hamden,
North Haven, Wallingford, Woodbridge.

DIVIDED: Cheshire.

Tolland County.

FEDERAL: Bolton, Coventry, Tolland, Stafford, Union, Willington.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Ellington, Hebron, Somers.

Windham County.

FEDERAL: Ashford, Brooklyn, Canterbury, Killingly, Plainfield,
Thompson, Voluntown, Windham.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Mansfield, Pomfret, Woodstock.

DIVIDED: Lebanon.

¹ Hollister, History of Connecticut, ii., Appendix, pp. 611-14

² The divided towns of Connecticut all stood (1-1).

NEW YORK.¹

FEDERAL: Kings, New York, Queens, Richmond, Suffolk (3-1), Westchester.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Albany, Clinton, Columbia, Montgomery, Orange (3-1), Ulster, Washington.

DIVIDED: Dutchess (4-2).

PENNSYLVANIA.²

FEDERAL: Bucks, Chester, Huntingdon, Lancaster (5-1), Luzerne, Montgomery, Northampton, Northumberland, Philadelphia (city and county), York.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Bedford, Berks, Cumberland, Dauphin, Fayette, Westmoreland.

DIVIDED: Franklin (2-2), Washington (2-2).

MARYLAND.³

FEDERAL: Annapolis (city), Baltimore (city), Calvert, Caroline, Cecil, Charles, Dorchester, Frederick, Kent, Montgomery, Prince George's, Queen Anne's, St. Mary's, Somerset, Talbot, Washington, Worcester.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Anne Arundel, Baltimore, Harford (3-1).

VIRGINIA.⁴

FEDERAL: Albermarle, Augusta, Berkeley, Botetourt, Caroline, Elizabeth City, Fairfax, Fauquier, Frederick, Gloucester, Greenbrier, Greensville, Hampshire, Hardy, Harrison, Henrico, Isle of Wight, James City, King George, Lancaster, Middlesex, Nansemond, New Kent, Norfolk, Northampton, Northumberland, Ohio, Orange, Princess Anne, Randolph, Richmond, Rockbridge, Rockingham, Shenandoah, Southampton, Surry, Westmoreland, York, Norfolk (borough), Richmond (borough).

ANTI-FEDERAL: Amelia, Amherst, Bedford, Brunswick, Buckingham, Campbell, Charles City, Culpeper, Cumberland, Dinwiddie, Essex, Fluvanna, Franklin, Goochland, Halifax, Hanover, Henry, King William Lunenburg, Mecklenburg, Montgomery, Pittsylvania, Prince Edward, Prince George, Prince William, Russell, Spottsylvania, Stafford, Sussex, Washington.

DIVIDED:⁵ Accomac, Charlotte, Chesterfield, King and Queen, Loudon, Louisa, Monongalia, Powhatan, Warwick.

¹ Elliot's Debates, ii., pp. 206, 207, and 413.

² McMaster and Stone, Pennsylvania, and the Federal Constitution, 1787-1788, pp. 212-13 and 425-6.

³ *New York Advertiser*, May 7, 1788; *New York Journal and Register*, May 12, 1788; Scharf, *History of Maryland*, ii., pp. 543 and 546.

⁴ Grigsby, *History of the Virginia Federal Convention*, i., pp. 363-6. (Virginia Historical Collections, ix., new series.)

⁵ These counties were divided evenly (2-2).

Kentucky.

FEDERAL: Jefferson.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Bourbon, Fayette, Lincoln, Madison, Mercer, Nelson

NORTH CAROLINA.¹

FEDERAL: Beaufort (3-1), Bertie, Camden, Cartaret, Chowan, Currituck, Gates, Hyde, Martin (4-1), Pasquotank, Perquimons, Robeson. (4-1), Tyrrell. Towns: Salisbury, Halifax, Edenton, Newbern, Wilmington.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Anson, Brunswick (4-1), Burke (4-1), Caswell, Chatham (4-1), Duplin, Edgecombe, Franklin, Granville, Guilford, Halifax, Johnston (4-1), Jones, Mecklenburg (4-1), Montgomery, Moore, Nash, New Hanover, Northampton, Onslow, Orange, Pitt (4-1), Randolph, Richmond, Rockingham, Rowan, Rutherford, Sampson, Surry, Warren, Wayne, Wilkes, Hillsboro' (town).

DIVIDED: Bladen (2-3), Craven (3-2), Cumberland (3-2), Hertford (3-2), Lincoln (3-2), Wake (2-3).

Tennessee.

FEDERAL: Sumner.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Davidson, Green, Hawkins, Sullivan, Washington.

SOUTH CAROLINA.²

FEDERAL: All Saints'; Christ Church; District between Savannah River and the North Fork of Edisto; North Side of the Saluda; Orange; Prince George's, Winyaw; Prince William's; St. Andrew's; St. David's; St. George's, Dorchester; St. Helena's; St. James', Goose Creek; St. James', Santee; St. John's, Colleton County; St. Paul's Parish (5-2); St. Philip and St. Michael; St. Stephen's; St. Thomas and St. Dennis; South Side of the Saluda.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Chester County; District between Broad and Catawba Rivers; Richland County; District called the New Acquisition (10-1); District Eastward of the Wateree (9-1); District of Ninety Six (8-1); District of Saxe-Gotha (6-1); Fairfield County; Lower District, between Broad and Saluda Rivers; St. Bartholomew's (5-2); Upper or Saluda District.

DIVIDED: Little River District (2-2); Prince Frederick's (4-3); St. John's, Berkeley County (3-3); St. Matthew's (2-1); St. Peter's (4-2).

¹ Journal of the Convention of 1788. (By kindness of Jos. Blount Cheshire, Jr., Charlotte, North Carolina.)

² Elliot's Debates, iv., p. 340.

NORTH CAROLINA—VOTE FOR 1789.¹

FEDERAL: Beaufort, Bertie, Brunswick (4-1), Burke (4-1), Camden, Cartaret, Chowan, Cumberland (4-1), Currituck, Dobbs, Edgecombe, Gates, Halifax, Hertford, Hyde, Johnston, Jones, Iredell, Lincoln (4-1), Martin, Montgomery, Nash, Onslow, Pasquotank, Perquimons, Pitt, Randolph (3-1), Robeson, Rutherford, Tyrrell, Wake, Washington. *Towns*: Salisbury, Edenton, Hillsboro', Newbern, Halifax, Wilmington.

ANTI-FEDERAL: Duplin, Granville (4-1), Guilford, Mecklenburg (4-1), Moore, New Hanover, Orange (4-1), Richmond (4-1), Rockingham, Sampson (4-1), Wilkes.

DIVIDED: Anson (2-2), Bladen (2-3), Caswell (2-3), Chatham (2-1), Craven (2-1), Franklin (2-1), Northampton (3-2), Rowan (3-2), Surry (3-2), Warren (3-2), Wayne (3-2).

Tennessee.

FEDERAL: Davidson, Greene, Hawkins, Sumner, Tennessee.

DIVIDED: Sullivan (2-2).

¹ From the Journal of the Convention of 1789 as reprinted in the *Raleigh State Chronicle*, November 15, 1889. (By the kindness of Jos. Blount Cheshire, Jr., Charlotte, North Carolina.)

116
BULLETIN OF THE UNIVERSITY OF WISCONSIN
ECONOMICS, POLITICAL SCIENCE, AND HISTORY SERIES, VOL. 1, NO. 2, PP. 117-273.

THE FINANCES OF THE UNITED STATES FROM
1775 TO 1789, WITH ESPECIAL REFER-
ENCE TO THE BUDGET

BY

CHARLES J. BULLOCK, A. B.
Fellow in Economics

PUBLISHED BY AUTHORITY OF LAW AND WITH THE APPROVAL OF
THE REGENTS OF THE UNIVERSITY

MADISON, WIS.
PUBLISHED BY THE UNIVERSITY
JUNE, 1895

PRICE 75 CENTS

13

PREFACE.

This essay has grown out of an investigation into the history of the budget system of the United States. In the course of this, it became evident that such a work could not begin with the year 1789; but that any study of origins must inquire into the history of the Confederation, and even into the experience of the colonial period. The evolution of a budget system by the Continental Congress could not be adequately treated without entering into a somewhat extended examination of all sides of the financial arrangements of that time. Such considerations have determined the form of the present essay, which is intended to serve as the basis for a detailed treatment of the national budget from the establishment of the present government.

The author is under obligations to a number of persons for kindnesses extended to him in the preparation of this essay. First he would mention Prof. Richard T. Ely, by whose encouragement, advice, and criticism he has profited at all stages of the work. Prof. Frederick J. Turner and Prof. William A. Scott have kindly read all of the manuscript, and offered many important suggestions. Prof. Charles H. Haskins and Prof. Victor Coffin have been frequently consulted, and from them valuable aid and criticism have been received. Most of the materials necessary for these investigations have been found in the library of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin. The officials of

the library have extended many privileges and courtesies without which it would have been impossible to complete this essay within the limits of a year well filled with other duties. Finally, to the material assistance of friends who may not be mentioned, a debt of the deepest gratitude is due.

CONTENTS.

| | PAGE. |
|---|------------|
| INTRODUCTION..... | 117 |
| Continuous development of the finances of the United States.. | 117 |
| Position and character of the Continental Congress..... | 118 |
| The Articles of Confederation..... | 118 |
| Financial weakness of the Congress..... | 119 |
| Character of the finances of the Confederation..... | 120 |
| | |
| PART I.—REVENUES AND EXPENDITURES. | |
| <i>Chapter I. Revenues of the Government. (A) Continental Pa-</i> | |
| <i>per Money.....</i> | <i>122</i> |
| Reasons for the issue of paper money..... | 123 |
| Issues of bills of credit up to 1778..... | 124 |
| Depreciation. Price conventions. Legal tender laws..... | 127 |
| Evils caused by the paper money..... | 128 |
| State issues of bills of credit..... | 129 |
| Issues of Continental bills of credit in 1778 and 1779..... | 130 |
| Specie value of the total issues of paper money..... | 131 |
| Repudiation. Act of March, 1780..... | 136 |
| "Continental bills of the new tenor"..... | 137 |
| Resumption of the specie basis..... | 138 |
| Consideration of the policy of Congress..... | 138 |
| Bills of credit and the Constitution..... | 139 |
| | |
| <i>Chapter II. Revenues of the Government. (B) Domestic and</i> | |
| <i>Foreign Loans.....</i> | <i>141</i> |
| Section I. Domestic Loans and Indebtedness. | |
| Congress authorizes a domestic loan..... | 141 |
| The loan office system..... | 142 |
| History of the domestic loans..... | 142 |
| Amount of money secured through the loan offices..... | 143 |
| Other forms of domestic debt..... | 143 |
| Unsuccessful attempt to fund the debt..... | 144 |
| Interest indents..... | 145 |

| | PAGE. |
|--|------------|
| Hamilton's table of the domestic debt..... | 145 |
| Temporary loans from the Bank of North America..... | 146 |
| Section II. Foreign Loans. | |
| Loans secured from France..... | 146 |
| Spanish and Dutch loans..... | 147 |
| Loans secured in Holland after 1783..... | 148 |
| Total foreign indebtedness in 1790..... | 148 |
| Section III. The Debts of the States. | |
| Debts contracted by the States..... | 149 |
| Assumption of State debts by the United States..... | 149 |
| <i>Chapter III. Revenues of the Government. (C) Taxes.....</i> | |
| Colonial taxation..... | 151 |
| Policy of Congress in 1775..... | 152 |
| Taxation and the Articles of Confederation..... | 153 |
| The requisition system..... | 153 |
| Reasons for its failure..... | 154 |
| Difficulty of apportioning the requisitions..... | 154 |
| Efforts of Congress to secure payment..... | 155 |
| Attempts to levy an impost..... | 156 |
| History of the several requisitions..... | 157 |
| Total receipts from this source..... | 163 |
| The Federal Convention of 1787..... | 164 |
| <i>Chapter IV. Revenues of the Government. (D) Miscellaneous</i> | |
| <i>Revenues.....</i> | <i>165</i> |
| French subsidies..... | 165 |
| Lottery..... | 166 |
| Fees, fines, and forfeitures..... | 167 |
| The post office..... | 167 |
| Other receipts..... | 169 |
| The public domain..... | 169 |
| <i>(E) Total Revenues of the Government.....</i> | <i>171</i> |
| <i>Chapter V. Expenditures of the Government.....</i> | |
| Section I. Expenditures from 1775 to 1784. | |
| Estimates of Jefferson, Hildreth, and Hamilton..... | 174 |
| The Report of 1790..... | 175 |
| New estimate of the cost of the Revolution..... | 176 |

| | PAGE. |
|--|-------|
| Section II. Expenditures from 1784 to 1789. | |
| Statement of public debt in 1784. | 181 |
| Appropriations made by Congress..... | 182 |
| Expenditures at the treasury..... | 183 |
| Expenditures in Europe..... | 184 |
| Estimate of total receipts and expenditures..... | 186 |
| Summary..... | 187 |

PART II. THE FORMAL ORDERING OF THE FINANCES.

| | |
|--|-----|
| <i>Chapter I. The Administration of the Finances.....</i> | 188 |
| Delegation of executive powers by the Continental Congress..... | 189 |
| Jealousy of executive authority..... | 189 |
| Beginnings of a treasury department..... | 190 |
| The Treasury Board..... | 191 |
| Collection of revenues..... | 191 |
| Standing Committee of Finance..... | 193 |
| Reorganization of the department in 1778..... | 193 |
| Invitation extended to Dr. Price..... | 194 |
| The Board of Treasury..... | 195 |
| Congressional investigation of the department..... | 196 |
| Inefficiency of the financial administration..... | 196 |
| Remodeling of the executive departments..... | 199 |
| Robert Morris appointed Superintendent of Finance..... | 200 |
| Efficiency of his administration..... | 201 |
| Morris's resignation..... | 207 |
| The new Board of Treasury..... | 210 |
| The finance department given a single head in 1789..... | 210 |
| <i>Chapter II. The Budget and the History of Budgetary Methods. 211</i> | |
| Section I. Historical Introduction. | |
| Definition of the term budget..... | 211 |
| The development of the English budget system..... | 213 |
| Section II. Revenue and Supply in the American Colonies. | |
| Separation of powers..... | 214 |
| Legislative control of revenue..... | 215 |
| Legislative control of appropriations..... | 216 |
| Restrictions on the transfer and diversion of appropriations | 218 |
| Superior power of the lower branch of the legislature in budgetary questions..... | 220 |
| Development of unity in budgetary procedure. Massachusetts, New York, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, Virginia, South Carolina..... | 224 |

| | PAGE. |
|--|-------|
| <i>Chapter III. The Development of a Budget System by the Continental Congress</i> | 233 |
| (A) The Early Management of Revenue and Supply..... | 233 |
| (B) The Development of Unity in Budgetary Procedure..... | 237 |
| The "plan of finance" of 1778..... | 238 |
| Requisition for 1780..... | 239 |
| The financial report of 1781..... | 241 |
| The budget for 1782..... | 241 |
| The development of a system of appropriations..... | 242 |
| The budget for 1783..... | 243 |
| Reasons for the development of a unified budget... | 245 |
| (C) The Budgetary Methods of the Later Years of the Confederation..... | 247 |
| The budget for 1784..... | 249 |
| Budgetary legislation from 1785 to 1788..... | 251 |
| <i>Chapter IV. Control of the Finances</i> | 254 |
| Peculiar position of the Continental Congress..... | 255 |
| The constitution of the department of finance..... | 256 |
| Accounting and financial reports..... | 257 |
| Checks on collection and issue..... | 258 |
| Investigation by congressional committees..... | 259 |
| System of audit..... | 259 |
| CONCLUSION... .. | 262 |
| GENERAL BIBLIOGRAPHY..... | 266 |

THE FINANCES OF THE UNITED STATES FROM
1775 to 1789, WITH ESPECIAL REFERENCE
TO THE BUDGET.

BY CHARLES J. BULLOCK, A. B.

Fellow in Economics.

INTRODUCTION.

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

Bancroft, *History of the United States*, IV. 190-192; V. 199-208; Cooley, *Principles of Constitutional Law*, 9 et seq.; Cohn, *System der Finanzwissenschaft*, sec. 131; Fiske, *Critical Period of American History*, 90-105; Hock, *Die Finanzen und die Finanzgeschichte der Vereinigten Staaten von Amerika*, 2-5; Jellinek, *Die Lehre von den Staatenverbindungen*, 184-187; Landon, *Constitutional History of the United States*, 40-82; McMaster, *History of the People of the United States*, I. 130-140; Poore, *Federal and State Constitutions of the United States*, Part I. Roscher, *System der Finanzwissenschaft*, section 163; Schouler, *History of the United States*, I. 12-23; Small, *The Beginnings of American Nationality*; Wagner, *Finanzwissenschaft*, I. sec. 39.

From the first years of the Revolution to the present time the finances of the United States have had a continuous development. In financial, as in political and constitutional history, the year 1789 marks no sharp break with the institutions of the earlier period; and much of the financial legislation of the First Congress has a close connection with the practice of the old Confederation, a fact which is of especial importance in the case of our budget system.

We must, therefore, go back to the year 1775, and to the Continental Congress, which met at Philadelphia on the tenth

of May, and proceeded to take into its hands the conduct of the struggle against Great Britain. During the next fourteen years a general Congress was the only organ of common action that existed in America; and it is to the character and influence of this body that we must look for the key to the study of the finances during this period.

It is sufficient for our purpose to note that the Congress of 1775 was essentially a revolutionary assembly, unlimited by legal restraints, but yet strictly dependent upon the support which it should receive from the people of the colonies. Instead of setting to work to form a centralized national government, as it might conceivably have attempted to do, the Congress proceeded to make recommendations to the various colonial assemblies, looking to them for the exercise of executive powers. The results were, that thirteen State governments were established, that the States soon asserted their own claims of sovereignty, and that the authority of Congress declined in a corresponding degree. Thus arose that fatal weakness of the general government which is the central fact in the financial, as in the political, history of these fourteen years.

From 1775 to 1781 the Continental Congress, with an authority based solely on the tacit acquiescence of the States, exercised such powers as they would allow it to possess. In this latter year Articles of Confederation were at last accepted by all of the States, and the position of the general government was formally recognized and defined. The exercise of all powers granted to the government was placed in the hands of a Congress, which, however, in matters of finance was made no more powerful than its predecessor. A brief mention of a few of the provisions of the Articles of Confederation will make apparent the weakness of the Congress in these most important matters.¹ Article VIII. provided that, "All charges of war, and all other expenses that shall be incurred for the common defence, or general welfare, and allowed by the

¹ See Poore's Federal and State Constitutions, Part I.

United States, in Congress assembled, shall be defrayed out of a common treasury, which shall be supplied by the several States, in proportion to the value of all land within each State granted to, or surveyed for, any person, as such land and the buildings and improvements thereon shall be estimated, according to such mode as the United States, in Congress assembled, shall, from time to time, direct and appoint. *The taxes for paying that proportion shall be laid and levied by the authority and direction of the legislatures of the several States, within the time agreed upon by the United States, in Congress assembled.*"

In Article IX., Congress was empowered, "to ascertain the necessary sums of money to be raised for the service of the United States, and to appropriate and apply the same for defraying the public expenses; to borrow money or emit bills on the credit of the United States. . . ." Finally, Article XII. declared that, "All bills of credit emitted, moneys borrowed, and debts contracted by, or under the authority of Congress, before the assembling of the United States, in pursuance of the present Confederation, shall be deemed and considered as a charge against the United States, for payment and satisfaction whereof the said United States and the public faith are hereby solemnly pledged."

Now Congress had, from the first years of the war, issued bills of credit and borrowed money; so that in these directions the Articles of Confederation gave it no new authority. But the all important power to levy taxes directly was left in the hands of the States. Congress could apportion among them the amounts necessary to be raised, but could not take the first step toward collecting the requisitions. Thus the general government possessed no real power of taxation; and was unable to place the finances of the Confederation upon a permanently sound basis, a work which was not accomplished until the present Constitution went into effect. From this weakness of Congress came a multitude of financial disorders, which more than once during the Revolution almost proved fatal to the success of the American cause, and which in the

years of peace served to throw upon the financial management of the old government a partially unmerited discredit.

But the fundamental weakness of the finances of the United States during this period was one that has been common to all such confederations. These associations have as their distinctive feature, and as their only organ of common action, a congress in which all the members of the union have an equal voice. But the central government can have no power of coercing either individuals, or the various states of the confederation; and can have, therefore, no substantial powers in matters of finance.¹ Thus all hope of financial unity and strength depends upon the willingness of the various members to contribute for the expenses of the union. But such a disposition seldom exists. Ordinarily, to use the words of Roscher,² "The jealousy existing between the sovereign members of the confederation, especially if they are of unequal strength, forbids not only all broadening of the purposes of the union except by unanimous consent, but also makes all permanent and considerable sacrifice. . . intolerable." This was certainly the case with the early American Union.

We have, then, as the subject of our study the finances of thirteen colonies that are passing through a stage of development intermediate between an earlier state of relative isolation and a later condition of completed federal union. The factors with which we have to deal are the weakness of the general government and the jealous, independent spirit of the individual units. From these there resulted in finance, as in everything else, limited concessions to the central authority and a "jealous reckoning of advantages and sacrifices" among the several members of the Confederation.³ Since the adoption of our present Constitution the worst features of this calculating spirit have in some measure passed away; but traces

¹See Jellinek, *Die Lehre von den Staatenverbindungen*, 184-187; also Wagner, *Finanzwissenschaft*, I, section 33.

²*System der Finanzwissenschaft*, section 163.

³See Cohn, *System der Finanzwissenschaft*, section 131.

of it linger even yet in the political life of the present day, as marks of a still imperfectly realized national unity.

Thus the old Confederation merely repeated the experience of similar unions. While the following chapters aim to present a rounded view of the finances of the United States during the years previous to 1789, they may also serve to illustrate the general features of the financial character of confederations.

PART I.

REVENUES AND EXPENDITURES.

CHAPTER I.

REVENUES OF THE GOVERNMENT.

(A) *Continental Paper Money.*

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

American Almanac, 1830, 182, 183; *American State Papers*, Finance, I. and V.; Bolles, *Financial History of the United States*, I.; Breck, *Historical Sketch of the Continental Paper Money*; Bronson, *Historical Sketch of Connecticut Currency, Continental Money, and the Finances of the Revolution*; Elliot, *The Funding System*; Franklin, *Works*, II. and VIII.; Gallatin, *Sketch of Finances*, Writings, III. 121-123; Gouge, *Short History of Paper Money and Banking*; Hildreth, *History of the United States*, III.; Hock, *Die Finanzen und die Finanzgeschichte der Vereinigten Staaten von Amerika; Jahrbücher für Nationalökonomie und Statistik*, 1863, 392-396; Jefferson, *Works*, IX.; *Journals of Congress*, 1775-1788; Knox, *United States Notes*; Phillips, *American Paper Currency*; Ramsay, *History of the United States*, II.; Ross, *Sinking Funds*; Schuckers, *Finances and Paper Money of the Revolutionary War*; Sumner, *History of American Currency, The Financier and the Finances of the Revolution*; Walker, *Money*; Webster, *Political Essays*.

In any study of the national finances during the period previous to 1789, we are first concerned with the efforts of the general government to provide itself with the necessary financial resources. An account of the expedients resorted to for

that purpose must form the first part of any discussion of the financial arrangements of that time.

The emission of bills of credit was the first means of raising money to which the Continental Congress turned. The paper money thus issued was productive of such far reaching injury, and the policy of Congress in issuing it has been so harshly judged, that it may be well to refer in some detail to the history of these bills of credit.

It must not be overlooked that, when Congress met in May, 1775, the nature of the struggle which was beginning was appreciated by very few people in the colonies. Forcible resistance to Great Britain was at first attempted, not from a desire for independence, but in order to compel Parliament to change its policy toward America. Congress could not foresee the necessity of establishing permanent revenues for a national government, and the single financial problem that presented itself was that of providing a temporary income that should continue only until peace should be restored on the terms desired by the colonies. As a result, all of the early measures of Congress were of a temporary character; and we may here find a partial explanation of the fact that Congress did not try to seize upon the full powers necessary to a strong national government.

But the need of funds was pressing, even if it appeared at the first to be only temporary; and it was necessary to find some means of raising a sum of money which for the times and circumstances must have seemed very large. As a temporary government, Congress had no credit, and would have found difficulty in securing loans for the purpose of aiding a rebellion against the authority of Great Britain. For equally strong reasons, as we shall see, it was impracticable to attempt to tax the colonies which had been led into hostilities with the mother country not more on account of "taxation without representation" than through opposition to any taxation at all. The people of the colonies preferred paper money to taxes.¹

¹ Large quantities of paper money were issued in the colonies in the eighteenth century. The results of this had often been disastrous, but the colonists had not yet fully learned

They believed in the issue of notes that should circulate in all the colonies, and for the payment of which the colonies should be responsible. In order to exist, Congress had to be guided by the desires of the people; and, under such circumstances, determined to issue bills of credit, at the same time making all possible provision for the redemption of the notes. All things considered, it is not easy to see what other course could have been taken.

Undoubtedly, some of the members of Congress did hold unsound views on the subject of paper money. Pelatiah Webster has left us an account of a speech made by one delegate, who objected to burdening his constituents with taxes, when it was possible to send to the printer and get a wagon load of money, one quire of which would pay for the whole.¹ But there is nothing in the measures adopted by Congress that will justify the belief that the words of this speaker represented the opinions of a majority of the members of that body. On the contrary, the safeguards which Congress sought to throw around the emission of bills of credit, show conclusively that the dangers attending the use of paper money were fully appreciated.

The first issues were authorized in 1775.² Unquestionably, this was looked upon as a temporary measure; and it was not expected that a much larger issue would be needed.³ At the same time, Congress did not suppose that the notes would circulate at par unless means were provided for their redemption. Accordingly the bills were apportioned among the colonies on the basis of population, and Congress recommended that each colony should make provision for redeeming its quota by "laying and levying taxes. . . . toward sinking the Continental bills."⁴ If the notes had been so redeemed, this

the evils of an irredeemable paper currency. References to some of these early experiments may be found on p. 225, and on p. 231. See also Phillips, *Historical Account of Paper Currency*, I.; Sumner, *American Currency*; Walker, *Money*, chap. XV.

¹ *Political Essays*, 7, note d. See also Bolles, I, 38.

² *Journal of Congress*, June 22, July 25, November 23, 1775.

³ Cf. Bolles, I, 24-41. Also Sparks's *Franklin*, II, 421; VIII, p. 328, 506-507. Ramsay, II, 307-309.

⁴ *Journal of Congress*, July 29, December 26, 1775. Also cf. Ross, 21.

measure would have amounted practically to a tax based upon population. Of course, such an assessment was unfair; but, as an accurate estimate of the wealth of the colonies would have been impossible at that time, this arrangement was as satisfactory as any that could have been devised. In this way the sum of \$6,000,000 was raised before the end of 1775, and these earliest issues at first circulated at par.¹ In some instances metallic money was turned into the treasury by patriotic individuals, in exchange for the bills of credit.²

But the need for money increased.³ No other source of revenue had been found; and, in February, 1776,⁴ \$4,000,000 of the bills was emitted. Congress had taken occasion⁵ again to urge upon the colonies the necessity of providing ways and means for sinking their respective quotas of the bills. But the people were not used to such heavy taxation as would have been necessary for this purpose; and, further, had come to look to the general government to make all provision for the conduct of the war. Thus further emissions of paper were necessary; and, before the end of the year, issues amounting altogether to \$19,000,000 had been authorized,⁶ while the bills had depreciated to less than seventy per cent. of their face value.⁷

After independence was declared,⁸ it became obvious that money must be raised no longer for a temporary purpose, but for the support of a permanent government. Congress saw that it would be impossible to rely solely on the issue of paper money, and made efforts to find other sources of revenue. It was still thought that to resort to taxation would be prema-

¹ Ramsay, II. 308; Sparks's Franklin, II. 421; Breck, Part I. 249; Gouge, 11; Sumner, *Financier*, I. 47-48. holds a different view.

² Breck, Part I. 249; Part II. 58. *Journal of Congress*, May 27, 1776.

³ Sparks's Franklin, II. 421, 422; Bolles, I. 42-44; Ramsay, II. 308.

⁴ February 17.

⁵ December 26, 1775.

⁶ Dates of issues were May 9, July 22, November 2, December 23.

⁷ See tables on p. 133.

⁸ Cf. Ramsay II. 309.

ture in the existing state of public sentiment; and, accordingly, in October,¹ 1776, Congress resolved to attempt to secure a loan of \$5,000,000; while shortly afterward a lottery was established.² Early³ in 1777 the States were urged to levy taxes for the support of the general government; but, as was to be expected, no attention was paid to such a general recommendation as this. These efforts failing to bring in the amount of money that was absolutely necessary, other emissions of bills of credit were ordered.⁴ These issues made the total volume of paper emitted during 1777 amount to 13,000,000; and, by the end of the year, the notes had depreciated until they were worth only one-third of their face value.

During 1777 some aid was received from the subsidies furnished by France,⁵ and a small amount of money was secured through the first French loan.⁶ From this last source a larger amount was realized during the following year. In November,⁷ 1777, Congress made the first regular requisition on the States; and asked that \$5,000,000 be raised by taxes during the ensuing year. But all these resources yielded only a small part of the funds required for 1778, and further emissions of paper were necessary during that year.⁸ Congress understood very well the effect of these issues, but the failure of its attempts to secure other sources of revenue made such a course unavoidable. During 1778 fourteen emissions⁹ amounting to \$63,500,000 were authorized, the amount of the issues naturally increasing as the value of the money declined. The transactions of the treasury during this time were almost exclusively carried on in the paper currency. From the appendix to the

¹ October 3.

² November 1.

³ January 14.

⁴ Dates of emissions, February 26, May 20, August 15, November 7, December 3.

⁵ See p. 166.

⁶ See p. 146.

⁷ November 22.

⁸ Cf. Ramsay, II, 303, 310.

⁹ Dates, January 8, 22; February 16; March 5; April 4, 11, 18; May 22; June 20, 30; September 5, 25; November 4; December 14.

Journal of Congress for that year, we learn that the expenditures were as follows:

| | |
|---------------------------|---------------|
| Currency..... | 62,154,842.63 |
| Specie..... | 78,666.60 |
| Livres ¹ | 28,525.00 |

On this point Mr. Breck well says,² "So small an expenditure in metallic currency shows the powerful agency of paper in the belligerent operations at that critical period; performing, as it did, in spite of counterfeits and depreciation, the office of hard money."

This depreciation of the bills of credit had taken place in spite of the most strenuous efforts to keep the money circulating at par. At first the people had received the currency willingly,³ and during the last months of 1776 the depreciation was only very slight and gradual. The campaigns of 1776 and 1777 were not seriously affected by the decline in the value of the money.⁴ The first advances in prices,⁵ which began early in 1776, were probably due to the state of the market for goods included in the non-importation agreement, or, perhaps, in some cases, to the action of selfish or unpatriotic individuals. But, as the issues increased beyond the requirements of trade, an inevitable increase of prices began. This was looked upon by many as "immoral and unpatriotic, and deserving swift punishment."⁶ After seeking to punish by fine and imprisonment persons who should advance the price of commodities, the different States commenced to hold "price conventions," and to attempt to fix the prices of labor and of commodities.⁷ The first of these conventions was held at Providence in December, 1776. Congress recommended this plan to the other States, which, for the next five years, continued to attempt to control prices by law.

¹ The livre was worth a little more than eighteen cents.

² Part II. 61.

³ See Ramsay, II. 314.

⁴ Ramsay, II. 309.

⁵ See Sumner, *Financier and Finances*, I. 48 et seq.; Bolles, I. 117-130; Phillips, II. 219-236.

⁶ See Bolles, I. 158-159.

⁷ See Sumner, I. 55 et seq.; Bolles, I. 158-167.

But such attempts proved futile enough. Only a few patriotic people regarded these laws, while others refused to part with their commodities except at their own prices. As Ramsay says, "These laws in the first instance made an artificial scarcity, and, had they not been repealed, would soon have made a real one; for men never exert themselves unless they have the fruit of their exertions secured to them, and at their own disposal."

Further measures were adopted by Congress to check the depreciation. In December,¹ 1776, Washington was empowered to seize whatever supplies should be required for his army; to compel the owners to sell them at a reasonable price; and to punish those who should refuse to receive Continental money in payment for the supplies seized. A month later, further action was taken. As early as 1775 the different States had, on the recommendation of Congress, begun to pass laws making the Continental money legal tender in payment of debts. But there was no uniformity in these laws; and in January,² 1777, Congress was led to recommend the legislatures of the States to make the bills of credit full legal tender in discharge of all debts, and a refusal to accept the currency an extinguishment of any debt.

These legal tender laws enabled the Continental notes to work the extreme degree of hardship and injury that it is possible for such a depreciated currency to produce. When the laws were first adopted little injury was done, as the paper circulated, for a time, on a par with specie. But, as the depreciation increased, incalculable harm was caused both to industry and to public morals.³ At the opening of 1780 the evils had reached a climax. The paper money was almost worthless, all specie had long since been withdrawn from circulation, there was no longer any effective medium of exchange, and the people of the States were driven to barter.⁴

¹ December 27.

² January 14.

³ Ramsay has left us perhaps the most graphic account of the demoralization thus produced. See Ramsay, II, 316-318. See also Sumner, *Financier*, I, 80-81.

⁴ See Bolles, I, 133, for evidence on this point.

In March¹ of this year Congress finally advised the States to amend the legal tender laws, and this advice was soon followed. The repeal of these laws ended the worst of the abuses that had arisen from the emission of the Continental currency, but it was a long time before the injury that was done to public morals was entirely effaced.

But these were not the only difficulties with which Congress had to contend in its experiments with the bills of credit. Counterfeiting was largely carried on,² especially by the English,³ who sought in this way to injure the cause of the Americans. Besides this, large amounts of paper money had been issued by the States, and thus the point of inflation was the more quickly reached. In 1777⁴ Congress urged the States to cease to issue bills, and to withdraw those already issued; and this recommendation seems to have been very generally followed.⁵ The entire amount of these issues has been placed at \$209,000,000, an estimate which Mr. Knox⁶ considers too high.⁷ But whatever the effect of these State issues, it will be noticed that the withdrawal of these notes was commenced before the emission of the flood of Continental bills that were sent out in 1778 and 1779.

At the opening of the year 1779, in spite of the rapid depreciation of the paper money, the States had taken no effectual measures to redeem the notes already in circulation. At that time one dollar in paper was worth only twelve cents, and Congress repeatedly urged that the States should make provision for drawing in their quotas of the bills.⁸ By this time Congress had begun to make regular requisitions for money; but the response of the States was so tardy and so inadequate, that it was necessary to emit still more of the paper. The

¹ March 20.

² Sumner, *Financier*, I. 68-69.

³ Phillips, II. 70-71.

⁴ February 15, November 22.

⁵ See Bolles, I. 148; Hildreth, U. S., III. 446.

⁶ Knox, *United States Notes*, 10.

⁷ Cf. Jefferson's Works, IX. 260; Schuckers, *Finances and Paper Money of the Revolutionary War*, 127.

⁸ See *Journal of Congress*, January 2, January 13, 1779.

first four months of the year¹ saw the issue of \$65,000,000 more of the currency. This depreciated the bills beyond hope of recovery, and by July they were worth only five cents on the dollar. But all other resources were yielding only a small part of the funds needed to carry on the war, and still other issues were to follow. By September \$35,000,000 more had been issued; and the evil had become so great that Congress was led to the decision that an absolute limit to the emissions ought to be fixed, and that, in any case, the amount of bills in circulation should not exceed \$200,000,000. On September 13 an address was sent out to the States, showing that \$159,940,000 of the notes was then in circulation;² and stating that up to that date taxes had brought into the treasury only \$3,027,000; while \$36,761,000 had been received from domestic loans, and \$4,000,000 from foreign.

By December the amount of emissions for the year had been raised to \$140,052,000, and the limit of \$200,000,000 had been reached.³ At this time one dollar of the currency was worth less than three cents, and soon after the value so declined that one dollar in specie exchanged for eighty dollars of the paper money. Thus Congress had exhausted the sources from which it had hitherto derived the greater portion of its funds for defraying the expenses of the war.

The amount of notes authorized each year had been as follows:⁴

| | |
|-----------|---------------|
| 1775..... | \$6,000,000 |
| 1776..... | 19,000,000 |
| 1777..... | 13,000,000 |
| 1778..... | 63,500,000 |
| 1779..... | 140,000,000 |
| | \$241,500,000 |

¹ Dates of issue, January 14; February 3, 12; April 2.

² From time to time notes had been withdrawn from circulation: see p. 81. Also it is possible that all the bills previously authorized had not been issued. The whole amount of emissions voted up to this time was \$200,000,000, and it is only on some such basis as this that the statement of Congress can be explained.

³ Dates of issue, May 5, June 4, July 17, September 17, October 14, November 17, November 29.

⁴ Cf. State Papers, Finance, V. 764.

Many of these had been withdrawn and exchanged, so that probably not more than \$200,000,000 was in circulation at any one time.

But this was not the whole burden which the people of the States had to bear in the form of a depreciated currency. As we have seen, paper money was issued by the individual States. In addition to this, many of the loan office certificates were, contrary to the expectation of Congress, placed in circulation.¹ It is safe to estimate that, at some periods during the war, there was in circulation at least \$300,000,000 of paper money. It will be apparent how excessive this amount was, when we remember that, at the time, there were not more than three million people in the States; while trade and commerce on any large scale can hardly be said to have existed.

The specie value of this enormous amount of paper can not be determined with accuracy. Hildreth estimated it at \$70,000,000,² a figure which all writers have held to be too large. Mr. Bronson has placed it at \$53,000,000,³ taking the Philadelphia rate of depreciation as a basis of computation. This amount seems to be too large, and Mr. Bronson presents none of his data. Jefferson assigned to the currency a specie value of \$36,367,000.⁴ Bayley⁵ accepted this as "approximate to the truth;" while Prof. Sumner⁶ says that it has no value. The general opinion has been that all these statements overvalue the paper money. In the following paragraphs an attempt is made to estimate in a conservative manner the value of the Continental currency, and to avoid the danger of placing it at too high a figure. Errors of this sort have impaired the results of all attempts to compute the cost of the Revolution.

Since the government's expenditures in paper money were very unequally distributed in the various parts of the country,

¹ Bolles, I. 260, 361.

² History of the United States, III. 446.

³ Historical Sketch of Connecticut Currency, 150.

⁴ Works, IX. 259.

⁵ History of the National Loans, 325.

⁶ Financier and Finances of the Revolution, I. 98.

and the circulation of the currency was comparatively slow, there was no general uniformity in the depreciation. The following table has been constructed from the rates of depreciation adopted by law in the various States.¹ The States are grouped according to the extent of the depreciation in each. Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New York form the first group; Pennsylvania, Delaware, New Jersey, Maryland, and Virginia form the second; while the Carolinas constitute the third. In each group the lowest and highest rates of depreciation in any State are given. For purposes of comparison, there has been placed in a fourth column the scale of depreciation adopted by Congress,² which did not show the real extent of the depreciation. In the fifth column are to be found some rates taken from the books of a Philadelphia merchant.³ In the sixth are shown the figures used by Jefferson in his estimate;⁴ and in the last column are given the highest rates of depreciation found in any of the States. These highest rates are used in forming this estimate of the value of the money, since the object is to avoid an over-statement. Such tables of depreciation might easily conceal part of the truth, and not allow for the full extent of the depreciation; while they would not be likely to overestimate it. By selecting the highest rates in any of the States the chance of error at this point is reduced to a minimum. Mr. Bronson's method of taking the Philadelphia rate as the basis of computation does not differ greatly from the procedure here followed, since the depreciation was naturally greatest at the seat of the federal treasury. The method here adopted has another advantage. It is possible that even the highest rate found in any of these State tables may not always give the full amount of the depreciation. But any error here may be counterbalanced by another consideration. The expenditures of the government were made in var-

¹ These tables may be found in State Papers, Finance, V. 772 et seq. See also Phillips, II, 212.

² June 28, 1780. See State Papers, Finance, V. 765-771.

³ Phillips, II, 217; Gouge, 11.

⁴ Jefferson's Works, IX, 259.

ious States, and all of them could not have been affected equally by the depreciation. In such cases there will occur in this estimate an error of undervaluation, and this fact will render it improbable that the computation will result in an over-statement of the value of the money.

| | Mass., Conn. and New York. | Penn., N. J., Del., Md., and Va. | N. Carolina and S. Carolina. | Scale adopted by Cong- ress. | Philadel- phia mer- chant. | Jeffer- son. | Highest rate. |
|-----------------|----------------------------------|--|------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|-----------------|------------------|
| Jan., 1777..... | \$1 05 ¹ | \$1 20-\$1 50 | ..... | ..... | \$1 25 | ..... | \$1 50 |
| April..... | 1 12 | 2 50- 3 10 | \$1 08-\$1 50 | ..... | 2 00 | ..... | 3 10 |
| July..... | 1 25 | 2 25- 3 00 | 1 59- 2 00 | ..... | 3 00 | ..... | 3 00 |
| October..... | 1 09-\$2 75 | 3 00 ² | 1 85- 2 50 | 91 pr. ct. | 3 00 | ..... | 3 00 |
| Jan., 1778.... | \$1 46-\$3 25 | \$4 00 | \$2 21-\$3 50 | 63 pr. ct. | \$4 00 | \$4 00 | \$4 00 |
| April..... | 2 03- 4 00 | 5 00-\$6 00 | 3 17- 4 00 | 49 pr. ct. | 6 00 | 6 00 | 6 00 |
| July..... | 3 03- 4 25 | 4 00- 5 00 | 3 54- 4 00 | 33 pr. ct. | 4 00 | 4 50 | 5 00 |
| October..... | 4 00- 5 00 | 5 00 | 4 05- 4 75 | 21 pr. ct. | 5 00 | ..... | 5 00 |
| Jan., 1779.... | \$7 42-\$7 96 | \$8 00 | \$6 00-\$7 61 | 13 pr. ct. | \$7 00-\$9 00 | \$8 09 | \$8 00 |
| April..... | 11 04-11 56 | 16 00-\$17 00 | 9 66-10 00 | 9 pr. ct. | 12 00-\$22 00 | 17 00 | 17 00 |
| July..... | 14 77-15 48 | 19 00-21 00 | 14 57-15 00 | 6 pr. ct. | 18 00-20 00 | 20 00 | 20 00 |
| October..... | 20 30-21 51 | 28 00-20 00 | 20 40-25 00 | 4 pr. ct. | 30 00 | 30 00 | 30 00 |
| November.... | 23 08-24 33 | 36 00-38 50 | 25 96-27 00 | 4 pr. ct. | 32 00-45 00 | 38 50 | 38 50 |
| December.... | 25 93-27 41 | 40 00-41 50 | 30 00-32 33 | 3.7 pr. ct. | 38 00-45 00 | ..... | 41 00 |
| Jan., 1780.... | \$29 34-\$31 15 | \$40 00-\$42 00 | \$32 00-\$37 75 | 3 3 pr. ct. | \$40 00-\$45 00 | ..... | 42 00 |
| March..... | 37 36-40 00 | 60 00-61 50 | 40 00-46 59 | 2.6 pr. ct. | 60 00-65 00 | ..... | 61 50 |

It will be noticed that these tables recognize no depreciation before January, 1777. But it had begun by the middle of 1776; perhaps, even a little earlier. Prof. Sumner says³ that the room for the circulation of Continental money was exceed-

¹ This means that \$1.00 in specie was worth \$1.05 in currency. In the fourth column is given the percentage which the value of currency bore to the value of specie. Of the States in this first group, Massachusetts was the only one that recognized the depreciation until October, 1777.

² For this month the same rates of depreciation are given in all the States in this group

³ Financier, I. 47-48.

ingly small, and that depreciation must have begun almost immediately. But he gives no clear case of an advance of prices due to depreciation before about the middle of 1776. On the other hand, the statements¹ of Gerry, Franklin, Paine, Jefferson, and Ramsay are all to the effect that the earlier issues circulated at par; and in this view later writers have generally concurred. The amount of the depreciation recognized in January, 1777, shows that the decline in the value of the money must have begun several months before that date, since all writers agree that the depreciation was at first gradual. Probably it is safest to place the beginning of the general rise of prices at about the middle of 1776, and this is the method followed in this estimate.

In estimating the specie value of the Continental issues use has been made of the table of emissions prepared by Joseph Nourse in 1828.² By comparison with the Journals of Congress this table will be found to be entirely correct, with the possible exception of one issue amounting to \$500,000. This issue was ordered by Congress November 2, 1776, but it is possible that the notes were never placed in circulation.³ For this reason Mr. Nourse has excluded it.⁴ Applying to this table of emissions the highest rate of depreciation found in any of the States, a safe estimate may be obtained. Allowance has been made for the necessary delay in the issue of the notes by assigning to each emission the highest rate of depreciation found in any of the States two months after the resolve of Congress authorizing the issue.⁵ The estimate is as follows:

¹ See references on p. 125. Also Gerry's statement in *Annals of Congress*, II, p. 1176. First Congress.

² *State Papers, Finance*. V. 764.

³ See Phillips, II, 57; Sumner, *Financier*, I, 98.

⁴ Various other statements have been made regarding the amount of the Continental issues. Some have placed the amount as high as \$357,000,000, but such estimates include the re-issue of bills paid into the treasury after 1780. See Gouge, 10; Elliot, 11; Sumner, *Financier*, I, 88.

⁵ This method will not lead to an over-estimate of the value of the notes. But, in any case, up to January, 1779, the depreciation was quite gradual, as the table shows. Therefore, up to the time when the value of the money had become very small, one might select any period of from one to three months without materially affecting the result.

| DATE OF ISSUE. | Amount. | Depreciation. | Specie Value. | Total Specie Value. |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------|---------------|---------------|---------------------|
| 1775. | \$6,000,000 | At par. | \$6,000,000 | \$6,000,000 |
| 1776. | | | | |
| February..... | 4,000,000 | At par. | 4,000,000 | ..... |
| May..... | 5,000,000 | 1.25 | 4,000,000 | ..... |
| July and August..... | 5,000,000 | 1.25 | 4,000,000 | ..... |
| November and December..... | 5,000,000 | 1.50 | 3,330,000 | 15,230,000 |
| 1777. | | | | |
| February..... | 5,000,000 | 3.10 | 1,600,000 | ..... |
| May..... | 5,600,000 | 3.00 | 1,660,000 | ..... |
| August..... | 1,000,000 | 3.00 | 320,000 | ..... |
| November..... | 1,000,000 | 4.00 | 250,000 | ..... |
| December..... | 1,000,000 | 5.00 | 200,000 | 4,040,000 |
| 1778. | | | | |
| January..... | 3,000,000 | 5.00 | 600,000 | ..... |
| February..... | 2,600,000 | 6.00 | 320,000 | ..... |
| March..... | 2,000,000 | 5.00 | 400,000 | ..... |
| April..... | 6,500,000 | 5.00 | 1,300,000 | ..... |
| May..... | 5,000,000 | 5.00 | 1,000,000 | ..... |
| June..... | 5,000,000 | 5.00 | 1,000,000 | ..... |
| July..... | 5,000,000 | 5.00 | 1,000,000 | ..... |
| September..... | 15,000,000 | 6.00 | 2,500,000 | ..... |
| November..... | 10,000,000 | 8.00 | 1,250,000 | ..... |
| December..... | 10,000,000 | 10.00 | 1,000,000 | 10,380,000 |
| 1779. | | | | |
| February..... | 10,000,000 | 17.00 | 580,000 | ..... |
| April..... | 5,000,000 | 20.00 | 250,000 | ..... |
| May..... | 10,000,000 | 20.00 | 500,000 | ..... |
| { January and May..... | 50,000,000 ¹ | ..... | ..... | ..... |
| { Say that new issues were..... | 40,000,000 | 20.00 | 2,000,000 | ..... |
| June..... | 10,000,000 | 24.00 | 410,000 | ..... |
| July..... | 15,000,000 | 24.00 | 620,000 | ..... |
| September..... | 15,000,000 | 38.00 | 390,000 | ..... |
| October..... | 5,000,000 | 41.00 | 120,000 | ..... |
| November..... | 20,050,000 | 50.00 | 400,000 | 5,270,000 |
| | \$241,500,000 | | | \$41,020,000 |

¹ A part of this issue was for the purpose of exchanging earlier emissions of May 20, 1777, and April 11, 1778. See Journal of Congress, May 7, 1779. These two issues amounted to \$10,000,000, and accordingly we have placed the new issue at \$40,000,000.

The foregoing table allows for \$10,000,000 of exchanges of new bills for old. The amount of other withdrawals can not be ascertained with any certainty. In the address of September 13, 1779, Congress stated that \$159,948,000 of the bills was then emitted and in circulation. Now the total amount of the issues authorized previous to that date was \$201,500,000; and, if this statement of Congress is to be trusted, it would seem that \$41,500,000 of the earlier issues had been withdrawn or never placed in circulation. The Journal of Congress enables us to account for only \$10,000,000 of withdrawals. If we follow the statement of September, 1779, we must deduct \$31,500,000 more from the total of the emissions. These withdrawals, or failures to issue the full amount of notes authorized, could not have occurred before 1779 because the statistics of the advances made at the treasury from 1775 to the end of 1778 show that all of the \$101,000,000 of notes authorized during that time must have been in use.¹ If we assign to the \$31,500,000 withdrawn or never issued the depreciation of ten to one which prevailed at the time that the first issues of 1779 were authorized, we shall have to subtract \$3,150,000 from the estimate of the specie value of the bills of credit actually issued. Thus the estimate of the total income from the Continental paper money will be \$37,870,000, if we accept as correct the statement of Congress regarding the amount of bills in circulation in September, 1779. This is a question which we have no means of determining, but it would seem to be safe to place the specie value of the money issued at not less than \$37,800,000; while, if the statement of Congress is rejected, the estimate would be \$41,000,000. In other parts of this work it is thought best to use the smaller estimate, which, it would seem, does not overstate the income derived by Congress from this source.

At the opening of 1780, when a dollar of the paper money was worth less than two cents, Congress was obliged to admit the fact of depreciation. Up to this time, that body had repeatedly pledged the public faith to redeem in full every dol-

¹ See Elliot, 10 and 11, for Hamilton's statement of the advances at the treasury.

lar of the paper; but in March¹ a resolution was passed which provided for the redemption of the bills of credit at one-fortieth of their face value. In order to draw in the old bills a tax of \$15,000,000 a month for thirteen months, payable in the old emissions, was levied upon the States. In payment of this tax, silver and gold were made receivable at a ratio of one dollar in specie to forty in currency. As soon as paid in, the old money was to be destroyed, and replaced by bills of a new emission. These new bills were to be issued in an amount not exceeding one-twentieth of the face value of the old issues. Six-tenths of these new emissions were to go to the States, and the rest were to be at the disposal of the United States. The new bills were to be redeemable in specie within five years, to bear interest at five per cent, and to be receivable for taxes at the same rate as specie.

Obviously this was an act of practical repudiation. The bills were first declared to be worth only one-fortieth of their nominal value; and then were made receivable only in payment of an extraordinary tax, imposed for the sole purpose of withdrawing them from circulation. It may be true that this action was inevitable, and that Congress had good reason to despair of its ability ever to redeem the notes at their face value. It certainly is a fact that it was beyond any human power to repair the losses suffered by those persons through whose hands the money had at first passed; and that the attempt to redeem the notes in full would have resulted rather in benefiting speculators than in compensating the original losers. But these extenuating circumstances do not alter the fact of repudiation. The real purposes of the resolution were, to reduce the volume of currency to a reasonable amount, to provide the States with money which should enable them to meet the requisitions of Congress, and to supply the general government with additional funds. These ends were not fully realized from the measure on account of the partial non-compliance of the States with the requirements of the resolution ordering the tax. The bills of the "new tenor" soon depreci-

¹ March 18, 1780.

ated, but they continued to circulate until after 1790, when they were received in subscription to the stocks created in order to fund the national debt. From the report of May 11, 1790, it appears¹ that about \$4,000,000 of these new bills was actually issued. Of these the government received \$1,592,000 as its proportion, of four-tenths.²

After this time the old notes disappeared from circulation and specie quickly re-appeared.³ Under the requisition of March, 1780, \$119,400,000 of the notes was finally paid in and destroyed. In 1791 it was estimated that \$78,000,000 was still outstanding. Under the funding act of August 4, 1790, \$6,000,000 of this amount was funded at the rate of one cent on the dollar.⁴ The rest seems to have remained in the hands of people who held it after the time fixed by the funding act, hoping that ultimately the notes would be redeemed in full.

Such is the history of the paper money of the Revolution. The loss inflicted upon the people of the United States by its depreciation can never be fully estimated. Of course the depreciation amounted to nothing less than a tax upon those who were unable to protect themselves from such a loss; and, manifestly, this was a tax of the most unjust and objectionable sort.⁵ But whatever the loss, and whatever the injustice caused in this way, the fact remains that the issue of the paper money made possible the successful termination of the struggle undertaken against Great Britain. By this means Congress was enabled to carry on the war from 1775 to 1780, a period during which all other sources of revenue would have furnished only a small part of the needed resources.⁶ "How else could the war have been carried on?"

Those writers who condemn *in toto* the issue of bills of credit,

¹ State Papers, Finance, I. 54.

² On the character and effects of this act of March, 1780, see Ramsay, II. 312; Bolles. I., 135.

³ See Sumner, I. 98-100.

⁴ Elliot, Funding System, 12.

⁵ See Sumner's Hamilton, 151.

⁶ Further light is thrown on this subject in the discussion of loans and taxation in the following chapters.

have generally fallen into the error of blaming Congress for not doing something that lay wholly beyond its powers. Thus Mr. Bronson, in asserting that taxation should have been instituted from the start, and that independence was won, not by paper money, but rather in spite of it, says, "A firmer will, with a greater readiness to make sacrifices, would have opened a way." But the "greater readiness to make sacrifices" did not exist, and Mr. Bronson's criticism falls to the ground. Had "a firmer will" been shown, had Congress attempted to levy taxes in 1775, the way would have been effectually closed, and not opened. Such a course would have occasioned a popular outcry that would have destroyed the authority of Congress, and rendered impossible the continuance of the war.¹

But the experience of the country with the Continental bills of credit was sufficiently bitter to serve as an effectual lesson of the evils attending an irredeemable paper currency. It is true that, after the close of the war, the paper money mania again broke out in certain States; but, by 1787, we find in the Federal Convention an almost unanimous opposition to the proposition to allow either the general government or the States to issue bills of credit.²

An overwhelming vote prohibited the States from issuing paper money.³ In the first draft of the Constitution the national legislature was given the right "to emit bills on the credit of the United States."⁴ But the Convention, by a vote of nine States to two, decided to strike out this clause, after a debate that showed conclusively that it was intended to prohibit absolutely the federal government from issuing such bills.⁵ All the evidence shows that the members thought that this purpose was accomplished.

This was never questioned during the lifetime of the men

¹ Compare the considerations advanced on pp. 118, 123, 152.

² Curtis, *History of the Constitution*, II, 328, 330, 364; Bancroft, *History of the United States*, VI, 175-176, 303-305, *Plea for the Constitution*, Part III.; Fiske, *Critical Period*, 273-276.

³ Elliot, *Journal of the Convention*, 270; Gilpin, *Madison Papers*, 1442, 1443.

⁴ Elliot, 236; Gilpin, 1232.

⁵ See Elliot, 245; Gilpin, 1342-1346; Bancroft, *Plea for the Constitution*, 44 et seq.

who witnessed the adoption of the Constitution. For seventy-five years "no suggestion of the existence of such a power to make paper a legal tender can be found in the legislative history of the country."¹ In the dark hours of a civil war legal tender paper was again issued by Congress; and, twenty years later, the Supreme Court completed the undoing of the work of the Federal Convention by declaring such issues constitutional even in time of peace.² The wonders of modern constitutional interpretation enabled the Court, twice altering its earlier decisions on this subject, to reject contemporary testimony, to brush aside a weight of legal authority undisputed for nearly a century, and to hold that the framers of the Constitution either did not give expression to their real intentions, or failed to embody them in effective constitutional provisions.³

¹See speech by Roscoe Conkling, *Congressional Globe*, Second Session of XXXVII-Congress, 634, 1861-1862.

²*Julliard v. Greenman*, 110 U. S. R. 421. For the earlier decisions see *Hepburn v. Griswold*, 8 Wall. 603; *Knox v. Lee*, 12 Wall. 457.

³For this change in constitutional interpretation compare Cooley, *Principles of Constitutional Law*, first edition, 80, with the second edition, 82-83. The most noteworthy attack on the decision of the Court is that by Bancroft in his *Plea for the Constitution*. The legal tender decisions have been defended by Miller, *Lectures on the Constitution of the United States*, 135-144, 534-531; McMurtrie, *Observations on Mr. Bancroft's Plea*; James, *The Legal Tender Decisions*. This last work contains, on p. 80, references to discussions in law journals.

CHAPTER II.

REVENUES OF THE GOVERNMENT (Continued).

(B) *Domestic and Foreign Loans.*

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

American State Papers, Finance, I.; Bancroft, *History of the United States*, IV. and V.; Bolles, *Financial History of the United States*, I. and II.; Bayley, *History of the National Loans*; Circuit, *Histoire de l'Action Commune de la France et de l'Amérique*, see "*Conclusions Historiques*;" Doniol, *Histoire de la Participation de la France à l'Établissement des États Unis d'Amérique*; Elliot, *The Funding System*; Gallatin, *Sketch of the Finances*, *Writings*, III. 121-127; Hale, *Franklin in France*; Hildreth, *History of the United States*, III. and IV.; *Journals of Congress, 1775-1788*; Pitkin, *History of the United States*, I. and II.; Ross, *Sinking Funds*; Schouler, *History of the United States*, I.; Sparks, *Diplomatic Correspondence of the American Revolution*; *Statutes at Large*, I.; Sumner, *Financier and Finances of the American Revolution*.

Section I.—Domestic Loans and Indebtedness.

In 1775, when the second emission of paper money was proposed, Franklin urged Congress to borrow the necessary funds,¹ rather than resort to another issue of bills of credit. This suggestion, however, was not followed. As a temporary body, it would not have been easy for Congress to secure a loan; and it was not until after independence had been de-

¹ See Franklin's Works. VIII. 328.

clared, that this expedient was resorted to.¹ Even then the measure encountered considerable opposition; but by October the danger of depreciation of the paper money had become so great that Congress voted² to borrow five million Continental dollars at four per cent. interest. A loan office was opened in each State; and a commissioner, appointed by the State, was placed in charge of each office and authorized to receive subscriptions. But the rate of interest was placed too low, and this first attempt to secure a loan met with but little success.

In January and February,³ 1777, Congress decided to borrow \$15,000,000 more through the loan offices. Shortly afterward,⁴ the rate of interest was raised to six per cent., and the receipts from the offices began to increase. During this year the first foreign loan was secured in France. This led Congress to resolve⁵ that the interest that should in the future arise on loan office certificates issued in pursuance of former resolutions, should be paid annually in bills of exchange drawn on the American commissioners in Paris. It was hoped that, by using the French loan to insure the payment of interest on the domestic debt, \$20,000,000 might be borrowed at home, and further emissions of paper made unnecessary. This measure did lead to an increased willingness to lend to the government,⁶ but the issue of bills of credit was not avoided.

The month of November⁷ saw the loan office system extended in the States, in the hope of thereby facilitating the progress of the loans. In the following years other expedients were resorted to in order to increase the amount of money secured through the offices. At different times⁸ Congress attempted to secure further domestic loans, but its efforts were

¹ See Bolles, I. 45-49.

² October 3, 1776.

³ January 14 and February 22.

⁴ February 26.

⁵ September 9.

⁶ See State Papers, Finance, I. 27; Elliot, 53.

⁷ November 22.

⁸ See Journal of Congress, February 3, 1779; September 5, 1780; June 11, 1779.

only partially successful. The total amount of money secured through the loan offices was as follows:¹

| PERIODS. | Amount of Currency. | Specie Value. |
|---|---------------------|---------------|
| October, 1776, to September, 1777..... | \$3,787,000 | \$3,787,000 |
| September, 1777, to March, 1778..... | 3,459,000 | 2,538,000 |
| March, 1778, to the close of the loan offices..... | 59,820,000 | 5,146,000 |
| Total | \$67,077,112 | \$11,472,802 |
| Borrowed in new emissions, in 1781, something more than. | | 112,704 |
| Total..... | | \$11,585,506 |

The specie value of the bills of credit paid to the government under these loans was fixed by a resolution of Congress of April 18 and June 28, 1780. The holders of the loan office certificates were to be paid the specie value of the certificates at the time of their issue, the rate of depreciation being determined by the table which has been already given.² As we have seen, this table does not show the full amount of the depreciation; and consequently the holders of the loan certificates lost nothing by the action of Congress in repudiating the paper money. Since the table of the amounts of money loaned the government has been based upon the scale of depreciation established by the act of 1780, it is evident that the specie value of the total loans has been placed at too high a figure. But it is, of course, impossible to correct the estimate, which must, therefore, be taken as given by Hamilton.

Besides these regular loans, the financial exigencies of the government led to the contraction of other forms of domestic debt. Congress authorized quartermasters, commissaries, and other officers to issue certificates of indebtedness for supplies taken for the army and for other debts contracted. As was to be expected, this loose system led to widespread confusion, and even corruption.³ Morris opposed it as "extremely wasteful and expensive," and sought to obtain supplies by contract,

¹ See State Papers, Finance, I. 27; Elliot, 53.

² See p. 133.

³ See Bolles, I. 281 et seq. Sumner, Financier, I. 272, 273.

a reform which Congress, in 1781,¹ allowed him to institute. In other instances forced loans had been authorized, and receipts given for supplies thus seized by the army. In all these ways there had been issued by the close of the war a large number of certificates of indebtedness. Hamilton, in the statement of the cost of the war² that he made in 1790, placed the total outstanding obligations of this nature at \$16,708,000. This agrees very closely with the items of this character included in his statement of the domestic debt in his report of January, 1790.³

In 1782, upon the recommendation of Robert Morris,⁴ Congress attempted to fund the domestic debt, and to provide means for its extinguishment.⁵ Although Congress had resolved in 1781⁶ to have the domestic debt reduced to its specie value, little had been done in this direction; and the work of settling the accounts of the States and of individuals went on very slowly. In December,⁷ 1782, Congress passed a resolution to the effect that any surplus above the sum necessary to pay the interest on the whole of the national debt, that should arise from the funds granted by the States for that purpose should form a sinking fund to be appropriated to the payment of the principal of the debt. This resolution, however, was of no value, as the national finances were not in a condition to make a surplus probable, or even possible.

Early in the following year,⁸ Congress resolved that any attempt to pay the principal of past debts would obstruct the service of the government; and that all efforts should be confined to providing for the payment of interest. Three months later,⁹ however, after protracted consideration of the finan-

¹ July 10.

² Elliot, 10.

³ State Papers, Finance, I. 27. Elliot, 53. Compare the statements of debt given in Journals of Congress for April 29, 1783, and April 27, 1784.

⁴ Sparks, Diplomatic Correspondence, XII. 211.

⁵ See Ross, 25-28; Bolles, 317-319.

⁶ May 22.

⁷ December 16.

⁸ January 30.

⁹ April 18.

cial situation, an act was passed which would have gone far toward making adequate provision for the debt, if the States had only been willing to invest Congress with the necessary authority. According to this plan, the national government was to have the power to levy import duties for a period of twenty-five years; while the States were to levy special taxes amounting to \$1,500,000 annually. The revenue from these sources, together with the proceeds of the sales of the public lands ceded by the States, was to be applied to the payment of the interest and principal of the debt. Through the opposition of Rhode Island this measure failed, and it remained impossible for the Congress of the Confederation to make any provision for the payment of the debt. After March 1, 1782,¹ it became impossible to pay even the interest on the loan office certificates. For these arrearages of interest, indents, or certificates of indebtedness, were issued by the loan officers.² These arrearages continued to accumulate until 1789; although Congress, by making the indents receivable for taxes, contrived to draw in a portion of these obligations incurred for interest.

From Hamilton's report of January, 1790,³ has been taken the following statement of the domestic debt, as it existed on March 3, 1789:

| | |
|---|--------------|
| Debt registered on March 3..... | \$1,598,462 |
| Outstanding certificates of indebtedness.... | 12,349,419 |
| Loan office certificates..... | 11,219,523 |
| Debt due foreign officers..... | 186,427 |
| | \$28,353,831 |
| Deduct money received from sale of lands and other property ⁴ | 960,915 |
| Total principal of domestic debt..... | \$27,392,917 |
| Arrearages of interest to December 31, | |
| 1790 ⁵ | 13,030,168 |
| Total domestic debt..... | \$40,423,085 |

¹ See resolution of September 9, 1782.

² See Bolles. I. 288.

³ State Papers, Finance, I. 27-28 Elliot. 53. 55.

⁴ See p. 170.

⁵ Hamilton gives the arrears of interest up to 1791. Gallatin computes them up to the

Before leaving this subject, it is necessary to refer to the transactions of the government with the Bank of North America. Robert Morris secured valuable assistance from this institution, which supplied the treasury with considerable sums of money during 1782 and 1783.¹ All of these loans ran for a short time only, and were soon repaid, so that the income received from this source was of a very temporary character. From the Report of 1790² has been taken the following statement of these transactions:

| | Amounts Borrowed. | Repayments. |
|------------|----------------------|-----------------|
| 1782..... | \$923,308.42 | \$865,394.58 |
| 1783..... | \$349,534.13 | \$388,981.01 |
| 1784..... | ..... | Balance repaid. |
| Total..... | \$1,272,842.55 | ..... |

Of these sums, the Bank of North America furnished \$1,249,975.59, and the so called National Bank, \$22,866.96.

Section II.—Foreign Loans.

In the first years of the war the colonies had naturally sought aid from those European powers that were likely to entertain hostile feelings toward Great Britain. It was not until February 6, 1778, that a formal treaty of alliance was concluded with the French government; but, in both of the preceding years, aid was secretly furnished by France. In 1776 the first subsidy was granted to the United States,³ and the following year the first loan was obtained from the French "farmers general."⁴ It was on the strength of the foreign

end of 1789, and places them at \$11,493,858. His statement of the principal of the debt differs slightly from that of Hamilton. We have followed Hamilton, since he presents best the different parts of the principal. See Gallatin's Writings, III. 126.

¹ See Sumner. II. 21-35, 183-192; Bolles, I. 100-101, 273-275, 344.

² Banker's Magazine, 1860, 582, 583, 585.

³ See Bayley, 299-304.

⁴ Bayley, 304, 305, 468.

loans that Congress voted¹ to draw bills of exchange on the American commissioners in Paris for the payment of interest on the domestic debt. Up to March 1, 1782, when interest payments ceased, \$1,663,992 had been applied in this way.²

In 1778 a new loan was secured in France; and, during the next four years, considerable sums were received from that country.³ In 1781 a small loan was obtained from Spain; in the next year a loan was secured in Holland; while in 1783 another was advanced by France. Thus from 1777 to 1783 foreign loans yielded the following amounts, by years:⁴

| | |
|-----------|-------------|
| 1777..... | \$181,500 |
| 1778..... | 544,500 |
| 1779..... | 181,500 |
| 1780..... | 726,000 |
| 1781..... | 1,866,566 |
| 1782..... | 2,657,451 |
| 1783..... | 1,673,000 |
| | \$7,830,517 |

Of this amount, France furnished \$6,352,500; Holland, \$1,304,000; and Spain, \$174,017. A large part of this money was expended in France, and never passed through the treasury. Hamilton placed this amount at \$5,000,000;⁵ but this estimate must include some part of the French and Spanish subsidies,⁶ as well as the loans proper. The accounts of the government⁷ show that, from 1781 to the end of 1783, \$574,521 in specie was shipped to this country; while bills of exchange were drawn to the amount of \$3,063,677. This includes, however, an overdraft of \$350,000.⁸ As we have seen, \$1,663,000 of these sums brought into the treasury went to pay the interest on the loan office certificates; and the rest was devoted to defraying the expenses of the war.

¹ September 9, 1777.

² See State Papers, Finance, I, 28.

³ For the history of these loans see Bayley, 305-311, 393-395.

⁴ This table is taken from Bayley, 468.

⁵ Elliot, 10. Cf. Journal of Congress, September 30, 1783.

⁶ See pp. 165, 166.

⁷ See Report of 1790, Banker's Magazine, 1890, 581-583.

⁸ See Bayley, 311-313.

But, even after the close of the Revolution, the government was unable to meet its ordinary expenses and pay the interest on the public debt. Accordingly loans were repeatedly sought in Holland,¹ which country assisted Congress through the remaining years of the Confederation. Much of the money so obtained was expended for interest on earlier foreign loans,² and for the expenses of the European representatives of the United States.³ Only a small portion of the loans seems to have been expended in this country. The accounts show that, from 1784 to September 12, 1789, the bills of exchange drawn on Holland amounted to only \$333,117.37.⁴ After 1784 the interest on the foreign debt fell into arrears, while installments due on the principal, to the amount of \$1,388,888,⁵ remained unpaid, in spite of the pressing needs of the bankrupt French treasury. In 1790 the whole burden of foreign indebtedness contracted by the old Congress stood as follows:

| | |
|--|--------------|
| Amounts borrowed and received from 1777-1783..... | \$7,830,517 |
| Amounts borrowed and received from 1784 to 1788..... | 1,896,000 |
| Amounts borrowed and received to Octo- ber, 1789..... | 400,000 |
| | \$10,126,517 |
| Amount redeemed..... | 27,810 |
| | \$10,098,707 |
| Total principal of foreign debt..... | \$10,098,707 |
| Arrearages of interest up to January 1, 1790..... | 1,640,071 |
| Balance due to France for military sup- plies..... | 24,332 |
| | \$11,763,110 |
| Total foreign indebtedness ⁶ | \$11,763,110 |

¹ See Bayley, 311-316.

² Bayley, 313.

³ Bayley, 315.

⁴ See Banker's Magazine, 1860, 584-591.

⁵ State Papers, Finance, I. 26-27; Elliot, 52.

⁶ See Bayley, 325, 468; State Papers, Finance, I. 26-27; Elliot, 51, 52. In this statement of the principal of the debt Bayley has been followed. Hamilton's statement is \$28,000

Section III.—The Debts of the States.

A view of the Revolutionary finances is not complete without some mention of the debts contracted by the individual States in their efforts to meet the financial burdens thrown upon them by Congress. So far as these debts were incurred for this purpose, they find a legitimate place in a discussion of the national finances; the more so, since they were ultimately assumed by the United States.

Reference has been made elsewhere to the difficulties encountered by the States in establishing effective systems of taxation. For this reason they were obliged to incur debts in order to meet the obligations imposed upon them by the general government during the war. These debts were of a varied character, consisting of loans secured at home and abroad, bills of credit of the new tenor that were still unredeemed, State paper money, State notes issued to meet the expense of equipping militia and for balances of pay due to the army, certificates of interest on the State debts, and various other obligations.¹ Their total amount was estimated by Hamilton at \$25,000,000.² The funding act of 1790, which provided for the assumption of these debts by the United States, stipulated that none of these obligations should be assumed that should appear to have been issued for any other purpose than the prosecution of the war; and limited the amount of the assumptions to \$21,500,000.³ After the debts were finally adjusted on this basis, \$18,271,787 was assumed by the national government.⁴ It is probable, therefore, that this last

less. The arrearages of interest are given here as stated by Hamilton. Bayley places them at \$1,760,277. This difference is so considerable that it seems best, to follow the older statement. Gallatin says that the arrears were about \$1,700,000. These differences it has been impossible to explain. See Gallatin, Writings, III. 124.

¹ See State Papers, Finance, I. 23-31; Bolles, II. 26; Gallatin, III. 123. On this whole subject see Hildreth, IV. 155; Schouler, I. 131-132; Bolles, II. 25-29.

² State Papers, Finance, I. 19.

³ Statutes at Large, I. Act of August 4, 1790, section 13.

⁴ See Gallatin, Sketch of Finances, Table XV., Writings, III.

figure represents most closely the amount of State debts contracted for the purpose of carrying on the war. In the final settlement of the accounts, however, certain balances, due to those States which had paid to the government more than their share of the expenses of the war, were added to these debts; and the total amount of assumptions was thus raised to \$21,789,370.

CHAPTER III.

REVENUES OF THE GOVERNMENT (Continued).

(C) Taxes.

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

American State Papers, Finance, I.; Bancroft, *History of the United States*, V. 199-208; Bolles, *Financial History of the United States*, I.; Curtis, *History of the Constitution of the United States*, I. 174, 180, 243; Elliot, *The Funding System*; Ely, *Taxation in American States and Cities*, Part II. chapter I; Gay, *James Madison*, 20 *et seq.*, 34 *et seq.*; Gilpin, *The Madison Papers*, 187-467; Hamilton, *History of the Republic of the United States*, II.; Hart, *Formation of the Union*, 89-90, 109-112; Hildreth, *History of the United States*, III., see index for "Requisitions;" Hill, *Tariff Policy of the United States*, 99 *et seq.*; *Journals of Congress*, 1775-1788; Lalor, *Cyclopadia of Political Science*, Article on "American Finance"; Lodge, *Alexander Hamilton*, 36-42; Morse, *Life of Alexander Hamilton*, I. 102-112; *Reports of 1785 and 1790*; *Secret Journals of Congress*, II.; Sparks, *Diplomatic Correspondence of the American Revolution*, XII.; Sumner, *Financier and Finances of the American Revolution*; Sumner, *Alexander Hamilton*; *The Federalist*, No. XXX.

In the discussion of the early issues of the bills of credit, it was pointed out that, although the Congress of 1775 was a revolutionary body, it was impracticable for it to attempt to levy taxes. The whole history of taxation in the colonies justifies this conclusion.

Up to the opening of the Revolution, there had been little occasion for an extensive system of taxation. The whole ex-

pense of the civil establishments of the colonies could hardly have exceeded \$300,000 a year,¹ and a portion of these expenditures was met by other means than taxes.² But, more than this, the economy of the colonies was relatively isolated, and comparatively few social ties existed. Beyond the enforcement of contracts and the settlement of disputes by law, individuals received few tangible benefits from the colonial governments; and were inclined to look upon the colony as an external force which entered into the life of the local units only for the purpose of collecting money. Further still, the payment of taxes usually called for money, of which the people in the rural districts had but little. All these circumstances made it difficult even for the State governments established after 1775 to institute State taxation on a scale commensurate with the needs of the time.

In view of these facts it is not strange that Congress considered it inexpedient to attempt to tax the colonies. In the instructions given to Franklin in October, 1778,³ Congress explained that in 1775 America had never been taxed heavily, or for a long period of time. Also, it was stated that, since the contest was upon the very question of taxation, the imposition of taxes, unless from the last necessity, would have been madness. In this position Congress would seem to have been justified. The habit of paying taxes is not easily acquired or quickly formed, as the history of our own and other countries has repeatedly testified. Indeed, it is not improbable that the attempt to impose a burden of war taxation upon the colonies in 1775, might have led to the overthrow of the Congress itself.

But the necessity of taxation by the States was early appreciated by Congress, which exercised whatever influence it possessed in this direction. The first bills of credit emitted were apportioned among the colonies, and Congress recommended that the provincial assemblies should provide by tax-

¹ Sumner, *Financier*, I. 25.

² Ely, *Taxation*, 105-115.

³ See *Secret Journals of Congress*, II. 118.

ation for sinking their respective quotas of the notes.¹ This, of course, amounted to an indirect attempt to levy a tax. Again, in January,² 1777, the State legislatures were urged to make provision for drawing in the paper money already issued, and to raise by taxation during the year and send to the Continental treasury such sums of money as they could collect.

But, as the year wore on, and the bills of credit began to depreciate to an alarming extent, the necessity of taxation for the general government became more apparent. On November 15, the Articles of Confederation were passed by Congress, and sent to the States for ratification. The Articles provided³ that Congress should apportion among the States, on the basis of the value of the land and the improvements thereon, taxes that should be levied by the State governments. With the necessity of taxation thus recognized, Congress proceeded to make its first formal requisition on the States,⁴ in advance of the acceptance of the Articles of Confederation. The States were asked to furnish \$5,000,000 during the year 1778. This sum was not accurately apportioned; and it was stipulated that the amounts paid under the requisition should be considered as loans, until an assessment of the value of the land and buildings in each of the States should make possible an exact adjustment of their respective quotas. Congress also urged that the State issues of paper money should be withdrawn; and that, in the future, State expenses should be met by taxation. The wisdom of these recommendations is manifest, and they show conclusively that Congress had a true appreciation of the needs of the situation. But, unfortunately, as the power to enforce these measures was lacking, they proved to a great degree ineffectual.

From this time on the system of requisitions was continued until the end of the Confederation. On the whole, the lack

¹ Journal of Congress, July 29, 1775.

² January 14.

³ See p. 119.

⁴ November 22, 1777.

of political organization and vitality made it a signal failure, although the States did render the general government considerable assistance. But they were inclined to depend upon Congress, rather than upon their own efforts, when it came to raising funds for the conduct of the war; and this, too, while they retained in their own hands the exclusive right to levy taxes. Further than this, time was required to develop effective systems of taxation where none had previously existed; and the occupation of parts of the country by the British made the collection of taxes all the more difficult. As a result, the burden of State taxation was very unequally distributed; and this fact made even the small sums that were raised appear extremely burdensome to many of the people upon whom the taxes fell. In addition to all this, sparse population and slight development of trade made the cost of collection very high. All things considered, therefore, it does not seem surprising that the States failed to supply the large sums called for as the needs of Congress increased.

While the States were struggling with these difficulties, Congress was finding it impossible to secure a satisfactory apportionment of the requisitions. Complaints¹ were made continually that the amounts assigned to individual States were unjustly apportioned, and various attempts were made to secure an accurate assessment. A resolution adopted in October, 1779,² provided that all sums paid by the States should continue to be passed to their credit, and considered as loans to the government, until a satisfactory assessment could be made on the basis of the value of land and the improvements thereon. With each new requisition this resolution was re-enacted;³ and no adjustment of the burdens of taxation was secured until 1790, when the accounts of the States were finally settled by the acts of August 4 and 5, which provided for the funding of the national debt.⁴ Indeed, it

¹ Cf. Journal of Congress, September 10, 1782.

² October 6. Cf. also the resolution of November 23, 1777.

³ E. g. Journal of Congress, August 20, 1783.

⁴ See Statutes at Large, I. Also Hamilton's Report of 1790, State Papers, Finance, I. 15 et seq.

would have been practically impossible to apportion taxes satisfactorily on the basis of the value of the land and improvements in each State, as required by the Articles of Confederation. In 1783¹ Congress vainly attempted to amend the Articles so as to admit of an apportionment of taxes on the basis of population, in the census of which three-fifths of the slaves should be included. It was partly in view of the experience of the old Congress that the Federal Convention of 1787 rejected the old method, and provided for the apportionment of representatives and direct taxes on the basis of population.²

It seems likely, also, that the sums which Congress demanded were sometimes excessive. This fact not infrequently caused the States to despair of their ability ever to raise the full amount of the requisitions.³ At any rate, payments came in very slowly, and Congress resorted to all kinds of efforts to secure a prompter compliance with its recommendations. Addresses were sent to the States urging the necessity of immediate payment of the taxes;⁴ requisitions were made in stricter terms, and interest was to be charged on all deficiencies;⁵ special appeals were made to certain states;⁶ the Continental treasurer was directed to draw upon the States for sums remaining unpaid;⁷ and, finally, Congress attempted to throw some of its obligations upon the States.⁸ All these efforts, however, generally failed to accomplish their purposes. In 1780, when the issues of paper money were exhausted, the States were called upon⁹ to furnish supplies of corn, wheat, flour, etc.; but this system of specific supplies proved so wasteful that it was finally abandoned.¹⁰

¹ April 18.

² See Madison Papers, 864, 1038, 1039.

³ See Hamilton in Madison Papers, 283. Also Journal of Congress, April 5, 1784.

⁴ See resolutions of May 8, 1778, and September 13, 1779.

⁵ October 6, 1779; September 18, 1786.

⁶ January 15, 1781; May 19, 1780.

⁷ May 22, 1781.

⁸ November 20, December 10, 1781. In these cases Congress requested certain States to provide for equipping soldiers for the Continental army.

⁹ December, 1779; February 25, 1780; November 4, 1780.

¹⁰ See Sumner, *Financier*, I. chap. 11. Also Hamilton, *History of Republic*, II. 94.

The fatal weakness of the Articles of Confederation, which left in the hands of the States the sole power to collect taxes, was apparent long before the Articles finally went into effect in March, 1781. In February¹ of that year Congress sought to obtain from the States the power to levy a five per cent. duty on imports. While this resolution was pending, the attempt was made to combine with this proposal a request for power to supervise the commercial regulations of all the States. Rejecting this idea, however, Congress decided to ask simply for the right to establish effective national revenues; and it is worthy of notice that, under the Confederation, all other attempts to join commercial regulations to revenue measures met with a similar fate.² But this recommendation of Congress failed of acceptance, largely through the opposition of Rhode Island. This State based its refusal on the claim that the proposed tax would bear with undue weight upon the commercial States, and would give to Congress powers which might become dangerous.³

By this time⁴ Robert Morris had been called to administer the national finances. Basing his policy on the necessity of taxation, he urged from the outset the adoption of a system of import duties and other taxes.⁵ Early in 1783, with the condition of the finances becoming more and more precarious, Congress renewed⁶ its efforts to secure the authority to derive a revenue from customs duties. The States were asked to grant the government a five per cent. duty on imports with a few higher specific duties on certain articles of luxury. Congress conceded to the States the right to appoint the collectors of these revenues, which were estimated as likely to amount to \$915,000 annually, and were not to continue for a longer period than twenty-five years. At the same time the States

¹ February 3.

² See Hill, 99.

³ See *Journal of Congress*, December 12, 1782. On this whole subject see Hill, *Early Stages of Tariff Policy*, 99-102; Sumner, *Financier*, II, 64-68; Bolles, I, 292 et seq.; Curtis, I, 173-180.

⁴ February, 1781.

⁵ See Sparks, *Dip. Correspondence*, XII, 211; Sumner, *Financier*, II, 70.

⁶ April 18.

were requested to furnish the government with \$1,500,000 a year under the old system of requisitions. But this effort met with no better success than the earlier one had experienced, although such men as Morris, Hamilton, Madison, and Ellsworth devoted their energies to the attempt to persuade the States to make the necessary grant of power.¹

Three years later the project was renewed,² and the States were asked to consent to the establishment of the general system of revenue recommended in 1783. Again a negative answer was received; and, after this, the attempt was abandoned. Not until 1789 was the national government able to assess and collect the taxes necessary to its support.

The history of the requisitions made by Congress is both interesting and instructive. The sources of information are in some particulars conflicting, owing to the confusion that existed in the accounts of the old government; but the most important facts can be ascertained with considerable accuracy. First among the sources come the Reports of 1785 and 1790. These do not include all the money expended in Europe,³ but they do give an account of the financial transactions carried on in America. Next, there is the report made by Hamilton in May, 1790, on the "Money received from or paid to the States."⁴ In this the old accounts are cleared up as far as possible. But, in the final settlement made by Hamilton, the States are credited with certain sums that do not appear on the earlier accounts; and, as a result, the statements of this report do not agree in some respects with the Report of 1785 and the Report of 1790. Finally, we have various reports made by committees appointed by Congress to consider financial questions. These frequently conflict with each other, as well as with the other documents mentioned above; and

¹ See Journal of Congress, April 24, for address sent to the people of the United States. See Madison Papers, 187-467, for debates in Congress. See Sumner, Hill, Curtis, and Bolles, as above.

² April 18, 1786.

³ E. g. The Report of 1790 makes no mention of the Dutch loan of 1787, which was used to pay interest due on previous loans in Europe.

⁴ See State Papers, Finance, I. 53-62; Elliot, 67-83.

present some discrepancies which it is impossible to explain. Yet, they have a certain value for our purpose.

The first four requisitions were payable in paper money, and were as follows:¹

| DATE OF REQUISITION. | Amount in paper money. | Specie value, ² |
|------------------------------------|-------------------------|----------------------------|
| November 22, 1777..... | \$ 5,000,000 | \$2,159,981 |
| January 2, 1779..... | 15,000,000 ³ | } 2,042,500 |
| May 21, 1779..... | 45,000,000 | |
| October 6, 1779 ⁴ | 30,000,000 | 852,491 |
| Total..... | \$95,000,000 | \$5,054,972 |

The payments on these requisitions amounted to \$54,667,000 in currency, of which the specie value was \$1,856,000, according to the scale of depreciation recognized by Congress at the time of payment.⁵

The last of these requisitions was made on October 6, 1779. By the resolutions of February 27 and March 18, 1780, this requisition was amended; and was made to serve as a means of withdrawing the bills of credit from circulation. In the final resolution of March 18, the States were asked to pay in \$15,000,000 of the bills monthly until April, 1781; and all paper paid in after March 1, 1780, was to be destroyed. Of the \$180,000,000 of currency thus required, \$119,400,000 was paid in.⁶ For this the States were credited with payments of \$2,989,000 in specie, this amount representing one-fortieth of the face value of the bills of credit.⁷

¹ On all requisitions see Journals of Congress of the dates given; also Hildreth, III. article on "Requisitions" in the index.

² The specie value is taken from a report by Morris, quoted by Sumner, *Financier*, I. 279; also in Sparks, *Diplomatic Correspondence*, XI. 447.

³ Congress also called for \$6,000,000 a year for eighteen years, but no notice seems to have been taken of this amount.

⁴ This requisition was amended by resolution of March 18, 1780, which is next discussed.

⁵ See *State Papers, Finance*, I. 55, 59-62. Also Elliot, 70, 77-83. Of course, this scale of depreciation resulted in an over-valuation.

⁶ See *State Papers, Finance*, I. 58, 59; Elliot, 73-76.

⁷ See *State Papers, Finance*, I. 54, 58, 59; Elliot, 69, 73-76.

The next requisitions were for specific supplies,¹ the value of which can not be determined except in the case of the requisition of November, 1780. Here the States were requested to send goods of the value of \$4,350,000. In Hamilton's report the States are credited with supplies to the amount of \$881,000;² but it is uncertain whether we should be justified in taking this sum for the payments made under the specific requisitions. It would seem probable that, in a statement of the amounts paid to the government by the States, there must be some credits given for the payments of specific supplies. It is certain that nothing else in Hamilton's tables can represent such supplies; and, therefore, it is possible that the amount above mentioned represents the payments on the specific requisitions. Further than this, it is impossible to ascertain to what extent the States complied with these demands of Congress. It is certain, however, that the system proved wasteful and expensive; and that it failed to furnish the army with supplies at the time and place where they were needed.³

As soon as the specie basis was restored Congress made its requisition payable in specie, or, as an equivalent, the bills of credit of the new emission. These early specie requisitions were as follows:

| DATE OF REQUISITION. | Amount. |
|-----------------------|--------------|
| August 26, 1780..... | \$3,000,000 |
| November 4, 1780..... | 1,642,988 |
| March 16, 1781..... | 6,000,000 |
| | \$10,642,988 |

Little, if anything, seems to have been received in payment of these requisitions.⁴ In Morris's accounts, which begin in

¹ Requisitions were ordered December 11, December 14, 1779; February 25, November 4, 1780.

² See State Papers, Finance, I. 55; Elliot, 70.

³ See Sumner, I. chap. 11.

⁴ For the state of the finances during 1780-1781 see Bolles, I. 101-104; also an address sent out by Congress, in Journal for January 15, 1781.

February, 1781, there is no record of any receipts from taxes until June, 1782; and the amounts then paid are credited to requisitions made after October 1, 1781. We have seen that in the resolution of March 18, 1780, Congress provided that the four-tenths of the bills of the new emission that were to be at the disposal of the United States, should be credited to the States on their quotas of the requisitions. The share of the new bills which fell to the United States amounted to \$1,592,222;¹ and must, therefore, be credited to these first specie requisitions.

The history of the requisitions made after this date can be determined with considerable accuracy.² October 30, 1781, Congress called for \$8,000,000. In September³ of the following year \$1,200,000 was called for, but this sum was afterwards made payable in indents, or the certificates issued by the loan officers for interest on the domestic debt. Under this requisition, however, no payments seem to have been made. On October 16, 1782, \$2,000,000 in specie was called for. Hamilton states that \$1,329,000 was paid on this requisition and on that of October, 1781,⁴ up to the first of the year 1784. Morris's accounts, however, show that the receipts from taxes in 1782 and 1783 amounted to \$1,466,066.⁵ A report of a committee of Congress⁶ places the payment for the same period at \$1,486,511. There is no apparent explanation for these conflicting statements; and, undoubtedly, the original accounts of Morris should be given the greater weight.

In April, 1784,⁷ Congress, recognizing that these demands had been excessive, called for a payment of only \$2,003,000 in specie and \$667,000 in indents; providing, at the same time, that these sums should be credited on the existing requisitions.

¹ See State Papers, Finance, I, 58; Elliot, 73.

² We have Hamilton's tables of the payments on the requisitions from October, 1781, to 1788, and the Reports of 1785 and 1790.

³ September 10.

⁴ See State Papers, Finance, I, 56.

⁵ See Report of 1790, in Banker's Magazine, 582, 583.

⁶ See Journals, April 5, 1784.

⁷ April 27, 28.

The following year¹ the balance due on the same requisitions was required, of which sum \$1,000,000 was made payable in specie, and \$2,000,000 in indents. In 1786² a new requisition was made for \$2,170,430 in specie and \$1,606,632 in indents. The next year,³ \$1,700,407 payable in indents was asked for; and, in 1788,⁴ a final requisition was ordered, which called for \$1,686,541 in indents. According to Hamilton's report these requisitions made after 1781, stand as follows:⁵

| | Specie. | Indents. | Total. |
|--------------------------------------|-------------|-------------|--------------|
| Amount levied from 1781 to 1789..... | \$6,630,000 | \$8,733,000 | \$15,363,000 |
| Payments made from 1781 to 1784..... | 1,320,000 | ..... | 1,320,000 |
| Payments made from 1784 to 1789..... | 2,300,000 | 2,371,000 | 4,571,000 |
| Total payments..... | \$3,520,194 | \$2,371,154 | \$5,900,348 |
| Balance unpaid in 1789..... | \$3,101,731 | \$6,361,929 | |

This statement made by Hamilton does not appear to agree at all closely with the Report of 1790. This last document states the receipts from taxes from February 20, 1781, to September 12, 1789, as follows:

| | | |
|--|----------------|--|
| February 20, 1781, to December 31, 1781..... | ..... |  |
| 1782..... | \$ 646,036 46 | |
| 1783..... | 820,029 83 | |
| 1784..... | 613,773 89 | |
| 1785..... | 376,620 59 | |
| 1786, specie..... | 301,142 39 | |
| indents..... | 38,895 74 | |
| supplies..... | 27,730 38 | |
| 1787, specie..... | 276,641 44 | |
| indents..... | 370,257 43 | |
| 1788, specie..... | 261,675 20 | |
| indents..... | 1,041,756 57 | |
| 1789, specie..... | 57,739 37 | |
| indents..... | 90,721 41 | |
| Total payments in specie..... | \$3,383,661 | |
| Total payments in indents..... | 1,541,631 | |
| Payments in form of supplies..... | 27,730 | |
| Total receipts from taxes ⁶ | \$4,953,022 84 | |

¹ Sept. 27.

² August 2, 1786.

³ October 11, 1787.

⁴ August 2, 1788.

⁵ State Papers, Finance, I. 56, 57; Elliot, 71, 72.

⁶ See Banker's Magazine, 1890, 581-591.

But it is possible to account for these discrepancies. The greatest difference between the two statements is in the matter of the payments of indents. Now the States seem to have continued to turn indents into the national treasury after September, 1789. In Hamilton's Report on the Public Credit, in January, 1790,¹ the amount of indents paid in up to December 31, 1789, is placed at \$2,244,231. By May, when the report was presented concerning the money paid by the States, this sum had been increased to \$2,371,154. This seems to explain the accounts of the payment of indents. In the case of the specie payments there is only a difference of \$117,000 between Hamilton's statement and the accounts of the old government. This may be explained on similar grounds. Indeed, from what we know of the delays and backwardness of the State officials, and even of the national receivers, in furnishing statements of their accounts, such an explanation seems more than plausible.² It is probable, however, that these credits given to the States by Hamilton arose from the settlement of old accounts; and do not represent actual payments in specie after September, 1789.

We are able then to construct the following table, which shows the total receipts from taxes after February, 1781.

| | Specie. | Indents. | Supplies. | Totals. |
|--|--------------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------|-------------|
| 1781 to December 31, 1783..... | \$1,466,066 ³ | ..... | ..... | \$1,466,066 |
| January, 1784, to September 12, 1789 | 1,917,595 ³ | \$1,541,631 ³ | \$27,730 ³ | 3,486,956 |
| Credits given the States after Sep- tember 12, 1789 | 117,803 | 829,523 | ..... | 947,326 |
| Totals | \$3,501,464 ⁴ | \$2,371,154 | \$27,730 | \$5,900,348 |

¹ State Papers, Finance, I, 28; Elliot, 55.

² For an illustration see the Journal of Congress for September 30, 1788. There it is stated that the receipts of indents up to April 1, 1788, were \$1,881,000. But of this sum only \$1,100,000 had been received into the treasury, the balance still remaining in the hands of the loan office receivers.

³ See p. 161, accounts of old government.

⁴ Add to this \$27,730 for supplies, and the amount equals Hamilton's statement of \$3,529,194.

The entire list of requisitions will, therefore, stand as follows:

| REQUISITIONS. | Amount in currency. | Amount in specie. | Payments in currency. | Payments in specie. | Balances unpaid. |
|--|---------------------|-------------------|-----------------------|---------------------|------------------|
| First requisitions. See p. 158.. | \$95,000,000 | \$5,054,972 | \$54,667,000 | \$1,856,000 | \$3,198,000 |
| Specific supplies. See p. 159... | | | | 881,000 | |
| Requisitions of March 18, 1780.. | 180,000,000 | | 119,400,000 | 2,983,000 | |
| Early specie requisitions. See p. 159..... | | 10,642,988 | | 1,593,322 | 9,050,000 |
| Specie requisitions after October, 1781. See p. 160..... | | 6,630,926 | | 3,529,194 | 3,101,000 |
| Requisitions payable in indents See p. 160..... | | 8,733,083 | | 2,371,154 | 6,361,000 |
| | | \$31,061,969 | | \$13,218,570 | |

The figures already presented show so plainly the weakness of the system of requisitions that no further comment is necessary. In a following chapter it will be necessary to recur to this subject, and to show what position taxes occupied in the national finances of this period. To that end it will be convenient, at this point, to determine the amount which the government received from taxes up to the end of 1783, and the sums received after that date. For this purpose the following tables have been prepared:

| | |
|---|-------------|
| From the first requisitions, specie value..... | \$1,856,000 |
| From specific requisitions..... | 881,000 |
| From specie requisitions before October, 1781..... | 1,592,000 |
| From specie requisitions October, 1781, to January, 1784..... | 1,466,000 |
| Total ¹ receipts to January 1, 1784..... | \$5,795,000 |

¹ Since the requisition of March 18, 1780, brought the government no revenue, it has been excluded from this table.

| | Specie. | Indents. | Total. |
|---|--------------------------|-------------|-------------|
| From requisitions from January, 1784, to September, 1789 | \$1,945,325 ¹ | \$1,541,631 | \$3,486,956 |
| After September 13, 1789 | 117,803 | 829,523 | 947,326 |
| Total | \$3,063,128 | \$2,371,154 | \$4,434,282 |

The experience of the Confederation with the system of requisitions sufficed to convince the Federal Convention that the new government should possess the right to raise directly the revenues necessary to its support. With but little opposition Congress was given the power "to lay and collect taxes, duties, imposts, and excises to pay the debts and provide for the common defense and general welfare of the United States."²

¹ The sum of \$27,730 received in supplies is included in this column of specie payments. See p. 162.

² Gilpin, Madison Papers, 1343; Elliot, Journal of Federal Convention, 245. See also Bancroft, History of the United States, VI. 301; Curtis, History of the Constitution of the United States, II, 289-290, 318 et seq. The necessity of this action is forcibly shown in Hamilton's discussion of the subject in The Federalist, XXX.

CHAPTER IV.

REVENUES OF THE GOVERNMENT (Concluded).

(D) *Miscellaneous Revenues.* (E) *Total Revenues.*

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

Adams, H. B., *Maryland's Influence upon Land Cessions to the United States*; Bayley, *History of the National Loans*; Bolles, *Financial History of the United States*, I.; Donaldson, *The Public Domain*; Doniol, *Histoire de la Participation de la France à l'Établissement des États Unis*; Elliot, *Funding System*; Barrett, *Evolution of the Ordinance of 1787*; Bastable, *Public Finance*; Ely, *Taxation in American States and Cities*; Fiske, *Critical Period of American History*; Gallatin, *Writings*, III.; Hale, *Franklin in France*; Jefferson, *Works*, II.; *Journals of Congress, 1775-1788*; McMaster, *History of the People of the United States*; Pitkin, *History of the United States; Reports of 1785 and 1790*; Roscher, *Finanzwissenschaft*; Ross, *Sinking Funds*; Sato, *Land Question in the United States; State Papers, Finance*, I.; Sumner, *Financier and Finances of American Revolution*.

(D) *Miscellaneous Revenues.*

Besides the revenues already described, Congress derived no inconsiderable income from other sources of a miscellaneous character. The amounts so received after 1781 can be ascertained from the Reports of 1785 and 1790. Before this date it is impossible to estimate with accuracy the receipts from such sources.

Before the formal treaty of alliance was concluded with France, and before foreign loans were secured, the United States received secret subsidies from the French govern-

ment, which was not as yet ready to show open hostility to Great Britain. Under the guise of commercial transactions, military supplies were shipped to the United States through Beaumarchais, a secret agent chosen for this purpose. In this manner 2,000,000 livres was advanced by France and 1,000,000 by Spain,¹ as gifts from those countries. Also Beaumarchais, on his own account, furnished other supplies for which he was to receive payment by shipments of American produce. According to the account of Beaumarchais,² the total value of the supplies furnished was 6,274,000 livres of which amount the sums given by the French and Spanish governments must constitute a part. The munitions of war obtained in this way were of the greatest assistance to the American cause. Later on France made additional grants of 8,000,000 livres through the agency of Franklin.³ These gifts, together with the loans that were secured in that country, make the total sums of money furnished by France amount to \$8,167,000. The entire account of these foreign subsidies stands as follows:⁴

| | |
|--|-------------|
| Gifts from France..... | \$1,815,000 |
| Gifts from Spain..... | 181,500 |
| | _____ |
| Total gifts..... | \$1,996,500 |
| Supplies through Beaumarchais for which payment was made..... | 592,000 |
| | _____ |
| | \$2,588,500 |

In 1776⁵ Congress voted to establish a lottery. This was an expedient which was common enough in the colonies,⁶ and which was still employed by European countries.⁷ From this scheme something was realized; but, although

¹ See Bayley, 303, 304.

² See Bayley, 303.

³ See Bayley, 304.

⁴ See Bayley, 303-304. On this entire subject see also Bolles, I, 221-227; Sumner, I, chap. VIII; Pitkin, I, chapt. X, also II, 514-518; Bayley, 299-304; Doniol; Hale.

⁵ November 1, 18, 19.

⁶ See Ely, Taxation, 41, 113.

⁷ See Bastable, Public Finance, 215, 216; Roscher, Finanzwissenschaft, sec. 30

we have no means of determining the exact receipts, we may be sure that they could not have been considerable.¹

On account of the character of the government under the Confederation, no considerable revenues were secured from such sources as fees, fines, forfeitures, etc. In the Journal of Congress for May 10, 1780, there is a resolution concerning certain fees. The ordinance of October 18, 1782, regulating the post office establishment, provided for certain fines and forfeitures. But such provisions could have had no financial significance. During the war large amounts of property belonging to the loyalists were confiscated; but this was done under the laws of the individual States, and need not be discussed in a sketch of the national finances.

In the case of the Continental post office there existed revenues that may properly be termed fees, and some attention should be given to the financial aspects of this branch of the public service. Previous to 1774 the colonial post office had, under the administration of Franklin, become a source of revenue to the Crown.² The Continental Congress in 1775³ established a general post, and appointed Franklin postmaster general. The financial policy of Congress in regard to the post office was not clearly shown at this time. Franklin was to have charge of the revenues and disbursements of the department, and was instructed to turn any profits or gains from the post over to the Continental treasurers.

Article IX. of the Articles of Confederation gave to Congress the exclusive power of "establishing and regulating post offices from one State to another, throughout all the United States, and exacting such postage on the papers passing through the same as may be requisite to defray the ex-

¹ See Sumner, I. 101-102; Bolles, I. 48, 49, 105, 106.

² On the subject of the post office see McMaster, History of the People of the United States, I. 39-43; Duane's edition of the Laws of the United States, I. 649, especially for the Revolutionary period; article "Post," in the American Cyclopædia, XIII.

³ July 26.

penses of the said office." This, it would seem,¹ was intended to prevent Congress from deriving a revenue from this source independently of the requisitions on the States.

The disturbed condition of the country during the war must have rendered the work of the department extremely difficult. Up to 1783 the post seems to have been operated at a loss, in spite of various attempts of Congress to regulate postal charges and the expenses of the establishment. In 1782² an act was passed remodeling the department, and showing clearly what the policy of the government was to be. Any profits accruing from the post office in the future were to be turned over to the treasurer of the United States, "until the sums of money heretofore advanced, or which shall be hereafter advanced by the United States, for the support of the general post office, shall be repaid." After these existing deficiencies should be made good, all future surpluses were to be "appropriated and applied to the establishment of new post offices and the support of packets, to render the post office department as extensively useful as may be." Any deficiencies were to be made good by the United States.

In 1783 the accounts of the government show a surplus of \$1,653, paid over by the post office to the general treasury.³ After that date a surplus appears each year, with the single exception of 1785. The total amount thus received up to September, 1789, was \$18,000. It would seem, therefore, that the deficiencies previous to 1782 must have equalled, or even exceeded, that sum. Evidently, Congress did not consider it a violation of the Articles of Confederation to derive a profit from the post office, provided that any such surpluses should be used for rendering the department "as extensively useful as may be." Thus, while the Articles renounced the attempt to derive a rev-

¹ This is the view taken by Bancroft. See *History of the United States*, V. 202.

² October 18.

³ Report of 1790. *Bankers' Magazine*, 1860, 531-591.

enue from this source, Congress designed to extend the usefulness of the postal establishment.

From the accounts of the government after February, 1781, we can derive exact information as to the sums received from various other sources of the most miscellaneous kind.¹ Prizes taken at sea, booty from the surrender of the British at Yorktown, sales of public property, especially at the close of the military operations, commercial transactions undertaken by the government, interest on bills of exchange, balances of accounts due from individuals, and some other minor items brought in no inconsiderable amounts of money. The total receipts of this character were as follows:

| | |
|---|-------------|
| From Feb. 20, 1781, to Jan. 1, 1784..... | \$856,302 |
| From Jan. 1, 1784, to Sept. 12, 1789..... | 338,568 |
| | \$1,194,870 |

A final source of revenue must be mentioned. When the States ceded to Congress their claims to the northwestern territory, the general government came into possession of a magnificent public domain of more than a quarter of a million of square miles.² The financial significance of this domain was perceived at an early period. It is mentioned as a "fund to raise money on," and Congress promised the soldiers land bounties.³ Gradually the idea developed that the public debt might be paid out of the receipts from sales of the lands, and Congress determined to devote the domain to this purpose.⁴ Financial considerations, prompted by the urgent needs of the treasury, seem to have shaped the policy of Congress in throwing the domain open for settlement. Jefferson indulged in the most reckless and

¹ See Report of 1790; also Sumner II. 126-128.

² On this subject of land cessions, see Donaldson, *The Public Domain*; Adams, *Maryland's Influence upon Land Cessions*; Sato, *The Land Question in the United States*; Barrett, *Evolution of the Ordinance of 1787*.

³ Barrett, *Ordinance of 1787*, 5.

⁴ Donaldson, *Public Domain*, 196-7; Barrett, *Ordinance of 1787*, 4-5.

unfounded estimates of the revenue to be derived from this source.¹ The general expectation of effecting in this manner a large reduction of the debt was not realized.² Moreover, since the obligations of the government were received in payment for the lands, the treasury seems to have received no specie income from these sales. In the Journal of Congress for September 30, 1788, there is an account of the sale of lands to the amount of \$117,104. In Hamilton's Report on the Public Credit, in January, 1790,³ the sum of \$960,915, received from sales of lands and other property up to March 3, 1789, is deducted from the principal of the domestic debt. But we have no means of determining how much of this amount represents the sales of lands. Gallatin⁴ later on gives the receipts from the public lands up to January, 1790, as \$1,100,000. This would make it seem that the amount stated by Hamilton must be in greater part, made up of the payments for the lands.

Two other features of the policy pursued by Congress in regard to the domain deserve consideration. The ordinance of May 20, 1785, made provision for "the mode of disposing of lands in the western territory." By this act one section of the land of each township formed in the territory was reserved "for the maintenance of public schools within the said township." Besides this magnificent endowment for educational purposes, Congress also provided for the retention of a portion of the domain in the hands of the general government. In this particular future Congresses might have learned much from the despised Congress of the Confederation. The ordinance of 1785 reserved a certain amount of land in each township "for future sale," also "one-third part of all gold, silver, lead and copper mined, to be sold, or otherwise disposed of as Congress shall hereafter direct." It is a matter for

¹ Works, II. 325.

² See Ross, Sinking Funds, 26-28; Bolles, I. 356, 357.

³ State Papers, Finance, I. 27; Elliot, 53.

⁴ Writings, III. 124.

regret that an equally cautious policy was not followed in the subsequent disposition of the public domain.

From all these sources, it would seem, the national treasury must have derived, between 1775 and the first of 1784, at least the following income:¹

| | |
|---|-------------|
| Gifts from France and Spain..... | \$1,996,500 |
| Prizes, booty, sales, commercial transactions, etc..... | 856,302 |
| | \$2,852,802 |

Between 1784 and 1789, receipts of a miscellaneous character amounted to \$338,568, while the sums derived from the public lands enabled the government to cancel at least \$960,915 of the public debt. Thus for the whole period the entire miscellaneous revenues were as follows:

| | |
|---|--------------------------|
| From 1775 to Jan., 1784..... | \$2,852,802 |
| From 1784 to Sept., 1789..... | 338,568 |
| Public debt cancelled through receipts from lands | 960,915 |
| | \$4,152,285 ² |

(E) *Total Revenues.*

On the basis of the results already obtained, the total income of the government for these fourteen years may be estimated approximately as follows:

(A) *Revenues from 1775 to end of 1783.*

| | |
|--|--------------|
| Receipts from paper money, see p. 133..... | \$37,800,000 |
| Receipts from domestic loans, see p. 143. | 11,585,505 |
| Receipts from foreign loans, see p. 147..... | 7,830,517 |
| Receipts from taxes, see p. 163..... | 5,795,000 |
| Miscellaneous receipts, see p. 171..... | 2,852,802 |
| | \$65,863,825 |
| Total income.. | \$65,863,825 |
| Obligations outstanding, see p. 144 | 16,703,000 |

¹ From this there have been omitted the supplies received from Beaumarchais, for which payment was made. These amounted to \$592,000. See p. 166.

² This amount includes the sum of \$18,000 received from the post-office after 1783.

If we add to this table the State debts of \$18,271,000 we are able to account for the entire cost of the war as estimated on page 180.

(B) Revenues from 1784 to Hamilton's settlement of accounts.

| | |
|--|-------------|
| Receipts from taxes in specie, see p. 164..... | \$2,063,138 |
| Receipts from foreign loans, see p. 148..... | 2,296,000 |
| Miscellaneous receipts, see p. 169..... | 338,568 |
| Total receipts in specie..... | \$4,697,696 |
| Receipts from taxes in indents, p. 164..... | 2,371,154 |
| Public debt cancelled through receipts from lands, p. 170..... | 960,915 |
| Total receipts..... | \$8,029,765 |

CHAPTER V.

EXPENDITURES OF THE GOVERNMENT.

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

American State Papers, Finance, I. and V.; Bolles, *Financial History of the United States*, I. and II.; Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action Commune de la France et de l'Amérique*; *Diplomatic Correspondence of the American Revolution*, VI.; Elliot, *The Funding System*; Gallatin, *Writings*, III.; Hildreth, *History of the United States*, III.; Jefferson, *Works*, IX.; *Journals of Congress*; *Report of 1790*; Sumner, *Financier and the Finances of the American Revolution*.

It is extremely difficult to present any satisfactory statement of the expenditures of the United States during the period which we are discussing. We have none of the accounts of the government previous to 1781; and, after that date, the money expended in Europe is not included in the statement of treasury transactions. Moreover, the data which we are obliged to use are in some particulars conflicting; while the difficulty of ascertaining the specie value of the Continental paper money still further complicates our task.

From the point of view of expenditure, these fourteen years divide naturally into two periods. From 1775 to the end of 1783 the expenses of the government were on a war basis. After that time the war expenditures ceased, but Congress was obliged to carry the burden of a large domestic and foreign debt.

Section I.—Expenditures from 1775 to end of 1783.

Estimates of the cost of the Revolutionary War vary widely, both in methods and results. In 1786 Jefferson made the following computation:¹

| | |
|---|---------------|
| Specie value of the Continental currency..... | \$36,000,000 |
| Specie value of the State currency.... | 36,000,000 |
| Federal debt..... | 43,000,000 |
| State debts..... | 25,000,000 |
| Total..... | \$140,000,000 |

Mr. Hildreth has estimated the cost very differently:²

| | |
|---|---------------|
| Bills of credit..... | \$70,000,000 |
| Raised by States through taxes and re- pudiated State paper..... | 30,000,000 |
| Federal debt..... | 44,000,000 |
| State debts..... | 26,000,000 |
| Total..... | \$170,000,000 |

More valuable than either of these estimates is the following statement³ prepared by Hamilton at the request of Congress in 1790:

(A) Transactions at the Treasury.

| | Bills of credit. | New emissions. | Total trans- actions, specie value. |
|--------------------------|---------------------|-------------------|---|
| 1775 and 1776..... | \$20,064,666 | ..... | \$20,064,666 |
| 1777..... | 26,426,333 | ..... | 24,986,646 |
| 1778..... | 66,965,209 | ..... | 24,289,498 |
| 1779..... | 149,708,856 | ..... | 10,794,620 |
| 1780 ⁴ | 82,908,320 | \$891,236 | 3,000,000 |
| 1781..... | 11,408,005 | 1,179,249 | 1,942,465 |
| 1782..... | ..... | ..... | 3,632,745 |
| 1783..... | ..... | ..... | 3,226,583 |
| Total ⁵ | \$357,476,541 | \$2,070,485 | \$91,937,168 |

¹ Works, IX. 259, 260.

² History of United States, III. 445-443.

³ See Elliot, 10, 11; also Sumner, II. 132, 133.

⁴ In this year the finances were restored to a specie basis.

⁵ We have omitted Hamilton's figures for 1784, which fall outside of this period.

(B) Total Expenditures.

| | |
|---|---------------|
| Expenditures at the treasury..... | \$91,937,168 |
| Outstanding certificates of indebtedness..... | 16,708,009 |
| Expended in Europe..... | 5,000,000 |
| State debts..... | 21,000,000 |
| Total cost of war..... | \$134,645,177 |

In this statement Hamilton has undoubtedly followed the best method of computation. Jefferson left out of his estimate the receipts from taxes, while he overvalued the State issues of paper and the State debts. Hildreth overestimated the bills of credit. Hamilton's figures of the transactions at the treasury are too large, for he followed the official scale of depreciation adopted by Congress, which did not show the full amount of the depreciation.¹ If this one item could be corrected, however, his estimate would be very close to the truth.

The accounts of the expenditures at the treasury from 1781 to 1784 are given in the Report of 1790.² For these years also there are the estimates of the necessary expenses of government which were presented to Congress; also the appropriations made for 1782 and 1783.³ The adjoining table presents these statements. In it are included Hamilton's figures⁴ for the same years, since the Report of 1790 includes only a portion of the year 1781. It is interesting to notice how far the appropriations of Congress exceeded the actual expenditures which the government was able to make.

| | Estimates and appropriations. ⁵ | Expenditures in Report of 1790. | Hamilton's statement. |
|-----------|--|---------------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1781..... | \$16,213,000 | \$1,051,215 | \$1,942,465 |
| 1782..... | \$8,000,000 | \$3,632,745 | \$3,632,745 |
| 1783..... | \$8,000,000 | \$3,226,583 ⁶ | \$3,226,583 |

¹ See pp. 132, 133.

² Bankers' Magazine, 1800, 581-584.

³ See Journals of Congress for April 18, 1781; Oct. 30, 1781; Oct. 16, 1782.

⁴ See Elliot, Funding System, 10.

⁵ Exclusive of arrearages and interest on debt.

⁶ Exclusive of anticipations and repayments therefor.

The Report of 1790 does not include much of the money expended in Europe for foreign representatives and interest on the foreign debt. The items of expenditure given in the Report between February 20, 1781, and December 31, 1783, are as follows:¹

| Expenditures. | Feb. 20 to Dec. 31, 1781. | 1782. | 1783. |
|---|------------------------------|-------------|-------------|
| For the President's household..... | \$4,197 | 11,470 | \$9,277 |
| Expenses of Congress..... | 4,131 | 14,080 | 16,158 |
| Treasury department..... | 3,091 | 40,387 | 48,297 |
| Foreign office and officers..... | 928 | 45,614 | 35,798 |
| War department..... | 2,953 | 12,988 | 18,309 |
| Total civil list..... | \$15,301 | \$124,541 | 127,841 |
| Army..... | \$484,352 | \$2,153,364 | \$2,373,025 |
| Marine..... | 87,608 | 132,936 | 121,755 |
| Pensions, annuities and grants..... | 3,969 | 4,469 | 8,596 |
| Indian affairs..... | 121 | 562 | 1,243 |
| Contingencies and miscellaneous..... | 41,039 | 14,130 | 2,979 |
| Payments of old accounts..... | 115,196 | 188,965 | 51,191 |
| Repayments of loans, etc..... | | 1,013,775 | 536,950 |
| Repayment of anticipations of 1782..... | | | 380,360 |
| Total expenditures..... | \$747,500 | \$3,632,745 | \$3,606,943 |
| Balance..... | \$306,624 | | |
| Payments in excess of receipts..... | | 380,360 | 230,002 |

Following the method employed by Hamilton, and using the best materials obtainable, the following estimate has been made of the cost of the Revolution. In this the main effort has been to avoid the error made by Hamilton in overestimating the specie value of the expenditures in currency at the treasury. For this purpose separate tables are devoted to the years when the treasury transactions were carried on mainly in currency, and to those which followed the resumption of a specie basis early in 1780.

¹ We have excluded the column of cents from all except the totals.

In the following table are given Hamilton's estimate of the specie value of the total treasury transactions from 1775 to 1779, and his statement of the advances in bills of credit up to the year 1781.¹ Beside these figures are placed the amounts of paper money which, as ascertained by the result of these investigations, were received by the government from issues of bills of credit,² from domestic loans,³ and from taxes.⁴ It will be seen that the total receipts from these sources correspond very closely with Hamilton's statement of the amount of expenditures in currency. We may be certain that, from 1775 to the end of 1779, these advances of paper money represent substantially all of the transactions at the treasury, because the receipts of specie during that period were extremely small.⁵

| HAMILTON'S ESTIMATE. | | | AUTHOR'S ESTIMATE OF THE RECEIPTS IN BILLS OF CREDIT. | | |
|----------------------|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|---|---|--|
| | Total transactions in specie value. | Expenditures in bills of credit. | Emissions of bills of credit. | Taxes. | Domestic loans. |
| 1775 & 1776 | \$30,064,666 | \$30,064,666 | \$25,000,000 ⁶ | ..... | ..... |
| 1777... .. | \$24,986,646 | \$26,436,333 | \$13,000,000 | First requisition Nov. 22. | To Sept., 1777, \$3,787,000 |
| 1778..... | \$24,289,433 | \$26,965,369 | \$63,500,000 | Receipts only \$3,000,000 to Sept. 1779. See Jour., Sept. 13. | Sept. 1777 to March, 1778, \$3,459,000 |
| 1779..... | \$10,794,620 | \$149,703,856 | \$140,000,000 | | |
| 1780..... | | \$2,908,320 | | \$51,667,000 | After March, 1778, \$59,830,000 |
| 1781... .. | | \$11,408,095 | | . | |
| Total .. | \$80,135,370 | \$357,476,541 | \$241,500,100 | \$54,667,000 | \$67,076,000 |
| | | | Total, \$363,243,000 | | |

¹ See Elliot, 10, 11.

² See p. 130.

³ See p. 143.

⁴ See p. 153.

⁵ See p. 127; also Elliot, 10.

⁶ The \$5,000,000 authorized in December, 1776, was expended in 1777.

Now, since this account of the receipts of the government from the issues of paper, from taxes, and from loans agrees substantially with Hamilton's statement of the expenditures in currency, it will be possible to correct the error in Hamilton's estimate of the specie value of these advances at the treasury. We have already ascertained the value of these receipts, as follows:

| | |
|---|--------------|
| Receipts from paper money ¹ | \$37,800,000 |
| Receipts from taxes in bills of credit ² .. | 1,856,000 |
| Receipts from domestic loan in bills of credit of the old emission ³ | 11,472,000 |

Specie value of total receipts in
bills of old emission, ⁴..... \$51,128,000

This estimate of the specie value of the bills of credit received at the treasury represents nearly all of the expenditures of the government up to the end of 1779. But it also includes the sum of \$94,316,000 ⁵ of bills of the old emission expended in 1780 and 1781, after the finances were restored to a specie basis. The specie value of these bills must be deducted from the estimate of the total expenses in paper money, in order that we may ascertain the expenditures in specie from 1775 to 1779, inclusive. The depreciation ⁶ of the currency had gone so far by January, 1780, that one dollar of paper was worth less than three cents. By the beginning of 1781 the rate of depreciation was one hundred to one, and perhaps even more. ⁷ We shall, there-

¹ See pp. 136.

² See p. 158.

³ See pp. 143.

⁴ In estimating the specie value of the paper money care was taken not to overestimate it. Whatever error exists in the estimate is undoubtedly one of undervaluation. In the case of the receipts from taxes and from domestic loans it has been shown that the specie value has been overestimated through following the scale of depreciation established by Congress. It follows, therefore, that in the above table whatever error of undervaluation exists in the first item is partially, at least, counterbalanced by errors of overvaluation in the second and third items. The errors in the table, then, are not cumulative; and the total estimate must approximate the truth very closely.

⁵ See table above presented, p. 177.

⁶ See p. 133.

⁷ See State Papers, Finance, V. 766-774.

fore, not over-value the sum spent in those years if we assign to the paper expended in 1780 a depreciation of fifty to one, and to that advanced in 1781 a rate of one hundred to one. The result of such an estimate is as follows:

| | Amount. | Rate. | Specie value. |
|--------------------------------|--------------|----------|---------------|
| Currency expended in 1780..... | \$82,908,000 | 1 to 50 | \$1,658,000 |
| Currency expended in 1781..... | 11,408,000 | 1 to 100 | 114,000 |
| Total | \$94,316,000 | | \$1,772,000 |

Deducting, therefore, \$1,772,000 from the previous estimate, we get \$49,356,000 as the specie value of the paper money expended at the treasury previous to 1780.

During these years the only sources from which the government could have derived any revenues other than those included in this estimate, were the foreign loans and subsidies. But the sums obtained from loans prior to 1780 were less than a million dollars;¹ and much of this may have been expended in France without passing through the treasury. The amount of the gifts received from France and Spain was \$1,996,500.² A large part of this was received later than 1779, while a considerable portion was spent in France in purchasing military supplies. Therefore, although it is impossible to determine what sums of money came into the treasury from these sources, we may be certain that the amount was not large; and that the transactions in currency represent practically all of the expenditures at the treasury during these years.

The money expended at the treasury from 1781 to 1783 is stated by Hamilton as follows:³

| | |
|---------------|-------------|
| 1780. | \$3,000,000 |
| 1781. | 1,942,465 |
| 1782. | 3,632,745 |
| 1783. | 3,226,583 |

Total.....\$11,801,793

¹ See p. 147.

² See p. 166.

³ See Elliot, 10.

The amount stated for 1780 is evidently a mere estimate, and gives evidence of the confusion that existed in the accounts of the treasury. The figures for 1782 and 1783 agree with those found in the Report of 1790.¹

The final estimate of the cost of the war is given in the adjoining table.

| | |
|---|-------------------------|
| Expenditures at the treasury in specie value: | |
| 1775—1779..... | \$49,356,000 |
| 1780—1783..... | 11,801,000 |
| | Total..... |
| | \$61,157,000 |
| Expenditures in France ² | |
| Outstanding certificates of indebted- | \$5,000,000 |
| ness ² | 16,708,000 |
| State debts ³ | 18,271,000 |
| | Total expenditures..... |
| | \$101,136,000 |

In this statement the Continental bills of credit have been estimated at \$37,800,000. If, however, we value the paper money at \$41,000,000,⁴ we must increase slightly the estimate of the cost of the war. Thus the total expenditures may be placed at from \$101,136,000 to \$104,336,000.

With these figures it is interesting to compare the amounts expended by France and England in the prosecution of the war. In 1782 Vergennes told Lafayette that France had already expended 250,000,000 livres.⁵ The comptroller of the French treasury placed the yearly cost of the war to France at 60,000,000 livres.⁶ Prof. Sumner considers \$60,000,000 a fair estimate of the amount which France expended directly for the American cause.⁷ Sir John Sinclair states that the English debt increased dur-

¹ See p. 175.

² As given by Hamilton. See pp. 144, 147; Elliot, 10.

³ Hamilton gives these as \$21,000,000, following the amount given in the funding act. But when finally adjusted these debts amounted to only \$18,271,000. See p. 149; also Gallatin, Writings, III. Sketch of Finances, table XV; also Bolles, II. 37-39.

⁴ See p. 136.

⁵ Dip. Correspondence, VI. 470.

⁶ Circourt, III. 159.

⁷ Financier and Finances, II. 133.

ing the American war more than £ 121,000,000.¹ From this the government received £ 97,815,324 after deducting discounts and bonuses. Wilson estimates the cost of the war at £119,000,000,² and places the discounts and bonuses at thirty per cent. It seems clear that the sum spent by England largely exceeded the combined expenditures of France and the United States.

Section II.—Expenditures from 1784 to 1789.

A heavy burden of indebtedness, entailing large annual charges for interest, hung over the Confederation at the opening of 1784. As nearly as can be computed this debt stood as follows:

(A.) *Foreign Debt.*

| | |
|--|--------------------|
| Principal of French and Dutch loans ³ | \$7,830,517 |
| Balance for supplies ⁴ | 24,332 |
| Arrears of interest to 1784 ⁵ | 67,037 |
| Total | <u>\$7,921,886</u> |
| Annual interest charges ⁵ | \$375,000 |
| Amount overdrawn ⁶ | <u>\$350,000</u> |

(B.) *Domestic Debt.*⁷

| | |
|---|---------------------|
| Loan office debt ⁸ | \$11,585,000 |
| Outstanding certificates of indebtedness, unliquidated ⁹ | 16,708,000 |
| Total principal | <u>\$28,293,000</u> |
| Arrears of interest to 1784 ¹⁰ | \$3,109,000 |
| Annual interest charges ¹¹ | \$1,500,000 |
| Payments over receipts during 1783 ¹² | <u>\$230,300</u> |

¹ History of the Public Revenue, third edition, I. 471.

² The National Budget, 36.

³ See p. 147; also Bayley, 468.

⁴ See Bayley, 325.

⁵ See Journal of Congress, April 5, 1784.

⁶ See p. 147.

⁷ Compare this statement with Journal of Congress, April 5, 1784.

⁸ See p. 143.

⁹ See p. 144.

¹⁰ As nearly as can be computed from Journal, April 5, 1784.

¹¹ The estimates of interest vary from year to year as stated in the Journals.

¹² See Bankers' Magazine, 1800, 583; Report of 1790.

During this period, the inability of the government to meet its expenses led to an increase of the foreign indebtedness. Also the arrearages of interest on the domestic debt continued to accumulate, so that the year 1789 showed a great increase in the public debt.

The appropriations made by Congress for the running expenses of the government from 1784 to 1788 possess considerable interest. In round numbers they were as follows:¹

| | |
|--------------------------|--------------------|
| For service of 1784..... | \$457,000 |
| For service of 1785..... | 404,000 |
| For service of 1786..... | 446,000 |
| For service of 1787..... | 417,000 |
| For service of 1788..... | 326,000 |
| Total..... | <u>\$2,050,000</u> |

The adjoining table presents an analysis of the objects of expenditure included in these appropriations:

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------|
| For the civil list ² | \$631,000 |
| For the army and navy..... | \$882,000 |
| For Indian expenditures..... | \$91,000 |
| For geographer's department..... | \$22,000 |
| For pensions..... | \$146,000 |
| For contingencies..... | \$279,000 |

From the Report of 1790 we are able to ascertain the amount of money actually expended by the United States at the treasury from January, 1784, to September 12, 1789. The adjoining table shows these expenditures which have been classified under the four heads of repayments of anticipations on the revenues, payments for the ordinary service of government, payments for foreign interest, and payments for interest on the domestic debt. These domestic interest payments were made by drawing in through taxes the indents issued for arrears of interest. The repayments of anticipations have been separated from the other expenditures in order to avoid the error of counting these items twice. Of course the anticipations existing on January 1, 1784, must

¹ See Journals of Congress for each year.

² For use of this term, see p. 242, note 6.

be included in the total expenditures of this period, since they formed a deduction from the revenues of 1784.

Expenditures from 1784 to September 12, 1789, at the treasury.

| | Repayments of anticipations. | Ordinary service of government. | Interest on foreign debt. | Interest on domestic debt paid in indents. | Balances in treasury or deficits. |
|-------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------------------|---------------------------|--|-----------------------------------|
| 1784 | \$314,183 | \$525,359 | ..... | ..... | + \$18,440 |
| 1785..... | ..... | 880,618 | \$209,874 | ..... | + \$41,902 |
| 1786..... | ..... | 364,596 | 75,000 | \$38 895 | - 59,571 |
| 1787..... | 59,571 | 337,734 | 31,992 | 370.257 | - 105,815 |
| 1788..... | 105,815 | 307,964 | ..... | 1,033,999 | - 174,189 |
| 1789 (to Sept. 12.).... | 174,189 | 157,986 | ..... | 90,721 | - 189,906 |
| | | \$2,163,685 ¹ | \$316,865 49 | \$1,553,873 96 | |

A comparative table of the receipts and expenditures at the treasury during the years covered by the Report of 1790 gives the following results:

| EXPENDITURES. | | RECEIPTS. | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------|-------------------------------------|-------------|
| <i>In Specie.</i> | | <i>In Specie.</i> | |
| Anticipations previous to 1784..... | \$314,183 | From taxes | \$1,945,325 |
| Service of government..... | 2,163,685 | From bills of exchange | 333,117 |
| Interest on the foreign debt..... | 316,866 | From miscellaneous sources..... | 333,000 |
| Total in specie | \$2,794,734 | Total in specie..... | \$2,616,442 |
| Error..... | 11,614 | Deficit on Sept. 12, 1789..... | 189,906 |
| | | | \$2,806,348 |
| <i>In Indents.</i> | | <i>In Indents.</i> | |
| Interest on domestic debt..... | \$1,553,873 | From indents..... | \$1,541,163 |
| | | Error in accounts of year 1788..... | 12,000 |

The error of \$11,000 in the account of the specie transactions does not effect the general accuracy of this table.

¹ This includes \$25,825 spent in 1787 expressly for the foreign service, also some very small sums expended for salaries of foreign ministers.

The most careful examination has failed to show where the discrepancy has crept in. It may be due to slight errors or confusion in the original accounts. In the case of the indents there is certainly an error in the accounts for 1788, as the Report states that \$12,000 more indents were cancelled in that year than appear to have been paid into the treasury.¹ All the items included in this table under the head of expenditures have been taken from the table that immediately precedes. The account of the receipts has been taken from this same Report of 1790, and the individual items have been already given in the earlier chapters of this work.

The greater part of the European expenditures of the government does not appear in this statement of the treasury transactions. The only items so included are the payments for interest on the foreign debt and a few thousand dollars which are mentioned in 1784, 1786, and 1787 as expenses belonging to the European service.

But we have a report presented to Congress in 1788,² which gives among other things a statement of the receipts and expenditures in Europe from January 1, 1784, to April 1, 1788. In most particulars the figures of this report agree with the report of 1790, and from it has been compiled the following statement of the financial transactions in Europe during this period. In one or two cases Bayley's History of the National Loans has furnished additional materials. In this way an almost complete account of the foreign transactions has been secured up to April 1, 1788. Care has been taken to exclude any items of expenditure that may appear also in the accounts of the treasury.

¹ See Banker's Magazine, 1860, 589, 590.

² Journal of Congress, Sept. 30, 1788.

European expenditures not included in table of expenditures at the treasury.

| | Anticipations existing on Jan. 1, 1784 1. | Payments for interest on foreign debts. | Expenses of foreign service of the U. S. | Miscellaneous expenses. | Total expenses in Europe. |
|---|---|---|--|-------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1784 to April, 1785.... | \$350,000 | \$97,829 | \$119,825 | \$48,638 | ..... |
| April, 1785, to April, 1788.. .. . | ..... | 481,516 | 200,404 | 89,426 | ..... |
| | \$350,000 | \$549,386 20 | \$320,229 29 | \$138,064 80 | \$1,357,680 29 |
| Balance in favor of the U. S., April 1, 1788.. .. . | ..... | ..... | ..... | ..... | \$22,307 80 |

These expenditures in Europe were met by the proceeds of the foreign loans, and by a few small receipts from miscellaneous sources.² It must be remembered that from these same revenues came also the \$333,117 that was drawn into the national treasury by bills of exchange.³ The sums derived from foreign loans up to the end of 1788 amounted to \$1,896,000,⁴ a portion of which was received after April 1,⁵ the date given in the Journal of Congress.

The statistics already presented do not include any payments of foreign interest after April, 1788. Up to that time the payments had amounted to \$866,252, of which sum \$316,866⁶ had come from the national treasury, and \$549,386 had been drawn from funds held in Europe.⁷ But payments were made after that date, as is shown by Hamilton's Report on the Public Credit. In an indirect way we may be able to ascertain the expenditures for foreign interest up to the end of 1789:

¹ See Bayley, 311, 312.

² These are given in the Journal of Congress for Sept. 30, 1788. But the information contained in the report is not sufficient to enable us to ascertain the amount with any accuracy.

³ See p. 148.

⁴ See p. 148.

⁵ Bayley, 397.

⁶ P. 183.

⁷ See last table.

| | |
|---|-------------|
| Foreign interest accruing in 1784, 1785, 1786, 1787, 1788 ¹ | \$2,176,553 |
| Foreign interest accruing in 1789 ² | 542,599 |
| | <hr/> |
| Total interest accruing, 1784-1789.. | \$2,719,152 |
| Arrears of interest to end of 1789 ³ | \$1,640,071 |
| Arrears of interest previous to 1784 ⁴ ... | 67,037 |
| | <hr/> |
| Arrears between 1784 and 1789..... | \$1,573,034 |
| Interest accruing 1784-1789 | \$2,719,152 |
| Arrears of interest, 1784-1789..... | 1,573,034 |
| | <hr/> |
| Interest payments from 1784 to the end of 1789..... | \$1,146,118 |

We have seen that the payments up to April 1, 1788, were \$866,252. Therefore, the amount expended for that purpose between that date and the close of the year 1789 would appear to be \$279,866. This could have been met from the receipts from foreign loans after April, 1788, which were as follows:⁵

| | |
|------------------------------|----------|
| Balance of loan of 1787..... | \$66,000 |
| Loan of 1788..... | 400,000 |

These amounts would be sufficient to meet these interest payments and leave a balance of \$186,134, to which should be added the balance of \$22,307 existing on April 1, 1788.⁶

On the basis of the results already obtained there has been prepared the following table of the approximate receipts and expenditures during these closing years of the Confederation.

¹ Journal of Congress, August 20, 1788.

² Report on Public Credit, State Papers, Finance, I. 22.

³ Report on Public Credit, State Papers, Finance, I. 26.

⁴ Journal of Congress, April 5, 1784.

⁵ See Bayley's tables of the quarterly issues and redemptions of these loans, in his History of the National Loans, 397.

⁶ See p. 185.

| Expenditures, 1784-Sept., 1789. | Revenues, 1784-Sept., 1789. |
|--|---|
| Domestic expenditures, excluding interest on foreign debt, see p. 183..... | <i>In Specie.</i> |
| \$2,477,868 | From taxes, see p. 164..... |
| Foreign expenditures, excluding interest on foreign debt, see p. 185..... | \$1,945,825 |
| 808,993 | (This excludes the \$117,000 credited by Hamilton after September, 1789.) |
| Interest on foreign debt, see p. 186..... | From foreign loans, see p. 148..... |
| 1,146,118 | 2,296,000 |
| Total specie expenditures..... | From miscellaneous sources, see p. 169..... |
| \$4,432,979 | 398,568 |
| Unexpended balance of foreign loan, see p. 186..... | Total revenues in specie..... |
| Indefinite | \$4,579,893 |
| Domestic interest redeemed in indents, see p. 164..... | Deficit in Sept., 1789, at the national treasury, see p. 183..... |
| \$2,371,154 | 189,906 |
| Domestic debt cancelled by sales of public land, see pp. 170, 171.... | From taxes payable in indents, see p. 164..... |
| \$960,915 | \$2,371,154 |
| | Obligations paid in for public lands, p. 170..... |
| | \$960,915 |

These transactions may be summarized in the following manner: The expenses of government, domestic and foreign, had been about \$3,476,067, of which amount \$189,906 remained unpaid on September 12, 1789. The principal of the domestic debt had been decreased \$960,915 by the receipts from the public lands; while the arrears of interest had increased from \$3,109,000¹ to \$11,493,858 at the end of 1789,² in spite of the fact that \$2,371,000 of indents had been drawn in by taxes. The principal of the foreign debt had increased from \$7,830,517³ to \$10,098,707,⁴ while the arrears of foreign interest had grown from \$67,037⁵ to \$1,640,071⁶ at the end of 1789.

¹ See p. 181.

² See p. 145, note 5.

³ See p. 181.

⁴ See p. 143.

⁵ See p. 181.

⁶ See p. 143.

PART II.

THE FORMAL ORDERING OF THE FINANCES.

CHAPTER I.

THE ADMINISTRATION OF THE FINANCES.

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

Adams, *Public Debts; American Archives*; Bancroft, *History of the United States*, V.; Bastable, *Public Finance*; Bolles, *Financial History of the United States*, I.; Durand, *New Materials for the History of the American Revolution*; Guggenheimer, *Development of the Executive Departments*; Hamilton, *History of the Republic*; Hildreth, *History of the United States*, III.; *Historical Magazine*, VI., June, 1862; *Journals of Congress, 1775-1788*; Kapp, *Life of John Kalb*; Lewis, *History of the Bank of North America*; Lodge, *Alexander Hamilton*; Morse, *Benjamin Franklin, The Life of Alexander Hamilton*; *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society, 1862, 467*; Roosevelt, *Gouverneur Morris*; *Secret Journal of Congress*, II.; Sparks, *Diplomatic Correspondence of the American Revolution*; Sumner, *Financier and Finances of the American Revolution, Alexander Hamilton, Robert Morris*; Wharton, *Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States*, I.

In the field of finance it is especially true that skillful administration is as important as wise legislation. Perhaps no department of governmental business presents

greater difficulties than are offered in financial administration; and it was at this point that the Continental Congress committed some of its worst mistakes, and exhibited the greatest incompetency. During the larger part of the period under consideration, the administration of the national finances remained extremely weak and hopelessly inefficient.

The Congress of 1775 was hardly more than a consultative body, although compelled by the force of circumstances to exercise certain functions that partook of a national character. When Congress assumed control of the Continental army, issued paper money, and undertook the direction of foreign affairs, the necessity of delegating executive powers was at once manifest. But it is not at all strange that effective executive departments were not immediately formed. First of all, the Congress was regarded as a temporary body, assembled for a temporary purpose; and consequently no need for a permanent executive was at first experienced. This was changed when independence was declared, but a serious obstacle yet stood in the way of the development of executive departments. It was through the royal officials in the old colonial governments that the oppression of Great Britain had been most seriously felt, and a widespread distrust of all executive power had grown up in the colonies. This influence was strong in the Continental Congress, and it long delayed the establishment of effective departments for the conduct of the business of the government. Congress began by parcelling out executive functions among numerous committees, but was soon forced to concentrate authority in the hands of a number of boards. From these, in the course of time, unified executive departments developed; but we shall find this process to have been most difficult in the department of finance, where the jealousy of executive authority seems to have been most marked. In this ab-

sence of a unified, responsible administration lay one important source of financial disorders.

In the development of the department of finance an additional difficulty existed. In this direction the experience of the colonies previously to 1775 had been extremely limited. The financial transactions of the colonial governments had been small in amount, and of a simple and even primitive character. There were in America, therefore, no men skilled in the business of the financier; and it was necessary to commence at the very beginning and gain the experience necessary to the establishment of a sound system of national finance. It is not surprising, therefore, that at the outset Congress was unable to secure an efficient administration. But there is no excuse for its failure to do so later on when the way had been clearly pointed out, and it had found in Robert Morris an able financier.

When the first bills of credit were issued, Congress appointed two "Treasurers of the United colonies," to have charge of these funds. At the same time, also, the colonies were requested to choose colonial treasurers, for the purpose, evidently, of collecting the money to be raised for the purpose of sinking the emissions of paper. Two months later,² some difficulty having arisen concerning the settlement of certain accounts, a Committee of Accounts or Claims was formed, to "examine and report" on all accounts against the government. This committee adjusted accounts and reported to Congress the amounts due, whereupon payment was ordered. Early in 1776,³ as the government's financial transactions increased in importance, Congress created a

¹ July 29, 1775. Possibly South Carolina furnished a precedent for this appointment of two treasurers. In 1771 two joint treasurers were appointed in that colony. See Whitney, *Government of the Colony of South Carolina*, 46.

² Sept. 25.

³ Feb. 17.

standing committee of five members to superintend the conduct of the treasury. This body was the nucleus from which the treasury department finally developed. The committee was granted quite extensive powers. It was to examine the accounts of the treasurers, to employ proper persons for liquidating the public accounts, and to superintend the emission of bills of credit. Such were the first steps in the development of a system of financial administration.

This action was no sooner taken than expanding business necessitated an enlargement of the treasury establishment. The standing committee was authorized¹ to employ one or more clerks for keeping the public accounts, and to provide books and a suitable office for that purpose. Then the Treasury Office of Accounts was established.² At its head was an auditor-general who was to superintend the clerks and assistants employed to keep the public accounts. This office was placed under the control of the standing committee of five, which was thereafter known as the Treasury Board.³ During the following July⁴ the Committee on Claims was discharged, and its business turned over to the Office of Accounts. But special committees were continually employed even after these additions to the financial machinery of the government; also, from time to time, commissioners were appointed to audit and adjust special accounts that were likely to prove difficult to settle. Thus the structure of the department became more and more complicated.

Later in the year Congress voted to resort to a domestic loan, and opened loan offices in each of the States.⁵ The loan office receivers, besides securing loans and paying out interest money, soon came to exercise other func-

¹ Feb. 23, 1776.

² April 1.

³ In this year South Carolina placed its treasury department under the charge of three commissioners. See Whitney, *Government of the Colony of South Carolina*, 46.

⁴ July 30.

⁵ Oct. 3, 1776.

tions. In 1781¹ Congress provided for the appointment of other persons to act as receivers of taxes besides the loan officers; but in 1785² all such were discontinued, and the loan office receivers remained the only financial agents which the government had in the different States. Unfortunately, the duties of the loan office commissioners were not strictly defined until 1785,³ and consequently the business of the offices was poorly and loosely conducted.⁴ In some cases the greatest negligence and even fraud appeared. An example of the irresponsible methods employed is seen in the case of the indents, or certificates of indebtedness, issued from the offices after the government ceased to make payments of interest on the domestic debt. The practice of issuing these interest indents originated with the loan officers, and was continued in spite of the efforts of Morris to stop such a proceeding.⁵ In 1784⁶ Congress finally sanctioned the issue of indents by making them receivable in payment of taxes. No greater success seems to have attended the experiment with Continental receivers of taxes in 1781. Congress hoped that these receivers would prove more successful than the loan officers in collecting taxes. We have the record of Hamilton's efficiency as Continental receiver for the State of New York⁷ in 1782. But his case was exceptional,⁸ and Congress saw fit to discontinue the system in 1785. Not the least of the weaknesses in the financial administration lay in the methods of collecting requisitions and of conducting the business of the loan offices.

The treasury establishment was enlarged in 1777⁹ by the

¹ Nov. 2.

² April 15.

³ September 29 and 30.

⁴ See Sumner, *Financier*, II, 119-120; Bolles, I, 337-338.

⁵ See letters by Morris, *Dip. Correspondence*, XI, 483, 500; XII, 483, 488.

⁶ April 28.

⁷ See Lodge's *Hamilton*, 35; Morse's *Hamilton*, 75, 76; *Hamilton's History of the Republic*, II, 238 et seq.

⁸ Sumner, *Financier*, II, 73

⁹ March 13.

appointment of Commissioners of Claims to adjust accounts and hand them over to the auditor general by whom they were to be reported to Congress. The following year¹ saw provision made for a Continental treasurer of loans, who should have charge of the expanding credit operations of the United States. Shortly after,² Congress established a Standing Committee of Finance to consider the state of the national finances, and report from time to time. Robert Morris was chairman of this committee, which frequently reported to Congress on important matters.

Manifestly this system of administration was cumbersome and ineffective. Authority was so divided between the five members of the Treasury Board and the Committee of Finance that no responsible and unified management could be secured. Moreover, it was impossible for members of Congress to transact properly the business of the Board while attending to their legislative duties. All these defects were seen by Morris as early as 1776;³ and, later on, Hamilton called attention to the same thing.⁴ A partial realization of these difficulties led to the remodeling of the entire establishment in September, 1778.⁵ The act which accomplished this purpose gave to the department some degree of unity. It provided first of all that a building should be secured, in which the various officers of the treasury should be brought together. The treasury officials were to be a comptroller, who was authorized to appoint two clerks to assist him; an auditor, also authorized to appoint two clerks; a treasurer, who should appoint one clerk; and six commissioners of accounts, who were to be divided into two chambers of accounts, each chamber employing two clerks who should be appointed by Congress. It is interesting to notice that the comptroller, treasurer, and auditor were authorized to ap-

¹ July 15, 1778.

² August 27, 1778.

³ American Archives, Series V. III. 1341.

⁴ Hamilton's History of the Republic, II. 92, 93.

⁵ September 26.

point their own clerks, and were made responsible for their conduct.

The duties of all these officers and the forms of departmental procedure were quite minutely prescribed by this act. All accounts were to be first adjusted by the auditor, and then referred to the chambers of accounts for examination and correction. After this the accounts were to be re-examined and finally endorsed by the auditor, and forwarded to the comptroller. This officer, who kept the treasury books, was to file all accounts and vouchers in each case, and issue drafts on the treasurer for the amounts called for. After payment was made on these drafts, the treasurer was required to send the receipts to the comptroller's office; and also to turn over his accounts monthly to the auditor for examination. Finally the act sought to provide for a more regular system of reports, and for more effective means of securing the payment of all sums due to the United States. The Treasury Board was still retained as a general supervisory body and an intermediary between Congress and the officers of the treasury.

This act shows a great advance over the previous methods of financial administration. Not only have the titles of the more important treasury officials been retained to the present day, but the system of checks and balances here instituted is much the same as that now in operation between the different branches of our Treasury Department. Indeed it would be difficult to improve upon some of the leading features of this treasury establishment. The law of 1789, which established our present Department, owed much to this act of 1778 and to the subsequent modifications introduced in 1779 and 1781.

It was only a month after this that Congress invited Dr. Richard Price, the well known English financier, to come to this country and help to regulate the national finances.

¹ See Diplomatic Correspondence, III, 64. Also Adams, Public Debts, 251-202; Bancroft, V, 293; Ross, Sinking Funds, 12-13.

Through his essays on "Liberty" and on "Public Credit and National Debts," he had become well known in America; and there may have been reason for thinking that he would accept such an invitation. In this action Congress was probably influenced chiefly by Price's scheme for paying the English debt, by which a generation of Englishmen was deluded. But the invitation was declined by Dr. Price, who expressed, however, the assurance that he looked upon the United States "as now the hope . . . of mankind."

Within a year¹ Congress introduced radical changes into the administration of the treasury. The old Treasury Board was abolished, and the financial management was placed in the hands of Commissioners or Board of Treasury. The Board was to consist of five persons, and only two of these were to be members of Congress. Its members were given the general superintendence of all the financial transactions of the United States, and were placed in control of the treasury officials. The office of comptroller was abolished, but many of the features of the act of 1778 were retained. Six additional auditors were appointed for settling accounts and claims arising in the army, and they were required to reside in that part of the army to which they were assigned. This act was no real improvement over that of the previous year, and was nothing more than an attempt of Congress to secure an efficient administration without going to the length of placing the control of the treasury in the hands of a single man.

This Board of Treasury continued in office for about two years. Manifestly unity and responsibility were as conspicuously lacking in this as in former systems. To this attention was called by Hamilton in the letter to which reference has already been made.² The members of the Board were often incompetent, their methods of conducting

¹ July 30, 1779.

² See p. 193.

business were lax and roundabout, accounts were loosely kept, and the government was imposed upon in all directions.¹ After a while the conduct of the Board began to be much criticised, and finally great dissatisfaction arose. Congress was led to investigate the management of the treasury. In August and November, 1780, committees submitted reports on this subject.² Some internal disorders were discovered, and one of the committees was induced to recommend the removal of two members of the Board for "disgusting conduct." Certain irregularities also appeared, but there was no revelation of gross frauds. Many of the complaints seem to have been due to a lack of courtesy on the part of the Board and a disinclination to give full publicity to the transactions of the department. In May, 1781,³ another committee exonerated the officials from charges of this last character.

But whatever may have been the truth of these attacks on the integrity of the Board, it is nevertheless true that the inefficiency and laxity of the financial management had been almost incredible. For this, Congress, as well as the officials of the treasury, must be held responsible. A favorite method of making expenditures had been to place money in the hands of committees or of individuals to be expended for definite purposes. In many cases such moneys were never accounted for. No satisfactory returns were rendered for \$2,100,000 advanced to the Secret Committee of Congress previous to August, 1779.⁴ Many persons, even officers in the civil departments, refused to render any accounts.⁵ There was the greatest delay and confusion in the settlement of all business. Many accounts had been settled without any authority, or without proper vouchers. Mention is made of

¹ See Sumner, *Financier*, I 8; Bolles, I. 306.

² See Guggenheimer, 135-137.

³ See *Journal of Congress*, May 16, 1781.

⁴ *Journal of Congress*, Sept. 30, 1788.

⁵ Letter of Morris, *Sparks's Diplomatic Correspondence*, XII. 430.

two of these, amounting to \$500,000 in specie, concerning which an auditing committee appointed by Congress reported that it was doubtful if many of the claims there made against the United States had any solid foundation.¹ Letters by Morris point to similar conditions.²

Of the money expended in France the greater portion was never accounted for. The auditing committee of 1788 places this amount at about \$4,000,000. Silas Deane, one of the three commissioners sent to France, conducted financial matters most recklessly, and left only confused accounts. This was caused not by dishonesty on his part, but by extremely lax business methods. Deane was attacked by his enemies in Congress, and most unfairly treated; but the accounts left by him were never satisfactorily adjusted.³ After this, Franklin became the financial agent of the United States in France. Possessing, as he did, the confidence of the French government and the ability to secure loans and subsidies, the American cause depended almost solely on him during the critical years from 1779 to 1782. His character is a sufficient guarantee of the honest conduct of affairs during that time; but it is also the only one that we have. While he had always protested that he was not a business man, and not capable of keeping accounts, he nevertheless sought before he returned to America to obtain a settlement of his affairs. Congress neglected, however, to perform this simple act of justice; and no adjustment was ever secured.⁴ In 1782 Congress, at the suggestion of Morris, proceeded to make provision for the settlement of the European accounts; and finally despatched an agent to Europe on that mission.⁵

¹ Journal of Congress, Sept. 30, 1788.

² Sparks's Diplomatic Correspondence, XII. 442.

³ See Bolles, 227-233; Wharton, Diplomatic Correspondence, I. chap. XIV. The report of the committee that investigated Deane's affairs is to be found in Sparks's Diplomatic Correspondence, II. 162. It is partly unfair and colored by Arthur Lee's dislike of Deane.

⁴ See Morse's Franklin, 411, 412. On the whole subject, see Wharton's Diplomatic Correspondence of the Revolution, I. chap. X; Morse's Franklin, 305-351.

⁵ Journal of Congress, May 28, 29; Nov. 18, 20, 1782.

But this purpose was only partly fulfilled; and these transactions have always remained "involved in darkness," as was stated by the report of the committee of Congress in 1788.

The facts already presented show what confusion must have attended the transactions of the treasury. Hamilton, in 1790, was obliged to place the expenditures for 1780 at the round number of \$3,000,000,¹ which was evidently a mere estimate. Congress had constant difficulty in securing information concerning the exact condition of the treasury. At the same time public property was commonly misused and poorly cared for. Great waste arose in this way at the very time that the resources of the country were reduced to the lowest point. In the report of a committee of investigation from Valley Forge it is stated that the "property of the continent is dispersed over the whole country."²

In both methods and objects of expenditure the public moneys were oftentimes squandered. There was found everywhere the widespread corruption that so often attends the purchase of army supplies.³ Moreover, the expenditures were oftentimes conducted on a most extravagant scale;⁴ and this, too, in spite of the efforts made by Congress for retrenchment and reform. Also for a long period it was attempted to supply the army directly with specific supplies. Enormous waste was produced in this way;⁵ but, yet, it was only with great difficulty that Morris was allowed to institute the system of obtaining supplies by contract.

Finally, the business of the Board of Treasury was conducted with a slowness which precluded the possibility of an efficient administration. An example of this has been preserved in a letter of an acting quartermaster general of the army.⁷ This officer writes, "I am obliged for every de-

¹ Elliot, *Funding System*, 10.

² See Sumner's *Hamilton*, 86.

³ See Kapp, *Life of Kalb*, 143.

⁴ See Durand, *Materials for History of the Revolution*, 218, 219; Kapp's *Life of Kalb*, 140.

⁵ Sumner, *Financier*, I, chap. XI.

⁶ See Bolles, I, 283-285.

⁷ Quoted in Bolles, I, 306-307.

mand upon me to make a special application, and some times, although not commonly, I get some kind of an answer in the course of two or three weeks after applying. The 21st of June I sent an application on the estimate of Colonel Cox ; about ten days afterward I got a warrant for the sum; yesterday I got a letter of advice from the board to the treasurer, and to-day¹ I have got near one-fifth of the money. This movement, slow as it may seem has been pushed with uncommon assiduity, and with more than common success." In such methods lay an important cause of the financial weakness of the United States during the period of the Revolution.

In 1781 Congress finally proceeded to remodel all the executive departments, and to place a single head in charge of the business of each. This step had been postponed as long as possible, and was taken reluctantly in response to a strong popular demand for such a change.² The old administrative boards had been as inefficient as such bodies must generally prove for executive purposes. Affairs had come to such a pass that it was manifest that the old system of divided authority could not longer continue. Early in 1779³ Congress had instructed the Committee of Foreign Affairs to secure information concerning the executive departments of various foreign governments. But a delay of nearly two years ensued before the much needed changes were inaugurated.

Up to this time the development of the various administrative boards out of the early committees of Congress had proceeded largely according to the needs of each particular case, and without very much conscious attempt to pattern after foreign systems. It is true that the Boards of War, Treasury, and Admiralty, had derived something of their forms from analogous bodies that existed in England at that time; but it may be doubted whether more than the

¹ July 13, 1780.

² See Guggenheimer, 148-155.

³ Secret Journals of Congress, II. 130.

general conception of the system of board management was derived from this source. It also seems to be a fact that the Chambers of Accounts created in 1778 had their prototype in the French "Chambres des Comptes;" and that the title, if not the office, of comptroller was of French origin. But this is as far as foreign influence can be traced with any certainty.

But the inquiries into foreign systems which Congress instituted in 1779 make the case quite different when we come to the changes effected in 1781. Early in that year,¹ Congress resolved to appoint a Secretary of Foreign Affairs, a Secretary at War, a Secretary of Marine, and a Superintendent of Finance; and conferred upon these officials powers sufficient to enable them to control and shape the affairs of their departments. This was a step distinctly in advance of formal English development. It seems probable that, at this point, Congress was considerably influenced by the example of the French administration, in which the principle of unified executive authority was developed further than in England, or, perhaps, anywhere else.

In the department of finance this needed reform met with more opposition than in any of the others. There were many people who thought that such a step would endanger the liberty of America. This thought was expressed by one member of Congress, who in a letter² characterized a treasury department as, "at best a very dangerous affair to the liberties of the people." But on February 7, 1781, the office of Superintendent of Finance was created; and, a few days later, Robert Morris was called to fill the position. The Superintendent was given all the authority necessary to the proper conduct of the department. He was required to examine into the state of the finances, and to digest and report plans for their improvement; to execute all acts of Congress concerning

¹ January 10, February 7.

² See Sumner, *Financier*, II, 121.

revenue and expenditure; to superintend and control the settlement of public accounts and the expenditure of public money; and to have general direction of all the branches of his department. Then, as soon as Morris had gained time to mature his plans, a reorganization of the entire establishment followed. The office of treasurer of loans was first discontinued,¹ his duties being turned over to the treasurer of the United States. On September 11 the other changes were carried into effect. The officers of the treasury were to be an assistant superintendent, a comptroller, a register, and a treasurer, together with such auditors and clerks as should be necessary. The comptroller was given the duties of an auditor general; the position of the treasurer was not materially changed; and the register was to be, as he is today, the chief book-keeper of the treasury. These three officers and the auditors were to be appointed by Congress.

The administration of Morris marks a new era in the financial history of this period. His business experience, supplemented by the training that he had received while chairman of the Standing Committee of Finance, had admirably qualified him for the position of Superintendent. Moreover, his wide reputation and recognized ability enabled him to secure a large degree of independence in the execution of the powers entrusted to him. Congress finally authorized him to remove from office for just cause all officers of the treasury that were not appointed directly by Congress, and gave power to suspend all others pending an investigation of any charges preferred against them.² This was a matter which Morris considered a necessary condition of effective administration. Thus, for a time, Congress ceased to interfere in the purely administrative work of the treasury. Morris appointed to the position of Assistant Financier, Gouverneur Morris, from whom he subsequently received

¹ July 23, 1781.

² April 21, 1781.

important assistance.¹ Then, having matured comprehensive plans for the conduct of the national finances, the Financier, as he was commonly called, assumed the management of the treasury department.

The condition of the finances at this juncture was as critical as can well be imagined. The issues of paper money had long since been exhausted. With the disappearance of the old currency, the receipts from the loan offices gradually ceased. Taxes, with the exception of those which called for specific supplies, had yielded practically nothing for many months; and a considerable time was yet to elapse before Morris would be able to secure any revenue from this source. Thus the sole dependence of the treasury was the loans and subsidies which Franklin was still able to secure from the French government. The policy of Morris looked to the inauguration of a complete plan of constructive finance. First he desired an effective system of taxation, favoring federal taxes collected by the United States in the form of customs duties. Then he proposed to bring about a retrenchment in expenditure and a thorough reform in administration. Finally he sought to obtain further loans in Europe, which he regarded as necessary in order to meet the whole burden of war expenditure, and to tide the government over the interval that must elapse before his new plan for establishing domestic revenues could be set in operation.²

When Morris finally entered upon his duties in June, 1781, his only available resources were such bills of exchange as Congress was in the habit of drawing on the foreign envoys, without knowing whether any funds existed in Europe for meeting the bills. Almost immediately General Washington called upon the new Superintendent to find the means necessary to carry on the York-

¹ See Roosevelt's *Gouverneur Morris*, 103 et seq.; Sumner, *Financier*, I. 270; Sparks, *Gouverneur Morris*, I, chapters 13 and 14.

² In this account of Morris's administration our chief dependence has been upon the careful investigations of Prof. Sumner. Bolles has been consulted with some advantage.

town campaign. Morris was obliged to provide the army with transportation from the head of the Chesapeake, to advance a month's pay to the soldiers, and to forward specific supplies to points convenient for the expedition. By means of the most strenuous exertions he was enabled to meet these demands. Fortunately in August \$462,000 in specie arrived from France; and this sum in the careful hands of Morris was productive of the most important results. Thus through heroic efforts the campaign was brought to a successful termination. The total expenditures from February to December 31 were \$723,000, more than \$500,000 of which was devoted to the support of the army.¹

It is not possible within the necessary limits of this chapter to enter into the details of the work of Morris during the next three years. The most that can be done is to outline the general features of his administration. From the very beginning he endeavored to secure from the States a prompter compliance with the requisitions made by Congress. Constant appeals and statements of the weakness of the treasury were sent to the governors of the States. These entreaties were commonly neglected; but, in spite of all difficulties, after the middle of 1782 the receipts from the requisitions began to supply a considerable portion of the government's revenue. Morris appreciated, however, the weakness of the requisition system, and urged upon Congress and the States the establishment of federal import duties. All the influence that he could command was used to induce the States to grant this power to the general government. Besides urging the importance of taxation, Morris seized upon every possible expedient to increase the income of the treasury. He conducted commercial transactions on behalf of the United States, and engaged in other ventures which were hardly dignified undertakings for a Superintendent of Finance.²

¹ The Report of 1790, Bankers' Magazine, 1860.

² E. g. bill-kiting, see Sumner, *Financier*, I, 282-3; clipping coin, *ibidem*, II, 44-45.

While struggling to increase the national revenues, Morris sought with equal care to secure economy in the matter of expenditure. During his superintendency Congress was induced, as will be shown in the following chapters, to prepare the budget more promptly and carefully than at any other period in its history. After appropriations were once made, Morris manifested a determination to apply public moneys solely to the purposes contemplated by Congress.¹ How far he adhered to this intention it is impossible to ascertain; but it is clear that he alone of all the administrators of the treasury realized the evils that attend the transfer of appropriations and the diversion of public funds. In all departments of expenditure retrenchment was carried on, and numerous economies effected. Wasteful methods were changed, useless offices abolished, and the running expenses of the government largely reduced.² A comparison of the estimates of expenditures for 1781 and 1782 shows how successful Morris was in his efforts in this direction.³

Under the new regime the business of the treasury was conducted with a dispatch hitherto unknown. Every effort was made to secure a prompt settlement of the public accounts. Order was gradually introduced into the transactions of the department. Congress and the States were furnished with more exact information concerning the state of the finances, although publication of the quarterly reports of the treasury was deferred until 1785. In order to assist the government in its financial operations, Morris secured the consent of Congress to the establishment of a bank.⁴ This plan had been previously suggested by Hamilton, Gouverneur Morris, and perhaps others.⁵ Early

¹ See letter of Morris in *The Historical Magazine*, VI, 169.

² See Sumner, *Financier*, II, 107, for description of methods of treasury administration under Morris.

³ See p. 175.

⁴ *Journal of Congress*, May 26, Dec. 31, 1781.

⁵ On the establishment of the bank, see Sumner, *Financier*, II, chap. XVII; Lodge's *Hamilton*, 27; Morris's *Hamilton*, 69-73; Roosevelt's *Gouverneur Morris*, 103; Bolles, 273-275; Lewis, *Bank of North America*.

in 1782 the Bank of North America, incorporated both by Congress and the State of Pennsylvania, commenced operations which were based principally upon \$250,000 of public money which Morris had invested in subscription for its stock. After surmounting many difficulties, this institution rendered the government most valuable assistance. At different times during his administration, Morris borrowed from the bank \$1,249,000, while the United States received \$22,867 in dividends up to the time that its stock was surrendered in re-payment of money borrowed from the institution. For these loans, interest amounting to \$29,719, was paid.

The extent and variety of the duties which Morris was called upon to perform baffle all description. Never, perhaps, has a minister of finance carried on operations of a more miscellaneous character. There was certainly no branch of administration in which his influence was not felt. On several occasions he employed his well established personal credit to support that of the United States. This seems to have been the case with the notes amounting to over \$500,000 issued to the army at the time of its disbandment. By reducing the expenses of the government he was able to reduce gradually the number of notes outstanding; and to retire from office in November, 1784, with the assurance that all would be paid at maturity. There are numerous stories to the effect that he devoted large amounts of his own money to the public service. Thus he is said to have advanced \$1,500,000 toward the expense of the Yorktown campaign. But such statements have no basis in fact. In an account¹ which Morris rendered after the capture of Cornwallis, there is a record of \$12,000 which the Superintendent had advanced to the United States. But this is the only transaction of the sort that is evidenced by any of his accounts.

A final feature of Morris's work was his attempt to clear

¹ Sparks's Diplomatic Correspondence, XI. 433.

up the confusion which attended the greater part of the domestic indebtedness that had been contracted in the prosecution of the war. The loan offices early claimed his attention. Their operations had often been carelessly conducted, and Morris made constant efforts to secure from the loan office commissioners a settlement of their accounts. Then a large number of individuals held obligations that had been issued by military officials in payment for supplies purchased for the army. The liquidation of such claims was pushed forward as fast as possible, but the process of settlement was necessarily slow. Finally there had been no settlement of the accounts between the States and the general government. Some of the States claimed that they had already borne more than their fair proportion of the burdens of the war, and that it was unfair under such circumstances to expect them to make any further compliance with the requisitions ordered by Congress. To the adjustment of these accounts Morris devoted the greatest energy, but the difficulty of the work and the inaction of the State officials prevented the accomplishment of this design. While he endeavored to ascertain the exact condition of the public indebtedness, he also urged upon Congress the importance of funding this mass of debt, and of providing the means for its ultimate extinguishment. It was with this special purpose in view that he labored to have a system of federal imposts established. We have already seen how these efforts failed.

At the outset Congress manifested a desire to co-operate with Morris, and even consented to extend the sphere of his authority. But the Superintendent by his vigorous administration aroused bitter opposition in many localities. The States did not desire the establishment of any financial system that would have involved greater efforts on their part; and there soon arose the same factious contentions that frustrated so many of the best efforts exerted in behalf of an efficient national government. This feeling re-

acted upon Congress, which gradually withdrew its encouragement and active support. Personal enemies, prominent among whom were Arthur and William Lee, commenced a series of contemptible attacks upon the Financier, disparaging his administration, and charging him with having derived personal profit from his old position as a member of the Committee of Commerce.

At the opening of 1783 nothing had been done toward establishing the domestic revenues necessary to place the nation's finances upon a sound and honest basis. In spite of the careful management of the treasury, large expenses had been incurred in both of the preceding years; and the foreign indebtedness of the government had been increased. Perceiving that his plans for a permanent domestic revenue had failed, and that he no longer possessed the full support of Congress, Morris resigned his position as Superintendent.¹ In his letter to the President of Congress he said: "To increase our debts while the prospect of paying them diminishes, does not consist with my idea of integrity. I must therefore quit a situation which becomes utterly unsupportable."

But the army had not yet been paid, and no one but Morris could find a way of doing this. At the earnest entreaties of Congress, he consented to continue in office until some settlement could be effected and the army disbanded. As we have seen, the soldiers were partially paid by issuing notes, upon which Morris put his name in order to support the credit of the government.² After using him in this, the greatest service which the Financier rendered, his enemies resumed their attacks with a meanness which is hardly credible except to one who has become familiar with the asperities that attended the political controversies of that time. In November, 1784, Morris finally retired from his position, having made provision for the redemption of all the notes issued to the army.

¹ January 24, 1783. See Sparks's *Diplomatic Correspondence*, XII, 326.

² See Bancroft, VI, 82.

On June 17, 1783, a committee appointed by Congress "to enquire fully into the proceedings of the office of finance," submitted a report on the subject of Morris's administration of the treasury. One member of this committee was Arthur Lee, a most cordial hater of the Superintendent; and at least one of the others bore him no good will. Yet the committee was obliged to report that "it appears that the business of that office has been conducted with ability and assiduity, in a manner highly advantageous to the United States, and in conformity with the system laid down by Congress." It was also found that "since the appointment of the superintendent of finance, the public accounts of receipts and expenditures have been regularly and punctually kept; and that many of the accounts which preceded this institution have already been settled, and most of the others put into a train of adjustment. That all persons who have been entrusted with public money, under the present appointment have been regularly called upon for an account of its expenditure, and that their accounts have all been furnished, excepting only the quartermaster general," and some few others. Further, it is stated that, after comparison of Morris's accounts with those of earlier years, it appeared "that the order and economy which has been introduced since the establishment of this office, has been attended with great savings of public money, as well as many other beneficial consequences." Among other reforms the committee found "that in the department of commissary of issues no less than two hundred and fifty persons were discharged, whose pay amounted to \$126,300 per annum. That in one instance a demand was made for one thousand tons of hay for the post of Philadelphia, of which ten tons only were granted. The residue being rendered unnecessary by the new arrangement."

In view of all the attacks which were made upon Morris, it may be well to present one other piece of testimony,

which comes from a member of Congress who was thoroughly opposed to the Superintendent.¹ The member expressed himself in the following words, "I will tell you very freely that I am clearly of the opinion that, in mere money transactions, he has saved the United States a very large sum. I am of that sentiment, because a comparison of expenditures shows, that, since he has been in office, the expenditures have not amounted annually to half so much as they did before. I am also of opinion that much more regularity has been introduced in keeping the accounts than ever existed before. . . . I lay it down as a good general maxim, that, when a person is to be attacked, it is wise not to endeavor to depreciate his real merit; because this puts into his hands an advantage. If he can clearly exculpate himself in part, it renders that which is really true liable to suspicion, and consequently less efficacious. If you suppose that person (Morris) has rendered the public no valuable services, I acknowledge that there is a very considerable difference in our sentiments. If you suppose that he may have rendered valuable services, but that his notions of government, of finance, and of commerce, are incompatible with liberty, we shall not differ. I think, therefore, that the fort to be raised against him ought to stand on this ground, if, in urging his dismissal, or rather a new arrangement of the office, it shall become necessary to be personal. But I hope it will be generally agreed, that, if it was necessary to create an omnipotent financier in 1781, that necessity does not exist now."²

A few months³ previous to this final retirement of

¹ See letter of Samuel Osgood, Feb. 2, 1784. This is contained in the Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, 1862, 467.

² All the evidence bears out the conclusion that the charges brought against Morris's administration of the treasury were entirely groundless. The same is true of most of the other accusations relating to his conduct as agent of the State of Pennsylvania, and as a member of the early Committee of Commerce. Prof. Sumner finds on the books of the United States Treasury one account which shows a balance of \$93,312 against Morris. This the Financier explained as due to a wrong method of charging depreciations. See Sumner, *Financier*, II. chapt. 29; Sumner, *Robert Morris*, chap. 6.

³ May 27, 28, 1784.

Morris, the powers which had been entrusted to the Superintendent were again placed in commission, by the creation of a new Board of Treasury, consisting of three members. Considerable difficulty was experienced in finding suitable persons that were willing to take the position.¹ For several months after the retirement of Morris, the affairs of the treasury were conducted by the comptroller; and not until the middle of 1785 did the new Board of Treasury assume the direction of the department. The administration of this body furnishes nothing of any interest, its chief work being the adjustment of the tangled accounts of the Revolutionary period. It had become evident that, with the failure of the attempt to establish national revenues, the government of the Confederation was wholly unable to improve the condition of the national finances. Thus the Treasury Board had no stimulus to energetic action. In much the same way as the former Boards, it continued to administer the affairs of the department until succeeded by Hamilton in September, 1789.

The action of Congress in placing the department again in commission was a victory for the opponents of Morris and for the advocates of the system of board management. But there were many who recognized the real reasons for the apparent failure of the Financier, and the country did not lose the benefit of its experience under a capable minister of finance. In 1789 the question was fought out for the last time, and the department of finance was finally given a single head.

¹ See Journal of Congress, June 3, Nov. 30, Dec. 10, 1784; Jan. 25, April 1, 1785.

CHAPTER II.

THE BUDGET AND THE HISTORY OF BUDGETARY METHODS

Section I.—Historical Introduction.

The financial activity of the state centers around the receipt and expenditure of public money. In order to secure stability, there must be a constant adjustment of one line of activity to the other; and financial equilibrium must be constantly preserved by a formal ordering of revenue and supply. The accomplishment of this result involves, first, the ascertainment of the necessary objects and amounts of public expenditure; second, the determination of the methods to be employed in raising the needed money; and third, appropriate organs for collecting and applying the supplies devoted to the public service.

In modern representative governments the legislative departments have assumed final authority in the decision of questions of revenue and supply. The word budget has been used to designate the legislative enactment by which public revenues are determined and appropriations fixed for a definite period of time, usually a year.¹ Such a procedure implies, first, a preliminary estimate of necessary expenses and probable revenues; and second, a law authorizing the necessary forms and amounts of expenditures and taxes. At least, this is the case wherever perfect unity is realized in budgetary procedure.² Manifestly

¹ For a discussion of the scientific meaning of the word budget, see Stourm, *Le Budget*, chapter I, section 1. The term was first used in England about 1760 to designate the annual financial statement. See Dowell, *History of Taxation in England*, II. 169; Bastable, *Public Finance*, 468; Roscher, *Finanzwissenschaft*, sec. 150, note 1.

² On the subject of the budget see Bastable, *Public Finance*, Bk. VI., chaps. II. and III.; Leroy Beaulieu, *Science des Finances*, II. 1-191; Cohn, *Finanzwissenschaft*, secs. 170, 171; Jellinek, "Budgetrecht" in *Handwörterbuch der Staatswissenschaften*, II. 774; Roscher

some such preliminary estimate of income and expenses, and such an adjustment of resources to demands is an absolute necessity for any large public economy. Without it, adequate provision cannot be made for all the public wants; and there can be no coördination of revenue and expenditure.

But, if legislative authority is to be a reality in these matters, this preliminary determination of revenue and supply must be supplemented by effective checks on the collection and issue of money, and by the right to inquire into the actual application of all public funds. Such methods of control and audit are a necessary part of any system of legislative control of the finances. Of this more will be said in another chapter.

The term budget is one that has been but little used in the United States in the discussion of our national finances. This is, perhaps, due to the fact that the separate legislative management of the expense and revenue sides of our federal budget has destroyed that appearance of unity which characterizes the methods of those foreign countries in which the word is commonly used. Indeed, it is possible by a process of strict definition to deny that budget is a proper term to apply to the series of separate acts by which Congress each year deals with the question of federal revenue and supply.

It seems desirable, however, to use the term in the discussion of our national finances. In so doing we are in accord with the usage of other countries; while, at the same time, we are reminded that there is after all a fundamental connection between our separated revenue and appropriation laws. Formal unity is, of course, lacking in our present budgetary methods; but that is no reason for not employing the word budget, in a broad sense, to designate the entire

Finanzwissenschaft, secs. 53, 150, 151; Schantz, "Budget," in *Handwörterbuch*, II, 758; Stein, *Finanzwissenschaft*, I, 200 et seq.; Stourm, *Le Budget*; Umpfenbach, *Finanzwissenschaft*, 489 et seq.; Wagner, *Finanzwissenschaft*, I, 219-252, also in Schönberg's *Handbuch der Politischen Oekonomie*, III, 532 et seq.

process by which measures for our federal revenues and appropriations are prepared and enacted. Such is the sense in which the term will be employed.

Modern budgetary methods originated in England, where, nearly a century before our Continental Congress met, an effective budget system had been finally established. It will not be necessary to treat of the early stages of this development; but it is desirable to refer to the history of the English budget after the Revolution of 1688.¹

This Revolution, ending a struggle that had colored English history for several centuries, finally established parliamentary supervision and control of the finances, as of other branches of the government. Parliament instituted the system of annual appropriations for the public service. These were based upon estimates presented on the responsibility of the ministers, and specified both the objects and amounts of expenditure for the ensuing year. At the same time, the supplies for the royal household, the personal expenses of the king, and for the payment of pensions and certain civil offices, were separated from the rest of the expenditures and brought together into the "Civil List."² The various branches of expenditure were then assigned as charges on the permanent revenues of the government, and additional taxes were imposed whenever required to meet the expenses of any year. Thus the public revenues were devoted only to such purposes as Parliament should sanction, while there was secured a unified regulation and more accurate adjustment of receipts and expenditures.

The development of cabinet government brought the details of all financial transactions before the House of Com-

¹ For the history of taxation and appropriations before this date see Wilson, *The National Budget*, chap. I.; Stubbs, *Constitutional History of England*, II. sec. 274, III. secs. 370, 371, 437, 438; Bastable, *Public Finance*, 643-644; Gneist, *History of the English Constitution*, II. 4 et seq., 150, 240, 293 et seq.; Roscher, *Finanzwissenschaft*, sec. 53.

² See Dowell, *History of Taxation in England*, II. 40-44; Macaulay, *History of England*, V. 355-358; May, *Constitutional History of England*, I. 193 et seq.; Todd, *Parliamentary Government*, I. 349, 350; Wilson, *The National Budget*, chap. VI.

mons, which had already established its superiority to the House of Lords in the matter of money bills. In this process the financial estimates and statements of the ministry developed into what was known as the budget, and intricate rules of parliamentary procedure were gradually adopted. Such was the form which English budgetary methods had assumed at the end of the eighteenth century.¹

*Section II.—Revenue and Supply in the American Colonies.*²

In order to understand the circumstances under which the Continental Congress evolved a budget system, it is necessary to refer to the experience of the individual colonies in their efforts to develop systems of revenue and supply. It is not within the scope of this essay to undertake any exhaustive presentation of this early budgetary history. Indeed, a vast amount of investigation into the subject of colonial finance will yet be required, before such a complete treatment will be made possible. It will suffice, however, for the purpose to draw from the most important secondary and the more accessible original sources a brief account of the development of budgetary principles in the thirteen colonies.

(A) *The Separation of Powers.*

Through the varying, yet similar, processes by which representative governments were instituted in each of the original colonies, nothing stands out with greater distinct-

¹ For the present English budget system, see, Blackstone, Commentaries, I. Bk. I. chapters II. and VIII.; Buxton, "Budget," in Palgrave's Dictionary of Political Economy; Gneist, *Englisches Verwaltungsrecht*, I. 431; May, *Parliamentary Law and Practice*, chap. XXII.; Jellinek, "Budgetrecht," in *Handwörterbuch der Staatswissenschaften*, II. 775-777; Spofford, "Budget," in *Lalor's Cyclopaedia of Political Science*, II. 318; Todd, *Parliamentary Government*, I. 689-825; A. J. Wilson, *The National Budget*, chap. VI.; Woodrow Wilson, *Congressional Government*, 137 et seq. For other European countries, see Leroy Beaulieu, II.; Stourm, *Le Budget*; Czoernig, *Darstellung der Einrichtungen über Budget*; Jellinek, "Budgetrecht," in *Handwörterbuch*, II. 777-787; *Proceedings of the Cobden Club*, 1874; U. S. Consular Reports, No. 90, March, 1888; Spofford, "Budget," in *Lalor's Cyclopaedia*.

² For a list of the authorities referred to on this subject see the general bibliography, p. 271 et seq.

ness than the persistence and success with which the colonists insisted upon the right of their legislative assemblies to direct the finances. This side of colonial history is so familiar, that we can assume the facts of the separation of powers and the establishment of legislative control of the finances. In the following pages attention will be confined chiefly to a consideration of the formal methods of legislative procedure in budgetary questions.

(B) *Legislative Control of Revenue.*

While other forms of revenue existed,¹ taxes became more and more important in colonial budgets as the country developed, and as the colonial wars necessitated a heavy increase of public expenditures. This discussion, therefore, may safely be confined to the revenues derived from taxation, direct and indirect.

From the first, the colonists appreciated the fact that legislative control of taxation could be made effectual only by limiting the operation of tax laws to short periods of time. Over this subject arose some of the earliest conflicts between the royal, or proprietary, officials and the colonial assemblies. Direct taxes were regularly limited to a short period, while the indirect were restricted, but not so sharply.² In Massachusetts and New York, however, even the indirect taxes were continued from year to year by a constant re-enactment. Thus the governments were left without permanent sources of revenue, and legislative authority was insured.

Some of the earliest attempts to control the application of revenues arose in connection with acts for levying taxes. The assemblies frequently specified the purposes

¹ Ely, *Taxation*, 107 et seq.; Douglas, *Massachusetts*, chaps. III. and IV.; Ripley, *Virginia*, secs. 50, 106.

² Colonial history offers such abundant illustration of this that we need not refer to many special works on the subject. See Lodge's *American Colonies*; Douglas, *Financial History of Massachusetts*; Ripley, *Financial History of Virginia*; Schwab, *New York Property Tax*.

for which the taxes were imposed. This specialization of funds was often of such a general character as to prevent the realization of the purpose in view.¹ But, in other cases, taxes were levied for such special purposes as the salary of a governor, the construction of lighthouses, fortifications, etc. In Virginia taxes were pledged for the payment of public debts, and appropriated to that end, "and to no other use or purpose whatsoever."²

(C) *Legislative Control of Appropriations.*

As we have seen, the earliest method of controlling the expenditure of public funds was that of specifying in the tax laws the object for which taxes were to be raised. But this amounted to nothing more than the appropriation of lump sums for the general purposes of government, and left to the legislature little actual voice in the disposal of public moneys. Accordingly, we find in the colonies, at an early period, a movement in the direction of making supply bills specific in character, and of restricting their operation to a short period.

This is well illustrated in the history of New York. Some of the most bitter struggles of the eighteenth century in that colony centered around the efforts of the Assembly to limit the operation of supply bills to the space of one year, and to make the appropriations specific both in objects and amounts.³

In South Carolina, after 1721, the various tax laws contained "long appropriation clauses appropriating every penny raised to some specific object."⁴ To refer to the experience of other colonies would be but to multiply examples of the same character. These may perhaps be most

¹ In Massachusetts, for example, the first taxes after the provincial charter of 1691 were laid "for the defense of his Majesty's subjects and interests." See Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts, I., session of 1692.

² Hening, Statutes at Large, VIII, 650, March, 1773.

³ See North, in Magazine of American History, 1879, 165, et seq.; Roberts, New York, 287; Smith, Hist. of New York, 433; Bancroft, II, 400.

⁴ Whitney, Government of the Colony of South Carolina, 96.

conveniently found in Massachusetts, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and Virginia.¹

The struggle for the limitation of the objects and amounts of appropriations arose oftentimes in connection with the salaries of the governors and other officials. This was especially true in Massachusetts, where the legislature even went so far as to reduce arbitrarily the salary of the governor, as a means of punishing that officer.² In New York we have an interesting message³ by Governor Clinton on this same subject. The royal governors continually recommended that England should create funds for the maintenance of royal officials in the colonies; and the desire to do this was one of the reasons for the final attempts to tax America.⁴ But the colonies perceived clearly the issue involved. Having found that the control over supplies was the most effective safeguard against encroachments by the royal officials, they were ready to resist to the utmost the attempt to establish in America a civil list independent of the grants of the colonial assemblies.⁵

Partly from opposition to the governor, and partly from unwillingness to raise the necessary taxes, the assemblies not infrequently refused to make adequate provision for the support of government. Perhaps North Carolina furnishes the most notorious instances of this sort.⁶ In Connecticut the salaries of the governor and other leading officials were dependent upon semi-annual appropriations, which is probably the shortest limit placed upon salary grants in any of the colonies.⁷

¹ Further reference will be made to Massachusetts in the following pages. For Pennsylvania, see Bancroft, II. 25, 26, 27; Gordon, 315, 386, 392; Franklin's Historical Review of Pennsylvania, 32; Minutes of the Provincial Council, I. 457, 468 et seq. For New Jersey, see Bancroft, II. 34; Crowell, 21. For Virginia, see Ripley, 95, 97, 99. For Maryland, see Scharf, II., 121, et seq.

² See Bancroft, II. 68, 69, 246; Felt, History of Taxation in Massachusetts.

³ Journals of the Legislative Council, 1022.

⁴ See Bancroft, II. 246, 247, 334, 350-351, 383 et seq.; Fiske, American Revolution, chap. I.

⁵ See Bancroft, II. 330, 350; III. 415, 416.

⁶ See Bancroft, II. 256, 341. See also the case of Pennsylvania, Bancroft, II. 571-572; III. 91.

⁷ See Public Records of Connecticut, 1771. XIII. 502, 566.

Toward the close of the colonial period legislative control of appropriations had become so well established, that the conditions existing in all the colonies correspond very closely with those depicted by Mr. Smith in his description of the state of government in New York.¹ Smith's words are as follows: "It will be seen that the democrattick branch of the colonial government had placed the governor, and almost every other officer, in a state of dependence upon its votes and measures. Not a single shilling could be withdrawn from the treasury, but by legislative consent. This was particularly galling to the lieutenant governor. It had stripped him of that executive patronage and influence, which was deemed by him so essential to the support of his administration. In truth, it was a great step towards that independence which was afterward obtained."

(B) *Restrictions on Transfers and Diversions of Appropriations.*

The strictest specification of the objects and amounts of expenditure will not, in itself, secure the application of all public funds in accordance with the will of the legislature. Money may be expended for purposes not strictly contemplated in the original appropriations; while unexpended balances are always arising so as to furnish an easy means of evading the specific provisions of appropriation laws. Such difficulties met the people of the colonies in their attempts to control expenditures, and became the subjects of special legislation.

In Virginia the desire to control the application of public moneys caused the legislature, as early as 1695, to appoint a treasurer who should be accountable to the House of Burgesses alone.² This officer was thus independent of the colonial agents of the Crown; and through him the Burgesses were able to control the administration of the finances. His duties came to be strictly prescribed, and he was required to give bonds for the faithful performance of his

¹ Smith, New York, 445.

² See Ripley, Financial History of Virginia, 102-103.

work.¹ Warrants for the payment of money were to be issued only in accordance with the acts of the General Assembly.

New York went still further.² The Assembly early gained control over all the officers charged with the collection and disbursement of the revenues of the colony, as did the Virginia House of Burgesses.³ This was accomplished by naming the occupant of each office in the act appropriating money for salaries. But a further step was taken at an early date. The Assembly resolved that the payment of any money by the treasurer before the passage of specific acts for its appropriation should be deemed a misapplication of funds, for which that officer should be held accountable.⁴ In subsequent acts the treasurer's accountability was further emphasized, as in the general appropriation bills of 1774 and 1775,⁵ by which the treasurer was instructed to account to the governor, the Council, and the Assembly for all payments made under the authority of those acts. In the appropriation bill of this last year all unexpended balances remaining in the treasurer's hands were specially appropriated for the support of the government.⁶

Massachusetts, also, provided restrictions of this same character. The general appropriation acts of the province specified the objects and amounts of expenditure, and then contained a general requirement that money should be expended "for no other purposes whatsoever."⁷ But of greater interest is a provision of the appropriation of 1733.⁸ This law required that all balances of appropriations arising un-

¹ See Hening, *Statutes at Large*, VI, 249.

² See *Magazine of American History*, III, 168.

³ Cf. also Pennsylvania. *Franklin's Historical Review*, 32; *Minutes of the Provincial Council*, I, 457.

⁴ *Smith*, 424.

⁵ *Laws of N. Y., 1774-1775*, 61 et seq., 94 et seq.

⁶ Compare also the cases of Pennsylvania and South Carolina. See *Franklin's Historical Review of Pennsylvania*, 32; *Minutes of the Provincial Council of Pennsylvania*, I, 457; *Whitney's Government of the Colony of South Carolina*, 45, 46.

⁷ *Acts and Resolves*, V, 108.

⁸ *Acts and Resolves*, II, 693.

der the act should lie in the treasury for the further order of the General Court.

(E) *Superior Powers of the Lower Branch of the Legislature in Budgetary Questions.*

From an early date in colonial history the lower houses of the colonial assemblies claimed in the matter of money bills superior authority over the upper. How far this was a mere reflection of the relations existing between the two Houses of the English Parliament, it is not easy to ascertain. But it is certain that in many cases a difference in the constitution of the two branches of the colonial assemblies, or a difference in the interests of the two bodies, is a sufficient explanation of the assertion of the superior powers of the lower house. The upper house was more subject to the influences of the proprietors or of the royal governors in many of the colonies. In Massachusetts, where both houses had a basis in election, it was found that the upper and smaller body oftentimes sided with the royal governors in disputes over financial questions. This was in many cases due to the fact that the position of the governor was sounder and wiser than that of the people's representatives; and it was not caused invariably by sinister influences exercised on the upper house. On the whole, it seems fairer to attribute to such causes the greater influence on this differentiation of the powers of the two branches of the legislature.

In Massachusetts, during the eighteenth century, disputes arose in the legislature over the right of the Council to make amendments to tax bills. An instance of this sort arose in 1746 when the House forced the Council to yield its claim to the right of amending such measures.¹ Much interest attaches to a resolution adopted by the House on this occasion; "it is very surprising that the honorable Board should in their vote of this day begin a grant of a

¹ See Felt, *Statistics of Taxation in Massachusetts*, 324, 325.

great expense to this Province; for how reasonable soever the particulars noted may be, yet the House apprehend such grants should always originate with the people, who are at the cost of them." In such questions the superior powers of the lower house became finally established by the first State constitution of 1780.¹ Here it was provided that, "All money bills shall originate in the house of representatives; but the senate may propose or concur with amendments, as on other bills." It was this particular clause which served as the model for the similar provision of our federal Constitution.²

The New York Assembly, at an early period, asserted a claim to superior power in questions of money bills.³ The controversy on this subject seems to have lasted for some time; but no restriction was placed on the power of the Senate to originate or amend money bills in the first constitution adopted in 1777. In Pennsylvania the existence of a uni-cameral legislature prevented this question from making an appearance. But, in 1755, when the governor ventured to prepare a tax law, the Assembly protested that the executive "neither could nor ought to *propose* a money bill."⁴

During the colonial period of New Jersey's history, the principle was established that the initiative in taxation lay with the representatives of the people, and not with the proprietary body or the governor.⁵ The State constitution of 1776 prohibited the upper house of the legislature from preparing or altering any money bill.⁶ In Maryland bitter contests had taken place between the two branches of the legislature on the subject of supply bills,⁷ and the constitu-

¹ Poore, Charters and Constitutions, I, 964.

² See Gilpin, Madison Papers, 1530-1531.

³ See Magazine of American History, III, 169; Journals of the Legislative Council, 1705, 1754.

⁴ Gordon's Pennsylvania, 315; Franklin, Historical Review, 144, 391.

⁵ Crowell, Taxation in New Jersey, 21; Mulford, History of New Jersey, 351, 353.

⁶ Poore, II, 1310.

⁷ Scharf, Hist. of Maryland, II, 12 5; McMahon, Hist. of Maryland, 297 et seq.

tion of 1776 restricted the powers of the upper house in this particular.¹

In North Carolina the lower house of the legislature seems to have possessed, at an early date, the power of passing money bills without the necessity of concurrence by the upper.² But no provision of this sort appears in the first constitution adopted by the State in 1776.³ In the legislature of South Carolina the lower house, as early as 1689, claimed the exclusive right of originating money bills, and refused to allow the upper house to amend them.⁴ At a later date all bills originated in the lower house.⁵ From 1771 to 1775 legislation was practically suspended in the colony owing to a deadlock between the lower house and the governor and Council, on account of the refusal of the lower house to expunge an obnoxious clause in a tax bill.⁶ Accordingly we are not surprised to find the power of the upper branch of the legislature limited by the provisions of the constitution of 1776.⁷

Of the other States,⁸ New Hampshire, Delaware, and Virginia restricted by constitutional provisions the powers of the upper house in the matter of money bills. The first constitutions of Pennsylvania and Georgia provided for a legislature having but a single branch, while Rhode Island and Connecticut lived on under their old charters for many years. Thus this principle was embodied in seven of the nine constitutions first adopted in States that had a bi-cameral legislature. In some of these States the upper house was prohibited from amending, as well as from originating money bills; while in others the exclusive privilege of the lower branch consisted simply in the right to originate such measures.

¹ Poore, I. 817.

² Basset, *Constitutional Beginnings of North Carolina*, 64.

³ Poore, II. 1409.

⁴ Whitney, *Government of the Colony of South Carolina*, 48.

⁵ *Ibid.*, 52.

⁶ Ramsay, *History of South Carolina*, II. 131-132.

⁷ Poore, II. 1615.

⁸ See Poore.

In the Federal Convention of 1787, after a long struggle, restrictions were placed on the right of the Senate to originate money bills.¹ From the debates in that body we learn that this privilege of the lower house was the cause of serious contentions between the two branches of the legislatures of those States in which such a restriction was made.² One of the opponents of the proposition to place such a clause in the Constitution ventured the opinion that, "These clauses in the constitutions of the States had been put in through a blind adherence to the British model."³ But these investigations have shown that such was not the case. The restrictions appear to have been in large part the result of years of conflict between the two houses of the colonial legislatures. Although two States left such a provision out of their constitutions, yet it would seem that Gerry, in a speech at the Convention, voiced the opinion of a majority of the people of the United States when he said, "Taxation and representation are strongly associated in the minds of the people; and they will not agree that any but their immediate representatives shall meddle with their purses."⁴

A final feature of this contest over the relative powers of the two branches of the colonial legislatures is of interest. It appears that the practice of placing "riders"⁵ on appropriation bills had been in some States, at least, a common one. The earlier method by which the popular branch of the assembly had sometimes forced approval of desired legislation had been to hold back the supply bills until such approval had been secured. It is possible that the practice of using "riders" grew out of the earlier cus-

¹ See Adams, *Control of the Purse*. 176-181; Gilpin, *Madison Papers*. 1609.

² See *Madison Papers*. 1306-1315.

³ *Madison Papers*, 1315.

⁴ *Madison Papers*, 1309.

⁵ By means of "riders" it is sometimes attempted to incorporate general legislative provisions into appropriation bills so as to compel the other branch of the legislature either to accept the general legislation or to refuse the appropriations.

tom. The first constitution of Maryland prohibited the incorporation of any extraneous matters into appropriation bills. A similar provision is found in the constitution adopted by Delaware in 1792.

(F) *The Development of Unity in Budgetary Procedure.*

In certain modern countries a large measure of unity has been introduced into budgetary methods by providing in a single enactment for all matters of revenue and supply. Where such complete formal unity has not been secured, the necessity of balancing revenue and expenditure will secure a certain fundamental unity in budgetary procedure, as is the case in the United States. A formal unity, however, will secure a better adjustment of public resources and needs; and is, for that reason, desirable. This important fact has received too little attention in the United States on account of the ease with which our federal expenditures have been met from the proceeds of indirect taxes.

In the earliest periods of colonial history we can not expect to find much unity in the management of revenues and expenditures. This could not be secured until settled conditions were developed, and until regularity was introduced into financial transactions. By 1775, however, it is possible to detect considerable advance in budgetary proceedings in the direction of unity. This is important on account of the influence which it may have exerted on the procedure of the Continental Congress. It is necessary, therefore, to refer to this feature of colonial finance. These investigations have been confined mainly to the colonies of Massachusetts, New York, Pennsylvania, Virginia, and South Carolina, in which the finances had reached the most advanced stage of development found during the colonial period.

Before speaking of the budgetary methods developed in Massachusetts, it is necessary to refer to the forms and methods of taxation employed in that colony. From the

earliest times the chief reliance had been upon direct taxes, of which property and poll taxes were the principal forms.¹ These were apportioned among the various towns of the colony, and were assessed and collected by local authorities. The final receipt of these taxes was generally anticipated. In 1690, on the occasion of a tax levy of £40,000 for expenses incurred during the first of the colonial wars, the government issued treasury notes payable in one year, by way of anticipating the collection of the tax. This practice soon became regular, and the time for the redemption of the notes was gradually extended until it became thirteen years. Only a portion of the issues was redeemed each year. Thus, it was thought, the weight of taxation might be lightened by distributing the burden over a series of years. The evils of such a system finally became so great that about 1750 there began a transition to the method of resorting to loans in anticipation of the future yield of revenue measures. Thus the issue of treasury bills, which were virtually a paper currency, ceased until the time of the Revolution. Manifestly this practice complicated the budgetary methods of the colony.²

At an early date indirect taxes were introduced in the form of excise and import duties.³ These were resorted to in order to ease the burden of direct taxation, but they always formed a subordinate part of the revenues of the colony. A feature of interest is that these duties were, in the provincial period, re-enacted yearly, and were not allowed to offer the royal governor a permanent source of revenue.

The combination of direct and indirect taxes in the financial system of the colony is a point of great significance in the development of budgetary methods. The pol-

¹ Douglas, *Financial History of Massachusetts*, 59-76.

² On this subject, see Douglas, *Massachusetts*, 117-135; Felt, *History of Taxation in Massachusetts*; Sumner, *American Currency*.

³ Douglas, 32-33, 78-95.

icy of the lower house of the legislature during the first half of the eighteenth century has been characterized by Mr. Douglas¹ as "a persistent refusal to raise by direct taxation one penny more than a sum calculated, not always accurately, to be just sufficient, when added to all the other revenues of the province, to cancel maturing obligations, and in the abandonment of the constantly increasing current expenses of the government to be met by larger and larger issues of bills of credit." In this disposition to limit the levy of direct taxes to the exact amount required over and above all other receipts, there was a powerful force making for an exact adjustment of revenues to expenditures, something that can be secured only by budgetary unity. Furthermore, the apportionment of direct taxes among the towns must have furnished the representatives with an additional incentive of the same character.

Beginning with the history of Massachusetts as a royal province, we find that, for several years, the revenues were raised by grants of direct and indirect taxes, "for the defense of his Majesty's subjects and interests," and for other equally vague and general purposes. Moreover, the revenue measures of each year were commonly four in number, and there was no budgetary unity. Duties of impost and excise were granted by separate yearly acts, and a third bill regularly provided for the issue of treasury notes to meet current expenses. Finally a fourth measure imposed "assessments on polls and estates" to meet the installments of earlier issues of bills falling due within the year. Some sort of adjustment of revenues to expenditures was secured through the efforts of the lower house of the legislature to avoid levying direct taxes in greater amount than was required, after allowing for the receipts from other sources of revenue.

As we approach the year 1730, certain expenditures are

¹ Financial History of Massachusetts, 121.

made specific in object and amount, and are provided for in separate bills. Thus the governor's salary and the payment of members of the Council and House of Representatives were voted separately in bills which, after a time, came to carry with them special tax levies for these purposes. Thus a closer control was exercised over objects of expenditure, but at the expense of budgetary unity.

In 1733¹ there appears a great advance in the direction of unity. After reënacting the law imposing impost duties, and providing for a levy of direct taxes for redeeming the amounts due on quotas of treasury bills previously issued, the legislature proceeded to bring together into a single budget the expenditures for the service of the year. The law accomplishing this was entitled: "An Act for Supplying the Treasury with the Sum of Seventy Six Thousand Five Hundred Pounds, Bills of Credit, for Discharging the Public Debts, and for Establishing the Wages of Sundry Persons in the Service of the Province." This act provided:

I. Fixed salaries for the soldiers in the employ of the province.

II. That £76,500 bills of credit should be issued, and that these funds should be devoted to the various public expenses "as ascertained or as fixed by law." These amounts were all specified, and included a reservation for future grants to be made by the legislature during the session.

III. That all balances of sums appropriated should lie in the treasury.

IV. That during each of the eight following years, taxes should be levied in an amount necessary to redeem the installments of bills of credit that should fall due annually.

Thus a large degree of budgetary unity was secured. During the entire year only two supplementary appropriations were passed, these providing for the governor's salary and for repairs on Castle William.

¹ See Acts and Resolves, II, 690.

After this date budgetary legislation retained about the same form until the last of the colonial wars broke in upon the unity which this arrangement had secured. Large supplementary grants of taxes and appropriations were often called for during these wars; and the former unity could not be preserved. After 1763 the finances were in a disordered condition owing to the large debts left by the wars. But by 1770 order was in some degree restored. The budget of 1774¹ will illustrate the final form of development in the methods of this colony. Its provisions were as follows:

I. That £14,550 should be borrowed on the credit of the province.

II. That this sum should be expended in specific amounts for purposes enumerated in the act, "and for no other purposes whatsoever."

III. That £10,300 should be assessed on polls and estates; and that the receipts from imposts should be used as a further fund for redeeming the loan of £14,550 with interest.

The only other budgetary measure for this year was an act imposing taxes for outstanding obligations incurred in previous years. Thus, at last, almost complete budgetary unity was secured.

During the following year war expenditures came in to disturb existing arrangements. Once more, as in the time of the previous wars, supplementary appropriations and additional revenue measures were necessitated. Thus unity was again destroyed. It is probably safe to attribute the growth of a unified budget in this colony to the calculating and parsimonious character of the policy of the representatives. This conclusion does not necessarily exclude all possibility of an influence having been exerted by the example of English methods. But it does seem certain that within the colony itself existed conditions which are a sufficient explanation of the course of budgetary development.

¹ Acts and Resolves, V. 390-392.

In New York indirect taxation was developed earlier than direct.¹ During the seventeenth century indirect taxes were the most important source of revenue possessed by the colony.² Gradually the general property tax was developed, but indirect taxes remained more important in New York than in any other of the northern colonies.³ The impost duties were continued in operation from year to year, as were all other revenue measures after a time. In no colony was the principle of limited revenue acts maintained with greater persistence.

Appropriations were, at first, made in gross, and applied at the discretion of the governor and council.⁴ Also there was no attempt to include all such measures in a single bill. But in 1739 appropriations were made specific both in objects and amounts, and salaries were granted to officials by name.⁵ After this date most of the expenditures are included in a regular appropriation bill prepared by each Assembly. During the colonial wars supplementary appropriations were made in great numbers, but the method of including all ordinary expenses in a single annual bill still continued.

It does not appear, however, that there was a co-ordination of revenues and expenditures in a single budget. In 1774 and 1775 we find a condition that much resembles the methods of our national government at the present day. No new revenue measures were passed in those years, while it was provided in the annual appropriation bills that the authorized expenses should be defrayed out of the proceeds of the indirect taxes collected under the laws then in operation.⁷ During the Revolution supplementary appropriations

¹ Schwab, *New York Property Tax*, 19, 104.

² Hill, *Tariff Policy of the United States*, 37, 38.

³ *Ibid.*, 37.

⁴ See Smith, *History of New York*, 425 seq.; *Magazine of American History*, III. 165-167; also a speech by Clinton, in *Journal of Council*, 1022.

⁵ Here we follow the *Laws of New York and the Journal of the Council*.

⁶ See *Laws of New York*; Roberts, *History of New York*, 287; Smith, *New York*, 433.

⁷ See *Laws of the Colony of New York, 1774-1775*, 61, 94.

became numerous once more, as was the case in the other colonies.

Down to the opening of the Revolution the budgetary methods of Connecticut seem to have remained in a condition of primitive simplicity. From the proceedings of the Connecticut Assembly in 1771 we can derive information on this subject during what may be regarded as a typical year. During the May session the Assembly at various times appropriated all sorts of petty sums in payment of claims and of public services.¹ Thus the colonial treasurer is instructed to purchase an iron chest for the custody of public moneys.² Toward the close of the session the Assembly authorized the payment of half of the annual salaries of the governor, deputy governor, treasurer, and secretary.³ At the October session we meet with much the same procedure.⁴ At this time also a tax is levied⁵ for "incidental charges of government," and the colonial treasurer is instructed to settle with the members of the Assembly for their expenses in attending the session.⁶ Perhaps an explanation is to be found for these primitive budgetary methods in the fact that Connecticut, in its long existence under the original charter, did not witness those contests between the Assembly and royal officials which in the other colonies proved productive of principles of budgetary procedure.

In Pennsylvania there existed a more highly developed system of finance. Here the early struggle for specific appropriations had resulted in a system of money grants specifying the objects of expenditure.⁷ But no unity existed in early times; and, in some years,⁸ we find as many

¹ Public Records of Connecticut, XIII, 424, 471.

² *Ibid.*, 426.

³ Public Records of Connecticut, XIII, 502.

⁴ *Ibid.*, 518, 557, 566.

⁵ *Ibid.*, 516.

⁶ Public Records of Connecticut, XIII, 566.

⁷ Bancroft, II, 25, 26, 27; Franklin, *Historical Review of Pennsylvania*, 32; Minutes of the Provincial Council, I, 457, 468, et seq.

⁸ *Ibid.*, I, for 1715 and 1718.

as three or four separate revenue measures. During much of the time, also, paper money exercised a disturbing influence.

After the middle of the eighteenth century, however, considerable progress was made in the direction of budgetary unity. The specification of the objects of expenditure seems to have become more strict. By 1755¹ the methods of procedure resembled those of Massachusetts. Bills of credit were issued for specified purposes, and taxes imposed to provide a fund for the redemption of the notes. The colonial wars here, as elsewhere, proved to be a disturbing influence. But after 1763 supplementary acts became less common; and in 1775 we find but a single measure providing "for the support of government and the payment of public debts."

In the matter of budgetary development, Virginia presents nothing new. Here, as elsewhere, the earliest attempts to control expenditures took the form of specifying in revenue bills the objects for which money should be raised. After a time special appropriation bills became common. Salaries and many of the ordinary expenses came to be strictly fixed by law, but there was no system of regular appropriations for such purposes. In the direction of formal budgetary unity little progress seems to have been made. As late as 1772 three revenue laws and four special appropriations are passed during the sessions of a single assembly.²

From the year 1721 South Carolina presents interesting budgetary arrangements. After the Revolution of 1719 had overthrown proprietary control and resulted in the formation of a royal colony, the government had to be supported by taxation instead of by the proceeds of the quit rents, which had sufficed for the ordinary needs of the proprietary administration. Annual tax laws were passed at the opening of most of the fiscal years; and, after 1721,

¹ Laws of Pennsylvania, I. chapt. 406.

² Hening's Statutes at Large, VIII.

these laws included "long appropriation clauses, appropriating every penny raised to some specific object." In later times the tax bills were not prepared until several months after the close of the fiscal year. Besides these direct tax levies, the colony derived considerable revenues from impost and tonnage duties, and from other sources of a miscellaneous character. These indirect taxes were not included in the annual budget; and, consequently, complete unity was not secured.¹

These investigations, incomplete as they are, show that in Massachusetts, Pennsylvania, and South Carolina, at least, a considerable degree of formal budgetary unity was realized before the Continental Congress met in 1775. In the various colonies there existed important differences in the various stages and the final results of budgetary development. Great resemblances are also to be found, but these may safely be attributed to the existence of similar problems, which called for similar solutions. There seems to be no evidence to support the view that, to any large extent, the colonies reproduced each other's budgetary methods; or that they consciously imitated those of England. In most cases the differences of procedure are too great to admit of such a hypothesis. In Massachusetts, where perhaps the greatest degree of unity was introduced into the budget system, we have found special conditions that furnish a sufficient explanation for the establishment of a more unified procedure. It is manifestly impossible to exclude all possibility of attempts to copy English forms and methods. But, on the whole, it is safest to affirm that colonial budgetary development was shaped principally by the force of local conditions, and in accordance with local needs.

¹ On this subject see Whitney, *Government of the Colony of South Carolina*, 97 et seq.

CHAPTER III.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF A BUDGET SYSTEM BY THE CONTINENTAL CONGRESS

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

Bayley, *History of the National Loans*; Bolles, *Financial History of the United States*, I.; Curtis, *History of the Constitution of the United States*; Fiske, *Critical Period of American History*; Hildreth, *History of the United States*, III., see *Index on "Estimates," "Expenditures," "Requisitions"*; *Journals of Congress, 1775-1788*; McMaster, *History of the People of the United States*, I.; Small, *American Nationality*, 70-73; Sumner, *Financier and Finances of the American Revolution*; Sparks, *Diplomatic Correspondence*, XII.

The foregoing study of the results of budgetary development in England and in the thirteen colonies previous to 1775 has prepared the way for a discussion of the various steps by which the Continental Congress developed a budget system. It will be found that the various parts of the financial system of the Revolution were developed separately, but were finally brought together into a unified budget. This discussion will also show what were the forces operating to produce this result.

(A) *The Early Management of Revenue and Supply.*

On the third of June, 1775, Congress appointed a committee of five members to "bring in an estimate of money necessary to be raised" for the defense of the colonies. Four days later the committee submitted a report which was considered in committee of the whole for several days, until, on June 22, Congress resolved to issue the first bills

of credit. A month later,¹ a second committee was appointed "to bring in an estimate of the expenses incurred by the votes and resolves of this Congress." It is very probable that it was the report of this committee which induced Congress to vote a second emission of paper money.² Early in November³ another committee was instructed "to examine what money remains in the treasury unapplied, and to form an estimate of the public debts already incurred, and which will become due on the first day of June next." A few weeks later,⁴ upon the report of this committee "on the state of the treasury," the third issue of paper money was authorized. Then, in December, in pursuance of a further report, Congress urged upon the colonies the necessity of making provisions for redeeming their quotas of the bills of credit.

In the manner above mentioned, \$6,000,000 of paper money was issued by the end of 1775, this sum being intended to provide for the expenses of that year and for the debts that should be incurred up to the following June. We have next to inquire into the methods by which this money was applied. When Congress assumed the control of the struggle against Great Britain, large expenses were incurred. For some of these provision was made in special appropriation bills. Thus in June⁵ the army establishment was determined, and the pay of the officers and soldiers fixed by law. On the first day of August a number of appropriations were made, one of which provided that \$500,000 should be immediately forwarded to be applied to the support of the army in Massachusetts, in such manner as General Washington should "limit and appoint;" and that, if this sum should be expended before the next meeting of Congress, General Washington should be empowered to

¹ July 19.

² July 25.

³ Nov. 5.

⁴ Nov. 29.

⁵ Dec. 26.

^{*} June 14, 15 16; July 27, 1775.

draw on the Continental treasurer for \$200,000 additional. The other appropriations were also for lump sums, and the objects of expenditure were specified in an equally loose and general manner.

In September Congress appointed a Committee of Accounts or Claims, which for nearly a year examined accounts against the government and reported the amounts due, whereupon payment was ordered. Thus was inaugurated another method of applying public money, which lasted for several years. During this time we find Congress constantly appropriating all sorts of petty sums, such as \$13 for a present to Indians, or \$12 for ferriage and horse hire. A third method of applying public funds was to advance money to the assemblies of different colonies to be expended and accounted for.² Similarly delegates and committees of Congress were entrusted with the expenditure of large sums, which were placed in their hands for definite purposes, and for which they were expected to account.³ In this way \$500,000 was expended for the first naval armament.

The revenues for 1776 were derived from further issues of bills of credit. In February,⁴ Congress, on a report from the committee on the treasury, resolved to emit \$4,000,000 of the paper money; and to appoint a Standing Committee on the Treasury, to which reference has already been made in the discussion of the administration of the finances. This body, which was generally known as the Treasury Board, soon came to act as a committee on ways and means; but first Congress resorted to another committee for that purpose. On March 13 it was resolved to appoint a committee of seven, to "inquire and report the best ways and means of raising the necessary supplies to defray the expenses of the war for the *present* year, over

¹ Sept. 25.

² Aug. 1; Dec. 12, 1775.

³ Aug. 1; Dec. 16, 28, 1775.

⁴ Feb. 17, 1776.

and above the emission of bills of credit." It has been impossible to ascertain whether this committee ever made any report. On the sixth of May, however, Congress, after resolving itself into a committee of the whole to consider "the state of the United Colonies," decided that \$10,000,000 should be raised for the service of the year. At the same time another committee of ways and means was directed to devise methods for raising the money. This committee reported three times during the remainder of the year, and in the following February;¹ and on each occasion Congress passed some measure for raising money by means of issues of bills of credit. In October, the Treasury Board reported a plan for raising funds through a domestic loan; and, during the next year, reported estimates and plans for further emissions of paper.²

During this year there was no advance over the early methods of appropriation. Large sums were still placed in the hands of individuals for the purpose of meeting public expenses.³ After July 30, accounts against the government were reported by the Board of Treasury, and the old Committee of Accounts was discharged. The work of systematizing appropriation methods was accomplished very slowly.

At the opening of 1777,⁴ Congress resolved itself into a committee of the whole "to take into further consideration the state of the treasury and the means of supporting the credit of the Continental currency." As a result of these deliberations it was resolved to urge the States to resort to taxation during the current year. In May⁵ the Treasury Board was instructed to "prepare and report to Congress an estimate of the public expenses for the present year, distinguishing in such estimate the expenses of the commissary, quartermaster, and barrack master general, and the medical de-

¹ May 9, July 22, Nov. 2, 1776; Feb. 22, 1777.

² Oct. 3, 1776; August 13, 15, Nov. 7, Dec. 3, 1777.

³ E. g. Journal of Congress, July 20, 31, 1776.

⁴ January 13, 14.

⁵ May 15.

partment;" and "to confer with the marine board and General Schuyler on this subject." Congress had not yet come to appreciate the necessity of preparing the estimates before the opening of the year; but this action was an advance over previous methods of procedure. The statements called for were to be prepared by the Treasury Board after conference with the other departments, and were to be presented in some detail. At this same time, a new committee was appointed to "consider ways and means of defraying the expenses of the present year;" and instructed to "confer on this subject with the Board of Treasury." It is not possible to determine what action the committee took. It may have presented some of the reports upon which new emissions of paper money were ordered, but the Journal of Congress does not enable us to decide. In November,¹ on the occasion of a report from the Treasury Board, Congress made its first requisition on the States, calling for \$5,000,000.

Up to this time there had been a constant effort to estimate probable expenses, and to regulate the issues of paper according to the probable needs. This is as far, however, as unity in budgetary procedure had been developed. The ease with which revenues were secured by the emission of bills of credit had not been favorable to carefulness and accuracy in adjusting revenue to needs. But with the year 1778 conditions are altered. The paper money begins to depreciate alarmingly; greater efforts are made to increase the receipts from loans; and taxes come into a position of greater importance. These facts lead to improvements in budgetary methods.

(B) *The Development of Unity in Budgetary Procedure.*

During 1778 the Treasury Board, acting as a committee on ways and means, continued to submit its reports; and they were the occasion for the emission of the paper

¹ November 22.

money issued during the year. The first half of the year saw no change in budgetary methods. But, as the depreciation of the bills of credit increased, and the financial situation became more difficult, it was evident that, in the future, the dependence of Congress must be upon taxation. To this fact we can safely attribute a change in procedure which now occurred.

In August, Congress set apart three days each week for the special consideration of the finances.¹ In the same month,² also, the Standing Committee on Finance was appointed, "to consider the state of the money and finances of the United States, and report thereon from time to time." Robert Morris was chairman of this committee, which, in November,³ submitted a "plan of finance" for the ensuing year. From the action taken by Congress we can infer that this plan was intended to provide, first, for the security and ultimate redemption of the bills of credit; and, second, for the expenses of the ensuing year. A diligent search among the manuscripts in the library of the State Department has brought to light only that part of the plan which relates to the bills of credit. This contemplated the withdrawal of \$46,000,000 of the notes from circulation, and the gradual redemption of the others.

Congress considered this plan in committee of the whole for many days, and finally⁴ called on the States for \$15,000,000 for the expenses of the ensuing year, and for \$6,000,000 annually for eighteen years, as a fund for sinking the loans and issues of the United States. Undoubtedly we may regard this action as a budgetary forecast and provision for the whole of the public debt, and at least a large part of the expenses for 1779. It seems probable, also, that this act carried with it the authorization of many of the regular expenses for this year. In the Journal of Congress we find no appropriations for such purposes dur-

¹ August 12, 13, 1778.

² A

³ Nov. 10.

⁴ Dec. 16, 31, 1778; Jan. 2, 1779.

ing 1779; while an act of September 15 makes it evident that expenditures are being made under the direction of the heads of departments, in accordance with the authorized appropriations.

Unfortunately, the States complied but poorly with the call of Congress for taxes. More than this, the depreciation of the paper money steadily increased, and rendered these last measures of Congress quite ineffectual. The Treasury Board brought in frequent reports, in accordance with which \$140,000,000 in bills of credit was issued during the year. By May¹ the paper had so far depreciated that Congress added \$45,000,000 to the quotas of taxes required for that year. Shortly after, on the occasion of a similar report, it was decided to open another domestic loan of \$20,000,000. By the close of the year, the issues of paper had been exhausted; and Congress was thenceforth obliged to look to taxes and to loans for the revenue necessary to conduct the government. Thus the "plan of finance" proved a complete failure, owing in large part to the refusal of the States to respond to the demands of Congress. All this, however, does not prevent the acts of December, 1778, from constituting a definite advance in the formal ordering of the national finances.

Up to this point we have not considered the foreign loans secured by the United States. These did not yield large sums until 1780; and were, at the start, devoted to the payment of interest on the domestic debt. They were not included in the annual estimates until a later period. Even then, there was a separation of the expenditures at the treasury and those made in Europe.

We now come to the provisions for the service of 1780. On October 6, 1779, Congress made a requisition on the States for \$15,000,000 monthly for eight months. In this it is noticeable how greatly the amount of the requisition has been increased by the depreciation of the bills of credit. But Congress did not dare to depend on the State

¹ May 19, 1779.

to provide sufficient taxes in money, and was fearful for the future of the paper currency. Accordingly, specific supplies were called for. On December 2, the Board of War was directed to report an estimate of the provisions required to supply the army for one year, and the Marine Committee was instructed to report an estimate of the provisions necessary for the navy. Then a committee was appointed to devise means of procuring such supplies, and it was decided to resort to specific requisitions on the States for this purpose.¹ Early in 1780² a general requisition was made for the supplies necessary for that year. Thus, despite the inattention of the States to its call for taxes, Congress continued to make provisions for the needs of the ensuing year.

In March³ Congress passed the "Forty for One Act," and practically repudiated the bills of credit. After this the specie basis was restored, and the States were called upon for \$3,000,000 in specie for the immediate expenses of government.⁴ In the last of the year provision was made for the service of 1781, and a requisition for \$6,000,000 was voted.⁵ This was payable partly in specie and partly in specific supplies. Unfortunately the Journal for this year is so incomplete that it is impossible to ascertain from what sources Congress obtained the estimates upon which this requisition was based.

At the opening of 1781 the condition of the finances was so critical as to call for immediate attention. Congress sent to the States a most earnest appeal, asking that \$879,000 be immediately forwarded for the pay of the army; and that, in the future, requisitions be promptly complied with. Early in February⁷ Congress asked for authority to lay a

¹ Dec. 11, 14.

² Feb. 25.

³ March 18.

⁴ August 26.

⁵ November 4.

⁶ Jan. 15, 1781.

⁷ Feb. 8, 7.

five per cent duty on imports, the proceeds of which should be devoted to discharging the principal and interest of the public debt. During this same month Robert Morris was appointed Superintendent of Finance, and thus a more efficient administration was secured. A protracted consideration was then given to the subject of finance. On March 16 a requisition was ordered for \$6,000,000, payable in quarterly installments, commencing with the first of the following June.

A committee was then appointed "to estimate and state the amount of debts due from the United States, with the necessary estimates for the current year, . . . in order that the same may be laid before their respective legislatures." Fortunately, this report is contained in the *Journal*;¹ and it deserves attention as the first complete financial statement that has been preserved. The report contains, first, a statement of the public debt reduced to a specie basis; second, the estimated expenses of the current year; and, third, the total revenues at the command of Congress for the whole of 1781. The necessary expenses were estimated at \$19,407,000; while the total resources, supposing that the States should pay in full the existing requisitions, were only \$17,668,000. In an earlier chapter it has been shown how far these estimates of expenditures exceeded the actual amount which the government was able to expend.²

In the fall the Board of War was called upon for estimates of the expenses of the military establishment for the ensuing year. The report submitted by the Board was referred to a committee of three members, which added the estimates for the civil list. On October 30 and November 2 Congress voted a requisition of \$8,000,000 "for the war department and civil list the ensuing year." Strangely enough, it appears that the Superintendent of Finance saw

¹ Appendix, April 18, 1781.

² See p. 175.

nothing of the estimates on which this action was founded,¹ although in former years the heads of the treasury department had been consulted in such matters. On November 17 Morris forwarded to the governors of the States this act for raising the supplies for 1782.²

It will now be necessary to refer to the development of a system of appropriations. The earliest methods of applying public moneys have been already explained.³ As time went on, and more complete estimates were formed for the service of the ensuing year, the expenditures thus authorized were made under the direction of the executive departments.⁴ Congress continued to pass laws that authorized new and unforeseen expenditures; but, by making general provision for necessary expenses, it relieved itself of the necessity of constantly appropriating petty sums, and such action became less frequent. But in appropriation bills there was little effort to specify the objects and amounts of expenditure, except in the most general way; and the greatest latitude was consequently left to the executive officers. So far as can be ascertained, it seems probable that Robert Morris was the only head of the treasury department that did not divert large sums from the original objects of appropriation, and apply them to other purposes.

As fast as the work of the government developed, current expenses were fixed by law. By repeated acts the establishment and pay of the army and navy were regulated.⁵ As the executive departments were established, the number and the salaries of the officials were determined; and the expenses of the "civil list"⁶ thus regu-

¹ Sparks, *Diplomatic Correspondence*, XII. 8-9.

² *Ibidem*, 16.

³ See p. 234 et seq.

⁴ See *Journal of Congress*, Sept. 15, 1779; June 28, 1781.

⁵ *Journal of Congress*, June 14, 15, 16, July 25, Nov. 28, Dec. 9, 1775; May 24, Nov. 15, 1776; May 27, 1778.

⁶ This term is evidently borrowed from England, but is used in the *Journals of Congress* and elsewhere to denote the entire civil establishment. This is different from the technical meaning given to the word in the English budget, see p. 213.

lated. In 1780¹ the salaries of the entire establishment were readjusted; and, two years later, the expenses of foreign envoys and officials were brought under stricter control.²

In 1777³ it had been resolved to pay the interest on the domestic loans with the money secured in Europe. In accordance with this plan Congress was obliged each year to make an appropriation for this purpose.⁴ This continued to be done until March, 1782, when such payments could no longer be made. Private claims, during all this period, were first examined by the treasury department; and then referred to Congress, by which body payment was ordered, in case the claims received favorable action.

Thus by 1782⁵ some degree of order had been established in the authorization of expenditures and the application of public money. The expenses of the army, navy, and civil list were provided for by a reasonable number of appropriations, most of which were included in the annual appropriation bill. The payment of interest on the public debt was authorized at more or less regular intervals, and private claims were passed upon by Congress as fast as they arose.

The budgetary legislation of 1782 now claims attention. In this it is possible to trace the skillful hand of Robert Morris. In January⁶ Congress called upon the Secretary of Foreign Affairs for estimates of the expenses of foreign ministers, with a view to exercising more control over these expenditures, which had been in the past loosely managed. In July Morris urged upon Congress the necessity of providing "solid funds for the national debt," and advocated for this purpose direct and indirect taxes, to be raised by the general government.⁶ This was in line with

¹ August 11, Sept. 13, Sept. 25.

² Journal of Congress, Jan. 2, June 5, 1782.

³ Sept. 9.

⁴ E. g. Journal of Congress, August 3, 1780.

⁵ January 2, 1782.

⁶ Sparks, Diplomatic Correspondence, XII. 211-233.

the determined effort then being made to secure for Congress the right to establish revenues of its own. It has already been seen that these efforts failed. Up to this year Congress had tried to pay the interest on the loan office debt out of the proceeds of the foreign loans; and had, from time to time, provided that bills of exchange should be drawn for this purpose. Now, however, this could no longer be done; and in September ¹ it was resolved to levy a requisition for \$1,200,000, in order to pay the interest on the whole of the domestic debt, so far as it had been liquidated. This subject was previously considered by a grand committee, consisting of one member from each State. It is interesting to notice that on this occasion no less than eight States attempted to reduce the amounts required of them, and to throw the burdens onto other States.

One month later ² the grand committee reported the estimates for 1783. These were prepared by Morris, and we have preserved to us the letter ³ in which he transmitted them to the President of Congress. It was part of the plan of Morris to secure a foreign loan for a portion of the service of the next year; and Congress had previously authorized the negotiation of a loan for \$5,000,000.⁴ The appropriations were finally fixed as follows: ⁵

| | |
|-------------------------|-------------|
| For the army..... | \$5,266,509 |
| For the marine..... | 300,000 |
| For the civil list..... | 181,214 |
| For contingencies..... | 252,277 |
| | \$6,000,000 |

Requisition had already been made for the \$1,200,000 necessary for interest on the domestic debt, and it remained to provide for this six millions of current expenses. It was finally resolved ⁶ that the States should be called upon for

¹ September 4, 10, 1782.

² October 16.

³ Sparks, Diplomatic Correspondence, XII. 238-241.

⁴ September 14.

⁵ October 16.

⁶ October 16, 18.

\$2,000,000, and that further requisitions should be suspended until the result of the attempt to secure a foreign loan should be known.

Thus the years 1781 and 1782 witnessed the establishment of a large measure of unity in the budgetary procedure of Congress. All the ordinary expenses of the government, including the greater part of the war expenditures, were provided for in a single enactment, which also fixed the amount of the requisition for the ensuing year. In 1782 separate provision was made for the domestic interest, but this did not impair seriously budgetary unity. The first steps in the establishment of this system were taken at least as early as 1778 in the "plan of finance" adopted for the service of 1779. During 1779 and 1780 Congress still attempted to appropriate in a single enactment for the expenses of the following year, and to provide the supplies necessary for this purpose. In this way a unified budget system was finally established.

At first thought one might be inclined to attribute the development of such a budget to the influence of English precedent. But the previously described investigations into the financial methods of the colonial period have shown that in one or two colonies budgetary unity was developed before 1775. If, then, we are to look upon the action of Congress as an imitation of methods elsewhere existing, it becomes necessary to admit that earlier colonial experience would naturally exercise a stronger influence than even contemporary English procedure. But such an explanation is insufficient since other elements must be taken into consideration. To these some reference has already been made.

It is evident that the introduction of really unified budget management dates to the "plan of finance" adopted in 1778. Now, it was in that year that the depreciation of the paper money, and the threatened exhaustion of this source of revenue, brought taxation into a more important position

than it had previously occupied among the possible sources of income. From this time on Congress began to make earnest efforts to secure by the system of requisitions a considerable portion of the funds necessary to carry on the war. This fact necessitated a change in budgetary methods.

The ease with which money had been obtained previously by the issue of bills of credit had rendered unnecessary an exact adjustment of revenue and supply, although some efforts had been made in that direction, as we have seen. But the development of the requisition system made such an adjustment an absolute necessity. The States had by this time begun to insist on their own claims of sovereignty; and, the first patriotic fervor abating, there had appeared those jealousies and selfish bickerings that characterized the entire history of the Confederation. No State, therefore, was willing to raise in taxes for national purposes a cent more than the amount which it believed to be its fair quota under the requisition system; and it was certain that all would insist that Congress should so adjust revenue to supply as to make it clear that all taxes demanded were reasonable and necessary. It is a matter of history that, as long as the system of requisitions was continued, the States were constantly complaining that the taxes required were excessive in amount and unfairly apportioned. In the case of the requisition made on September 10, 1782, we find eight States seeking to shift to the shoulders of others a portion of the quotas assessed upon themselves.

All this is, as we have seen,¹ a characteristic feature of the financial history of all confederations. In such unions there is always "a jealous reckoning of advantages and sacrifices" among the various members; and it is, therefore, necessary to secure an exact adjustment of income and expenditure, and an accurate apportionment of financial burdens among the different units. This is exactly what took place in the Continental Congress; and

¹ See p. 120.

we find such a budgetary procedure adopted only when it became clear that, in the future, greater dependence must be placed upon the requisitions on the States. To this fact we must ascribe the chief influence in the development of budgetary unity.

Of course, this conclusion does not exclude the possibility of outside influence. But this, if it operated at all, was unable to produce unified budgetary methods until the adoption of the requisition system made such action necessary. English and colonial experience may have served to facilitate the growth of the system that was finally developed; but the existence of such possible influences is not, in itself, a sufficient explanation of the course of budgetary development. The very conditions under which Congress existed made budgetary unity of some sort an absolute necessity; and thus the adoption of the requisition system appears to have been the fundamental cause of the development of the budget in the form in which we find it in 1782. A final fact will strengthen this conclusion. Most of the European expenses of the United States were defrayed out of the proceeds of foreign loans, and the greater part of the money so expended did not pass through the treasury. Now these expenditures were not all included in the budget. Millions of dollars were spent in this way, and never accounted for. Evidently, Congress cared very little about securing budgetary unity in any case where there was no need of immediately levying requisitions to meet the public needs.

(C) *The Budgetary Methods of the Later Years of the Confederation.*

In 1782 budgetary methods seem to have crystallized into a form which was thereafter maintained. In one point, however, we shall have to notice a retrogression which is extremely significant, as indicating a change that had taken place in the character of Congress.

In 1783 the army was disbanded, and the expenses of government began to be reduced by Morris to the lowest possible figure. But the responses of the States to the requisitions of 1781 and 1782 were very tardy and inadequate; and, even from the beginning of the year, the financial situation was extremely critical. Congress sought to provide for the funding of the public debt, but was finally¹ obliged to resolve that for the present all effort ought to be confined to providing for the interest. Then Morris was called upon for an estimate of the principal of the debt up to January, 1783.² Shortly after a committee was appointed "to consider ways and means of supporting public credit." On March 18 this committee brought in a report which was discussed for several days. Finally³ it was resolved to ask again from the States authority to levy duties on imports; to urge that by other taxes the States should provide substantial revenues of \$1,500,000 annually; and to request that all States that had not already ceded to Congress their claims to western lands, should at once do so, as a means of establishing harmony and hastening the extinguishment of the debt.⁴ This resolution was to be accompanied by an address prepared by Hamilton, Madison, and Ellsworth,⁵ in which the necessity for such action was set forth; and also by Morris's statement of the public debt.⁶

During the remainder of the year, Congress waited for a reply to its recommendations, and made no provision for the service of 1784. All the efforts of Morris, Hamilton, and others were exerted to secure from the States the power to levy the impost; but the request was again refused, and the financial situation remained unaltered.

¹ Jan. 30, 1783.

² Feb.

³ April 18.

⁴ Cf. Resolutions of Sept. 6, Oct. 10, 1780.

⁵ April 24, 29.

⁶ Journal of Congress, April 29.

Thus at the beginning of 1784 no provision had been made for the service of that year, but it was not until April that Congress made up the budget. It was desired to provide if possible for the interest on the debt as well as for the running expenses of government. Continuing the custom of 1782, the estimates were prepared by a grand committee of which Mr. Jefferson was chairman. We possess a letter¹ written by Morris to Jefferson, transmitting estimates for the civil list, which he placed at \$184,300. The budget² presented by the grand committee contained the following estimates and recommendations.

I. Necessary expenditures:

| | | |
|--|-----------|----------------|
| The civil department | \$107,525 | |
| The military department | 200,000 | |
| The marine department..... | 30,000 | |
| Indian department..... | 60,000 | |
| Contingencies..... | 60,000 | \$457,525 33 |
| Deficit on service of 1782 and 1783 . | | 1,000,000 |
| Interest on foreign debt..... | \$442,648 | |
| Interest on domestic debt, with arrears..... | 3,580,030 | 4,022,678 |
| Total expenditures | | \$5,480,203 33 |

II. Resources of the government:

| | |
|---|----------------|
| Balance due the government on requisition of October, 1781..... | \$5,513,488 28 |
| Balance due on requisition of October, 1782..... | 2,000,000 00 |

III. Revenue measures recommended:

Since these balances remained due on the former requisitions, it was recommended that the expenses of 1784 be met by calling on the States for a part of the taxes already due. The committee proposed that \$4,577,591 should be called for immediately. This would leave nearly \$900,000 of the estimated expenses unprovided for; and it was suggested that this deficiency might be met by calling on those States that were better able to pay more than their quotas assigned under the requisition, assuring them that any such surplus payments would be placed to their credit with interest. Since, moreover, a part of the money required was to be used for payment of domestic

¹ Sparks, Diplomatic Correspondence, XII, 468-473.

² Journal of Congress, April 5, 1784.

interest, it was recommended that one-fourth of the requisition should be made payable in indents, or the certificates issued by the loan officers for the interest on the domestic debt. Manifestly, this expedient would bring into the treasury no additional money income; but it would lessen the arrearages of interest, and would make it easier for the States to comply with the requisition.

Singularly enough, these estimates make no mention of foreign loans as possible resources for the year; although at about this time John Adams was endeavoring to secure a loan in Holland.¹ In the committee's report there is an admission that the requisitions of former years had been excessive in amount, and beyond the ability of the States. The committee, then, was wise in limiting the requisition to the financial ability of the States; but the recommendation that the deficiency still unprovided for should be made up by voluntary advances from the richer States, was, in the light of past experience, extremely weak and inadequate.

Although the fourth month of the year was passing, Congress delayed the consideration of these estimates for some time. A motion was made to refer the estimates to the Superintendent of Finance for his consideration,² but this was lost. We have, however, two letters³ that Morris wrote to the President of Congress and one of the other members on this subject, in the previous month, while the grand committee was preparing the estimates. Finally, on April 27 and 28, definite action was taken, and the expenditures were placed at the following figures:

| | |
|--|---------------------------|
| For ordinary service of government.. | \$457,525 33 ⁴ |
| For interest on foreign debt..... | 384,254 00 |
| For interest on domestic debt..... | 1,970,760 00 ⁵ |
| For arrears on service of 1782, 1783.. | 1,000,000 00 |
| | \$3,812,539 33 |

¹ Bayley, *History of the National Loans*, 311, 312.

² April 5.

³ Sparks, *Diplomatic Correspondence*, XII. 478-484.

⁴ As estimated by the committee.

⁵ This omits provision for interest for the current year.

The States were then required to pay during the year \$2,670,987.89 on the balance due on former requisitions, one-fourth of this sum being made payable in indents. For the deficiency of more than \$1,100,000 no provision was made.

In these tardy and inadequate budgetary measures we have a reflection of the changed position and character of Congress at this time.¹ The war actually over, need for the existence of a general government became less apparent; and the influence and authority of Congress naturally declined. Feeble as that body had been during its entire history, it now more nearly approached complete impotency. This popular indifference and even hostility gradually reacted upon the composition and character of Congress, and long delayed and inadequate budgetary legislation was the result. For this the unreasonable timidity and incorrigible selfishness of the States were responsible.

The financial measures of the next four years are concerned with the attempts of Congress to adjust the public accounts, provide for the redemption of the debt, and secure the revenues necessary to defray the ordinary expenses of government. The accounts awaiting settlement were enormous in number and confused beyond all conception. Morris had already taken in hand this task, and numerous acts were passed providing for the adjustment of these accounts.² By 1788 some progress had been made in the work of liquidating the public debt.

Congress attempted to provide not only for the interest, but also for the principal of the debt. The receipts from the sales of the lands ceded by the States were set aside as a fund for the ultimate redemption of the principal. When it finally became evident that the right to levy federal imposts would not be granted to Congress, in accordance with its request of 1783, a final effort was made

¹ McMaster, I. 130-133; Fiske, *Critical Period*, chap. iii.

² See Bolles, I. 333-340.

to secure such a power.¹ This failing, Congress gave up all attempt to redeem the principal of the debt. In 1787 installments of the foreign debt became due,² but these had to remain unpaid until after 1789; while the interest on the Spanish and French loans fell into arrears. Interest payments were continued in the case of the Dutch debt by contracting further loans which were applied to that purpose.³

The financial weakness of the government appears all the more clearly when we come to the history of the budget during the last years of the Confederation. The weakness of the requisition system, although manifest from the very start, was admitted by Congress in a very practical way, when in 1784 it called for the balance already due from the States, instead of laying a new requisition. Some of the States had contributed much more than others;⁴ and, under such conditions, naturally objected to making further payments.⁵ There was constant difficulty in securing an apportionment of the quotas, and no final adjustment of this question was secured until after 1789. Meanwhile the sums paid on the requisitions were considered as loans from the States. In earlier chapters these subjects have been discussed more at length, and it has been shown how partially the financial demands of Congress were complied with.

In the manner of forming and voting the annual budgets we notice no important change from the procedure of the earlier period. In 1785 the estimates were prepared by a grand committee, but after that year this work was given over to the Board of Treasury, then at the head of the finance department. In 1787 and 1788 the reports of the Board were submitted to special committees before they were considered by Congress. The budgets were no longer

¹ February, 1786.

² Journal of Congress, Feb. 15, 1786; State Papers, Finance, 1, 26, 27.

³ Bayley, National Loans, 313 et seq.

⁴ See Journal of Congress, Feb. 3, 1785.

⁵ Journal of Congress, Sept. 8, 1785.

formed in advance of the years to which they were to apply; and each year this work was longer delayed. In 1785 the budget was not finally adopted until September 27; in 1786 final action was delayed until August 2; in 1787 until October 11; and in 1788 until August 20. This fact of delay is significant of the difficulties under which Congress labored.

In other particulars few changes occurred. Congress continued to pass upon private claims,¹ and to make a few special appropriations outside of the annual budget.² Even in the annual acts, appropriations were authorized in the most loose and general form; and the same latitude was given to executive officials that existed in earlier days. Only a portion of the European expenses was included in the budgets. The payments of interest on the Dutch debt were made out of funds raised in Europe by loans, and only a small part of the salaries of foreign officials was paid out of the treasury.³ In this respect budgetary unity was seriously impaired; but, since these foreign expenses were not met by requisitions, there did not exist here the same demand for careful adjustment that we have found in the case of the money expended at home. In the report of September 30, 1788, we have a statement of the foreign transactions of the government.

¹ Journal of Congress, May 6, 1784; Sept. 29, 1785; July 6, 1786.

² Journal of Congress, June 3, 1784; Oct. 20, 1786; Oct. 3, 1787.

³ See pp. 184, 185.

CHAPTER IV.

CONTROL OF THE FINANCES.

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

Adams, *Control of the Purse in the United States*; Bastable, *Public Finance*; Bolles, *Financial History of the United States*, I.; Cohn, *Finanzwissenschaft*; Goodnow, *Comparative Administrative Law*; Guggenheimer, *Development of the Executive Departments*; *Journals of Congress, 1775-1788*; Gilpin, *Madison Papers*; Parnell, *Financial Reform*; Stein, *Finanzwissenschaft*; Sumner, *The Financier and the Finances of the American Revolution*; Roscher, *Finanzwissenschaft*; Wagner, *Finanzwissenschaft*, I.

Our view of the finances of the United States at this period can be completed by a consideration of the attempts made by Congress to develop methods of financial control. Such a control is a necessary condition of any well ordered administration of a state's finances, and its exercise under the old Confederation lay almost wholly with the Continental Congress.

As we have seen, control of financial administration consists in imposing effective checks on the collection and expenditure of money and in a thorough investigation into the application of all public funds. The exercise of such a control may in part lie with the executive and judicial departments, as well as with the legislative.¹ But it has been found that, if the legislature is to have the most effective direction of financial matters, it must perform a large part of the work of controlling the administration. Otherwise, the best methods of budgetary procedure may

¹ See Goodnow, II, 140-143.

fail to secure a strict application of public moneys in accordance with the intention of the legislature.¹

Since the Continental Congress united in itself both legislative and executive authority, the problem of the control of the financial administration presented itself in a peculiar form. Congress had to deal, not with an executive department co-ordinate with itself, but merely with its own servants employed in performing the routine work of the treasury, and with the committees selected from its own members for the purpose of superintending the financial transactions of the government. Thus it lay in the power of Congress to make its control over the administration as absolute as possible, but an ignorance of the proper methods to be employed prevented the accomplishment of this end.

This result is in no way surprising. The lack of previous experience would not justify the expectation that Congress would devise means of securing an economical application of the large sums devoted to war expenditure, a task which is, under the best circumstances, attended with extreme difficulty. At this time, moreover, methods of control were very imperfectly developed in older countries. Even in England, where legislative direction of taxation and appropriations had been most firmly established, Parliament had devised only a very imperfect system of controlling the issues of public money from the Exchequer.²

From the very incomplete material which is available the following steps can be traced in the development of methods of financial control. We will first consider the constitution of the department of finance.

Since the business of the treasury was at first superintended by the Committee on the Treasury and the Treasury Board, both of which were composed of members of Con-

¹ On the general subject of financial control see, Roscher, *Finanzwissenschaft*, secs 154, 155; Bastable, 668-672; Wagner, *Finanzwissenschaft*, I. 301-324; Cohn, sec. 172; Goodnow, II. 262-295; Stein, I. 425-459, II. 54-69.

² Bastable, *Public Finance*, 668-669; Parnell, *Financial Reform*, chap. 11.

gress, that body had constant communication with the heads of the finance department; and no question of further control presented itself. In the Board of Treasury appointed in 1779, there were, besides two members of Congress, three commissioners who were not members of that body.¹ In 1781,² when a Superintendent was placed at the head of the department, the question of control became a real one; but Congress did nothing more than to prescribe with considerable minuteness the duties and powers of this official. With the establishment of the new Board of Treasury in 1784,³ Congress provided that none of its members should engage in "any trade or commerce whatsoever," a provision that has been incorporated in our present laws regulating the Department of the Treasury. This is as far as Congress felt obliged to go in the direction of placing formal restrictions on the head of the finance department. We shall see, however, that there existed other methods of control.

The subordinate officers of the treasury were required to take an oath to perform faithfully the duties attaching to their positions, and could be removed by Congress; or, in some cases, could be suspended by the heads of the department.⁴ The "Continental Treasurers" appointed in 1775⁵ were required to give bonds in the sum of one hundred thousand dollars for the faithful performance of their office. But it does not appear that this was required of subsequent treasurers, or of other treasury officials. Until the time of Morris, the heads of the department did not have full control over these subordinate officers. This division of authority between Congress and the five members of the Board of Treasury rendered it impossible to fix responsibility, and to secure an effective supervision over the operations of the treasury.

¹ Journal of Congress, July 30, 1779.

² Journal of Congress, Feb. 7, 1781.

³ May 27, 1784.

⁴ See resolve of July 29, 1779.

⁵ July 29.

A second point of importance is the matter of public accounting and financial reports. We have already seen that, up to the time of Morris, the accounts of the treasury were confused; and were never punctually settled. The facts that Hamilton was obliged to estimate in round numbers the expenditures for 1780, and that many public officials refused to furnish any accounts of money entrusted to them, are significant of the confusion that must have existed. At the same time, there was, for many years, no regular system of finance reports. Congress from time to time called upon the treasury officials for information, and also had continually in its presence the members of the Treasury Board. But it was 1781¹ before an attempt was made to secure regular statements of the receipts of the government. With poor accounting and an absence of regular reports, it was, manifestly, impossible for Congress to exercise an effective control. We must remember, however, that, at this time, the advantages of publicity in financial transactions had not been generally recognized in most European countries;² and that the course of Congress in this matter is, therefore, less surprising.

When Morris became Superintendent of Finance, he intended to publish quarterly reports of receipts and expenditures.³ His experience had already taught him the necessity of such publicity. But the desperate condition of the treasury at the end of certain quarters led him to postpone until 1785 the publication of his quarterly statements, which we have in the Report of 1785. He did, however, secure a prompt settlement of public accounts; and furnished Congress and the States with frequent reports on financial matters. After his time publicity was to a large extent secured in all financial transactions. Yet, in the Federal Convention of 1787 there existed a feel-

¹ Journal of Congress, Feb. 9, 1781.

² See Roscher, Finanzwissenschaft, sec. 5: Bastable, 642, 643.

³ See Sumner, Financier, II. 125; Robert Morris, 114, 115.

ing that, while it is necessary to have regular reports of the public expenditures, still "many operations of finance can not be properly published at certain times."¹ Even after 1789 the House of Representatives had to engage in a determined struggle with the Treasury Department before it established its right to have laid before it at all times full information concerning the condition of the finances.² The public accounting was vastly improved by Morris; and, after his resignation, it was not allowed to fall into the confusion that had previously characterized it. In the Report of 1790 we have the accounts of the government from February 20, 1781, to September 12, 1789, when Hamilton assumed the management of the Treasury Department.

A third matter of the greatest importance in any system of financial control is that of checks on collection and issue. The weakness of the methods adopted in collecting the revenues of the government has been discussed in another place.³ The loan office receivers, who acted also as receivers of taxes, were not under definite legal restrictions until 1785; while the system of Continental receivers of taxes was of short duration. An adequate system of checks over the issue of public moneys was not established in the treasury itself until 1778,⁴ while large sums were placed in the hands of individuals and committees and expended by them. In many such cases, we have seen that no accounts were ever rendered of such expenditures. In this matter Morris instituted some of his most important reforms.

But Congress had little control over the actual objects of expenditure, owing to the fact that it did not make appropriation bills sufficiently specific. In an earlier chapter we have had occasion to consider more at length the general character of the appropriations at this time. Suffice

¹ See Madison Papers, 1580, 1581.

² See Adams, *Control of the Purse in the United States*, 185-187.

³ See pp. 191, 192.

⁴ See p. 194.

it to say, at this point, that, in spite of all systems of checks and balances between the different treasury officials who had charge of the issue of public money, there was a constant diversion and transfer of funds from the objects of expenditure contemplated in the original appropriations. We have seen that Morris alone of the heads of the department felt the evils attending such proceedings.¹ In 1788² a committee of Congress reported that large sums had been paid out of the treasury, "of which no appropriation is to be found on the public journals of Congress. Several of them remain to be accounted for."

There was still a fourth method by which Congress attempted to strengthen its control over the finances. This was the commonly employed system of investigations by congressional committees. This had been a favorite expedient with Congress from the earliest years of the war, and the method came to be generally applied to all the executive departments. In an earlier chapter³ we have considered the Standing Committee of Finance, which was appointed in 1778, "to consider the state of the money and finances of the United States, and report thereon from time to time." This committee presented frequent reports, and through it Congress gained a direct oversight of the operations of the treasury. In 1780 and 1781 there were instituted those sweeping investigations of the finance department, to which we have already referred.⁴ Thus was inaugurated another method of obtaining a more vigorous supervision of the finances.

It remains to speak of the methods of auditing the public accounts. Manifestly, without an effective system of audit, all other attempts to control financial administration must prove futile. A step was made in this direction when Congress instructed the first Committee on the Treasury

¹ See p. 204.

² Journal of Congress, Sept. 20.

³ See p. 193.

⁴ See p. 196.

to examine the accounts of the treasurers, to employ persons to keep the public accounts, and to report the state of such accounts to Congress from time to time.¹ At nearly the same² date it was required that all committees and individuals who had had public money placed in their hands should "lay before Congress an account of the expenditure of the same." As we have already seen, such accounts were in many cases never rendered.

When the treasury establishment was remodeled in 1778³ a more elaborate system of audit was introduced; and in the re-organization during the following year⁴ the methods were improved and simplified. In 1781⁵ further changes were made, and the procedure within the treasury department was given the form which it retained until the end of the Confederation.

In the earlier years of its history Congress seems to have taken no regular part in the work of auditing the accounts of the treasury officials. We have seen, however, that through investigating committees some oversight of the affairs of the department was secured. This was increased when committees were regularly appointed to prepare estimates of the annual expenditures, a subject which we have considered in the last chapter. But it is evident that Congress did not appreciate the importance of a separate examination of the accounts of public officials by legislative committees. This was done where dishonesty was suspected, as in the case of Deape. But Franklin was unable to secure a settlement of his affairs,⁶ and Morris did not secure a final settlement of his accounts as Financier until after 1789.⁷ Congress, did, it is true, investigate the administration of Morris in 1783.⁸ But Morris's report of

¹ February 17, 1776.

² January 5, 1776.

³ September 23.

⁴ July 30.

⁵ September 11.

⁶ See p. 197.

⁷ See Sumner, *Financier*, II. 203-211.

⁸ June 17, 1783.

the receipts and expenditures was not submitted until 1785,¹ and the commissioners appointed to examine it seem to have rendered no report. In 1788,² a congressional committee brought in a report of the receipts and expenditures from 1784 to 1788. This seems to have been the first step toward any system of congressional audit. Such methods, indeed, were not in use in England until after 1832; and it was twenty years after the adoption of the present Constitution that the Committee on Public Expenditure was appointed in our own House of Representatives.³ Thus the lack of an adequate system of audit intensified all the other weaknesses in the control of the finances.

¹ Report of 1785.

² September 30.

³ See Bastable, *Public Finance*, 670-671.

CONCLUSION.

The results of the financial development of the United States during the period covered by this essay are of the greatest importance for the later history of our national finances. We have been treating of a time of transition, during which thirteen comparatively isolated colonies entered into an intermediate stage of loose political connection, and finally completed an enduring federal union. In the national finances we find a series of tentative experiments that demonstrated the necessity of a substantial system of federal finance, and paved the way for its establishment. During these years the United States is found repeating the experience of similar confederations, and furnishing an interesting illustration of the financial weakness of such associations of states.

But the old Confederation served as something more than a horrible example for the profit of its successor. To the new government the old Congress bequeathed a very substantial part of its financial methods, so that the year 1789 marks no sharp break from the procedure of the earlier formative period. A brief summary will show the importance of the positive contributions derived from the time of the Confederation. It will also appear that these years are characterized by a gradual transition and continuous development from the primitive methods of colonial days to the completed system of federal finance.

The Continental bills of credit did something more than serve as an example of the evils of an irredeemable paper currency. The colonies in 1775 were unused to heavy and continued taxation, and unwilling that any central author-

ity should attempt to tax them. The bills of credit, together with the foreign loans, bridged over the years that had to intervene before the political unripeness of colonial times could be replaced by a willingness to incur sacrifices for the general good. The weakness and disorders of the Confederation finally showed the necessity of taxation directly by the general government, and led the Federal Convention to confer this power upon the Congress of the new Constitution. But this is not all. The subsequent forms of federal taxation were greatly influenced by the experience of these earlier years. The difficulty which the Continental Congress encountered in apportioning quotas of taxes directly among the States, led to a feeling that indirect taxes were the form best suited to the use of the general government. These taxes rendered an apportionment unnecessary, while, at the same time, it was thought that they were less felt and less odious than any others. Furthermore, customs duties were preferred to excise, as less inquisitorial and "most compatible with the genius and policy of free states."¹

Besides the paper money, the earliest years of the Revolution saw still another development of public credit. Domestic and foreign loans, of a size unprecedented in previous colonial history, helped to meet the extraordinary war expenditures; and to fill the gaps caused by an unwillingness to submit to the needed taxation. The practical repudiation of the paper money, and constant arrearages in the payment of interest and principal of the public loans served to impair the nation's credit. This was due, however, to the weakness and not to any intentional dishonesty of the government. The Confederation was unable to provide for the extinguishment of the mass of war indebtedness, and turned this burden over to the new government. But long before 1789 Congress sought to es-

¹ See address to the States in Journal of Congress, April 24, 1783. Also see the discussions of taxation in *The Federalist*.

establish funds that should be permanently applied to sinking the public debt. Thus only the details, not the principles, of the funding act of 1790 contained anything new to our financial procedure. Moreover, the pledging of revenues for the payment of public debts antedates the Confederation, and can be found in the financial history of the colonies.¹

Turning to the administration of the finances we have found that jealousy of executive authority, especially in this field, long delayed the establishment of an effective ^{and} department of finance. From this source arose disorders that nearly proved fatal to the success of the Revolution, and that finally demonstrated the necessity of unified management in this department. Congress at last gave the treasury a single head, and thus developed the principle that was incorporated into the law of 1789 that established our present Treasury Department. Furthermore, many of the details of that act merely continued the procedure of earlier years; while it was, as a whole, based upon the experience of the times of the Confederation.

In budgetary methods Congress seems to have followed the loosest form of procedure until the development of the requisition system necessitated a more exact adjustment of revenue to supply. Up to this time little seems to have been gained from the previous experience of England or of the colonies. Budgetary unity was finally established, but rather as a result of the jealousy of the States than through an appreciation of the inherent advantages of formal unity. That this was the case will appear from the readiness with which the revenue and expense sides of the budget were separated when indirect taxation was inaugurated by the First Congress in 1789.

Financial control was, during the entire period, of the most rudimentary character; and this, too, in spite of the fact that Congress united in itself both legislative and ex-

¹ See p. 216.

ecutive authority. But of all forms of modern financial procedure, effective methods of legislative control have been the latest to develop. They did not exist in England during the time of our Revolution, and in this country their development has largely been the work of the present century.

GENERAL BIBLIOGRAPHY.

(A) GENERAL WORKS ON FINANCE, HISTORY, AND PUBLIC LAW.

- Adams, H. C. Public Debts. (New York, 1892.)
- Bastable, C. F. Public Finance. (London and New York, 1892.)
- Blackstone, Sir William. Commentaries on the Laws of England.
- Buxton, S. C. "Budget," in Palgrave's Dictionary of Political Economy. (London and New York, 1894.)
- Cohn, Gustav. System der Finanzwissenschaft. (Stuttgart, 1889.)
- Czoernig, Carl. Darstellung der Einrichtungen über Budget. (Wien, 1866.)
- Dowell, Stephen. History of Taxes and Taxation in England. (London, 1888.)
- Gneist, Rudolph. Englisches Verwaltungsrecht. (Dritte Auflage, 1883.)
- Gneist, Rudolph. The History of the English Constitution. (New York, 1886.)
- Goodnow, F. J. Comparative Administrative Law. (New York, 1893.)
- Jellinek, Georg. "Budgetrecht," in Handwörterbuch der Staatswissenschaften. (Jena, 1890-1893.)
- Jellinek, Georg. Die Lehre von den Staatenverbindungen. (Wien, 1882.)
- Leroy Beaulieu, Paul. Traité de la Science des Finances. (Cinquième édition, Paris, 1892.)
- Macaulay, T. B. History of England from the Accession of James II.
- May, T. E. The Constitutional History of England. (London, 1861.)
- May, T. E. Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings, and Usage of Parliament. (Tenth edition, London, 1893.)
- Parnell, Sir Henry. Financial Reform. (Second edition, London, 1830.)
- Proceedings of the Cobden Club. "Correspondence Relating to the Budgets of Various Countries" (London, 1874.)
- Schanz, Georg. "Budget," in Handwörterbuch der Staatswissenschaften, (Jena, 1890-1893.)
- Schönberg, Gustav. Finanzwissenschaft und Verwaltungslehre. Dritter Band, Handbuch der Politischen Oekonomie. (Dritte Auflage Tübingen, 1891.)
- Spofford. "Budget," in Lalor's Cyclopædia of Political Science. (Chicago, 1882.)

- Stein, Lorenz. *Lehrbuch der Finanzwissenschaft*. (Fünfte Auflage, Leipzig, 1885.)
- Stourm, René. *Le Budget*. (Deuxième édition, Paris, 1891.)
- Stubbs, William. *Constitutional History of England*. (Fourth edition Oxford, 1883-1890.)
- Todd, Alpheus. *Parliamentary Government in England*. (Second edition, London, 1887.)
- Umpfenbach, Karl. *Lehrbuch der Finanzwissenschaft*. (Zweite Auflage, Stuttgart, 1887.)
- United States Consular Reports. No. 90. March, 1888. "Budgets and Budget Legislation in Foreign Countries."
- Wagner, Adolph. *Finanzwissenschaft*. (Dritte Auflage, Leipzig und Heidelberg, 1883.)
- Wilson, A. J. *The National Budget*. (London, 1882.)
- Wilson, Woodrow. *Congressional Government*. (Ninth edition, Boston and New York, 1892.)

(B) WORKS ON THE FINANCES OF THE UNITED STATES
FROM 1775 TO 1789.

- Adams, E. D. *The Control of the Purse in the United States*. Kansas University Quarterly. (Lawrence, Kansas, April, 1894.)
- Adams, H. B. *Maryland's Influence upon Land Cessions to the United States*. Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science. Third Series.
- Adams, John. *Works*. (Boston, 1850-56.)
- American Almanac, 1830. (Published by Gray and Brown, Boston.)
- American Archives. (Fifth series, Washington, 1837-1853.)
- American State Papers, Finance. (Washington, 1832-1859.)
- Bancroft, George. *History of the United States of America*. (Author's last revision, New York, 1891.)
- Banker's Magazine, February, 1860, Vol. XIV. (New York, 1860.)
- Barrett, J. A. *Evolution of the Ordinance of 1787*. University of Nebraska Seminary Papers. (New York, April, 1891.)
- Bayley, Rafael. *History of the National Loans of the United States*. Tenth Census, Vol. VII. (Washington, 1884.)
- Bolles, A. S. *Financial History of the United States*. (New York, 1884.)
- Breck, Samuel. *Historical Sketch of Continental Paper Money*. Part I. in *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society*, Vol. I., (Philadelphia, 1840.) Part II. in *Proceedings*, Vol. III. (Philadelphia, 1843.)

- Bronson, Henry. A Historical Account of Connecticut Currency, Continental Money, and the Finances of the American Revolution. In Papers of New Haven Historical Society, Vol. I. (New Haven, 1865.)
- Circourt, Adolphe de. Histoire de l' Action Commune de la France et de l' Amérique pour l' Independence des États Unis. (Paris, 1876.)
- Cooley, T. M. The General Principles of Constitutional Law in the United States of America. (First edition, Boston, 1880. Second edition, Boston, 1891.)
- Curtis, G. T. History of the Constitution of the United States. (New York, 1865.)
- Doniol, Henri. Histoire de la Participation de la France à l' Établissement des États Unis d' Amérique. (Paris, 1886.)
- Donaldson, Thomas. The Public Domain. (Washington, 1884.)
- Durand, John. New Materials for the History of the American Revolution. (New York, 1889.)
- Elliot, Jonathan. Debates in the State Conventions on the Adoption of the Federal Constitution, together with the Journal of the Federal Convention. (Second edition, Washington, 1854.)
- Elliot, Jonathan. Debates on the Adoption of the Federal Constitution in the Convention Held at Philadelphia, with a Diary of the Debates of the Congress of the Confederation. (Washington, 1845.)
- Elliot, Jonathan. The Funding System of the United States and Great Britain. (Washington, 1845. Vol. II. Executive Documents, XXVIII. Congress, 1st Session.)
- Ely, R. T. Taxation in American States and Cities. (New York, 1888.)
- Fiske, John. The Critical Period of American History. (Tenth edition Boston and New York, 1892.)
- Ford, P. L. Bibliography of Publications of the Continental Congress. In Boston Public Library Bulletins, VIII., IX., X.
- Franklin, Benjamin. The Works of Benjamin Franklin. Edited by Jared Sparks. (Boston, 1856.)
- Gallatin, Albert. The Writings of Albert Gallatin. Edited by Henry Adams. (Philadelphia, 1879.)
- Gay, S. H. James Madison. (Boston and New York, 1884.)
- Gilpin, H. D. The Papers of James Madison. Edited by H. D. Gilpin. (Washington, 1840.)
- Gouge, W. E. A Short History of Paper Money and Banking in the United States. (New York, 1840.)
- Greene, G. W. Historical Review of the American Revolution. (Boston, 1865.)
- Greene, G. W. "Finances of the Revolution." In Atlantic Monthly, XIV. (Boston, 1864.)

- Guggenheimer, J. C. *The Development of the Executive Departments, 1775-1789*. In *Essays in the Constitutional History of the United States*. Edited by J. F. Jameson. (Boston and New York, 1889.)
- Hale, E. E. *Franklin in France*. (Boston, 1887.)
- Hamilton, J. C. *The History of the Republic of the United States, as Traced in the Writings of Alexander Hamilton*. (Philadelphia, 1864.)
- Hamilton, Alexander. *The Works of Hamilton*. Edited by J. C. Hamilton. (New York, 1850.)
- Hildreth, Richard. *The History of the United States of America*. (New York, 1854.)
- Hill, William. *The First Stages of the Tariff Policy of the United States*. Publications of the American Economic Association. (Baltimore, 1893.)
- Historical Magazine*, Vol. VI. (New York, 1862.)
- Hock, C. F. *Die Finanzen und die Finanzgeschichte der Vereinigten Staaten von Amerika*. (Stuttgart, 1867.)
- Jahrbücher für Nationalökonomie und Statistik*. (Jena, 1863.)
- James, E. J. *Some Considerations on the Legal Tender Decisions*. American Economic Association Publications. (Baltimore, 1889.)
- Jefferson, Thomas. *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson*. Edited by H. A. Washington. (Washington, 1854.)
- Journals of Congress, 1775-1788*. (Philadelphia.)
- Kapp, Friederich. *The Life of Kalb*. (New York, 1884.)
- Knox, J. J. *United States Notes*. (New York, 1885.)
- Lalor, J. J. *Cyclopædia of Political Science and Political Economy*. (Chicago, 1882.)
- Landon, J. S. *The Constitutional History and Government of the United States*. (Boston, 1889.)
- Lecky, W. E. H. *A History of England in the Eighteenth Century*. (American edition, New York, 1882.)
- Lewis, L. *History of the Bank of North America*. (Philadelphia, 1882.)
- Lodge, H. C. *Alexander Hamilton*. (Boston and New York, 1882.)
- McMaster, J. B. *A History of the People of the United States*. (New York, 1891.)
- Miller, S. F. *Lectures on the Constitution of the United States*. (New York and Albany, 1891.)
- Morse, J. T. *Benjamin Franklin*. (Boston and New York, 1889.)
- Morse, J. T. *The Life of Alexander Hamilton*. (Boston, 1876.)
- Phillips, Henry. *Historical Sketch of the Paper Currency of the American Colonies*. (Roxbury, Mass., 1865. Printed for the author.)
- Pitkin, Timothy. *A Political and Civil History of the United States*. (New Haven, 1828.)

- Poore, B. P. *The Federal and State Constitutions of the United States.* (Washington, 1877.)
- Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society, 1862. (Boston, 1862.)
- Ramsay, David. *History of the United States.* (Second edition, Philadelphia, 1818.)
- Report of 1785. *A statement of accounts of the United States during the Administration of the Superintendent of Finance, from February 20, 1781, to November 1, 1784.* (Philadelphia, 1785.)
- Report of 1790. Reprinted in *Bankers' Magazine*, February, 1860. Vol. XIV. (New York, 1860.)
- Roosevelt, Theodore. *Gouverneur Morris.* (Boston and New York, 1888.)
- Ross, E. A. *Sinking Funds.* American Economic Association Publications. (Baltimore, 1892.)
- Sato, S. *History of the Land Question in the United States.* Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science. Fourth Series.
- Schouler, James. *History of the United States of America.* (New York, 1880.)
- Schuckers, J. W. *A Brief Account of the Finances and Paper Money of the Revolutionary War.* (Philadelphia, 1874.)
- Secret Journals of Congress. (Boston, 1820.)
- Small, A. W. *The Beginnings of American Nationality.* Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science. Eighth Series, I-II.
- Sparks, Jared. *The Diplomatic Correspondence of the American Revolution.* (Boston, 1830.)
- Sparks, Jared. *Life and Writings of Gouverneur Morris.* (Boston, 1832.)
- Sumner, W. G. *A History of American Currency.* (New York, 1874.)
- Sumner, W. G. *Alexander Hamilton.* (New York, 1890.)
- Sumner, W. G. *Robert Morris.* (New York, 1892.)
- Sumner, W. G. *The Financier and the Finances of the American Revolution.* (New York, 1891.)
- The Federalist.* Edited by Henry Cabot Lodge. (New York, 1889.)
- Walker, F. A. *Money.* (New York, 1878.)
- Webster, Pelatiah. *Political Essays on the Nature and Operation of Money, Public Finance, and Other Subjects.* (Philadelphia, 1791.)
- Wharton, Francis. *The Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States.* (Washington, 1839.)
- Winsor, J. *Narrative and Critical History of America.* (Boston and New York, 1889.)

(C) WORKS ON THE FINANCES OF THE AMERICAN COLONIES.

- Adams, E. D. *The Control of the Purse in the United States.* Kansas University Quarterly, April, 1894. (Lawrence, Kansas, 1894.)
- American State Papers, Finance, Vol. I. See Report on Direct Taxes, 1796, pp. 414 et seq. (Washington, 1832.)
- Archives of the State of New Jersey. First Series. (Newark and Trenton, 1831-1893.)
- Arnold, S. G. *History of the State of Rhode Island.* (New York, 1859-1860.)
- Austin, G. L. *The History of Massachusetts.* (Boston, 1876.)
- Bancroft, George. *History of the United States of America.* (Author's last revision. New York, 1891.)
- Barry, J. S. *The History of Massachusetts in the Colonial Period.* (Boston, 1855-1857.)
- Basset, J. S. *The Constitutional Beginnings of North Carolina.* Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, Twelfth Series, II.
- Belknap, Jeremy. *The History of New Hampshire.* (Boston, 1792.)
- Bolles, A. S. "American Finance," in Lalor's *Cyclopædia of Political Science.* (Chicago, 1882.)
- Bronson, Henry. *Historical Account of Connecticut Currency, Continental Paper Money, and the Finances of the Revolution.* Papers of New Haven Historical Society. Vol. I. (New Haven, 1865.)
- Browne, W. H. *Maryland.* (Boston and New York, 1834.)
- Crowell, J. F. *Taxation in the Colony of New Jersey.* Trinity College Publications, VI. (Durham, N. C., 1893.)
- Douglass, William. *Summary of the British Settlements in North America.* (Boston and London, 1755.)
- Douglas, C. H. J. *The Financial History of Massachusetts.* Columbia College Studies in History, Economics, and Public Law. (New York, 1892.)
- Doyle, J. A. *English Colonies in America.* (New York, 1889.)
- Ely, R. T. *Taxation in American States and Cities.* (New York, 1888.)
- Felt, J. B. *An Historical Account of Massachusetts Currency.* (Boston, 1839.)
- Felt, J. B. *Statistics of Taxation in Massachusetts.* In Collections of the American Statistical Association, Vol. I. Part III. (Boston, 1847.)
- Fiske, John. *The American Revolution.* (Boston and New York 1891.)

- Franklin, Benjamin. *An Historical Account of the Constitution and Government of Pennsylvania.* (London, 1759.) For the disputed question of the authorship of this work, see, Ford's *Franklin Bibliography*, 110-111; Sabin's *Bibliotheca Americana*, VII. 13.
- Frothingham, Richard. *The Rise of the Republic of the United States.* (Boston, 1886.)
- Gordon, T. F. *History of Pennsylvania to 1775.* (Philadelphia, 1829.)
- Hening, W. H. *Statutes at Large, a Collection of all the Laws of Virginia.* (Richmond, Va.)
- Hickcox, J. H. *A History of the Bills of Credit or Paper Money Issued by New York from 1709-1789.* (Albany, 1866.)
- Hill, William. *The First Stages of the Tariff Policy of the United States.* American Economic Association Publications. (Baltimore, 1893.)
- Hutchinson, Thomas. *The History of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.* (London, 1760, 1763, 1828.)
- Johnston, Alexander. *Connecticut.* (Boston and New York, 1887.)
- Journal of the Legislative Council of the Colony of New York, 1691-1775.* (Albany.)
- Journals of the Provincial Congress of the State of New York, 1775-1777.* (Albany, 1842.)
- Lecky, W. E. H. *History of England in the Eighteenth Century*, III. chap. 12. (American edition. New York, 1878.)
- Lodge, H. C. *A Short History of the English Colonies in America.* (New York, 1881.)
- McMahon, J. V. L. *An Historical View of the Government of Maryland.* (Baltimore, 1831.)
- Magazine of American History*, Vol. III. (New York, 1879.)
- Minot, G. R. *Continuation of the History of the Province of Massachusetts Bay from the Year 1748.* (Boston, 1798-1803.)
- Minutes of the Provincial Congress of Pennsylvania.* (Philadelphia 1852.)
- Moore, J. W. *History of North Carolina.* (Raleigh, 1880.)
- Morey, W. C. *The First State Constitutions.* *Annals of the American Academy of Political Science.* (September, 1893.)
- Mulford, I. S. *Civil and Political History of New Jersey.* (Philadelphia, 1851.)
- Phillips, Henry. *Historical Account of the Paper Currency of the American Colonies.* (Roxbury, Mass., 1863.)
- Poore, B. P. *The Federal and State Constitutions of the United States.* (Washington, 1877.)
- Proud, Robert. *The History of Pennsylvania to 1742.* (Philadelphia, 1797.)

- Ramsay, David. History of South Carolina. (Charleston, 1809.)
- Ripley, W. Z. The Financial History of Virginia. Columbia College Studies in History, Economics, and Public Law. (New York, 1893.)
- Roberts, E. H. New York. (Boston and New York, 1887.)
- Scharf, J. T. History of Delaware. (Philadelphia, 1888.)
- Scharf, J. T. History of Maryland. (Baltimore, 1879.)
- Schwab, J. C. History of the New York Property Tax. American Economic Association Publications. (Baltimore, 1890.)
- Smith, Samuel. History of the Colony of New Jersey. (Burlington, 1765.)
- Smith, William. History of New York. (Albany, 1814.)
- Sumner, W. G. History of American Currency. (New York, 1876.)
- The Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay. (Boston, 1869-1886.)
- The General Laws of Massachusetts. (Boston, 1823.)
- The Laws of the Colony of New York, 1774-1775. (Albany, 1888.)
- The Laws of New York, 1691-1773. (New York, 1774.)
- The Laws of the State of New York. Vol. I. (New York, 1789.)
- The Laws of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, 1700-1781. (Philadelphia, 1810.)
- The Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut. (Hartford, 1850-1890.)
- Trumbull, Benjamin. A Complete History of Connecticut, 1630-1764. (New Haven, 1818.)
- Whitney, E. L. The Government of the Colony of South Carolina. Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science. Thirteenth Series, I-II.
- Williamson, Hugh. The History of North Carolina. (Philadelphia, 1812.)
- Woodburn, J. A. The Causes of the American Revolution. Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science. Tenth Series.

274

BULLETIN OF THE UNIVERSITY OF WISCONSIN

ECONOMICS, POLITICAL SCIENCE, AND HISTORY SERIES, VOL. 1, NO. 3, PP. 275-562.

274

THE PROVINCE OF QUEBEC AND THE EARLY
AMERICAN REVOLUTION

A STUDY IN ENGLISH-AMERICAN COLONIAL HISTORY

BY

VICTOR COFFIN, PH. D.

Assistant Professor of European History in the University of Wisconsin

PUBLISHED BY AUTHORITY OF LAW AND WITH THE APPROVAL OF
THE REGENTS OF THE UNIVERSITY

MADISON, WIS.
PUBLISHED BY THE UNIVERSITY
JUNE, 1896

PRICE 75 CENTS

131

274

111

PREFACE.

The present study was undertaken as one in English colonial history, and my first thought was closely to investigate governmental conditions in those parts of North America that did not join in the movement of revolt, not only just before and during the War of Independence, but also for such a period beyond that struggle as might show its more immediate effects on English colonial policy. The claims of other work have required the abandonment of the greater part of this undertaking, and the present publication deals only with the Province of Quebec, from its acquisition in 1760 down into the Revolution. As an institutional study the investigation ends with the Parliamentary settlement of the constitution of the province by the Quebec Act of 1774; but as a contribution to the history of the American revolution it has gone far enough into the first years of the war to show the main connections of Canada with that event. These connections seemed to offer an important and unexplored field of investigation, and have therefore been emphasized to a degree not originally intended. On both sides of my work — institutional and revolutionary, — the Quebec Act becomes the central point.

With regard to the institutional aspect I have kept in mind, not only the ordinary tasks of government, but also the rarer and more difficult problem of the grafting of English governmental ideas on an alien society. The effort to contribute to American revolutionary history has been guided in the first instance by the idea of tracing, through the critical years immediately preceding the outbreak, the bearing of the Imperial government in an obscure corner

where a freer hand was given to it than elsewhere; later there are encountered the obscure and important questions connected with the general colonial bearing of the Quebec Act, with its special influence on the early revolutionary struggle, and with the attitude of the Canadians toward that event. On these latter points I have been obliged, though entering upon the investigation without bias or controversial intent, to present my results in more or less of a controversial style and to go somewhat largely into the evidence. For in regard to them I am strongly at variance with the hitherto prevailing opinions; being forced to conclude both that the provisions of the Quebec Act were neither occasioned nor appreciably affected by conditions in the other colonies, and that, far from being effectual in keeping the mass of the Canadians loyal to the British connection, the measure had a strong influence in precisely the opposite direction. The Canadians were *not* kept loyal, and Canada was preserved at this crisis to the British Empire through the vigor and ability of its British defenders, and through the mismanagement of their cause on the part of the revolutionists. As to the hitherto accepted belief with regard to the origin and aims of the Act, I need direct attention only to the Declaration of Independence and other utterances of the Continental Congress, and to the almost unvarying statements of American historians ever since. The belief in its beneficial influence in Quebec has been nearly as uninterruptedly held; even by those who admit its disastrous influence on the course of events in the other colonies, it has been constantly regarded as a *chef-d'oeuvre* of political wisdom and humanity.¹ With this view I have no sym-

¹ Lecky, though laying stress upon its distastefulness to the other colonies, speaks of it as especially important in the history of religious liberty, and as the result of the government having resolved, "as the event showed very wisely, that they would not subvert the ancient laws of the Province, or introduce into them the democratic system which existed in New England." (*History of England in the Eighteenth Century*, III, 399). For modern Canadian expressions of similar views, as well as for asseverations con-

2723

pathy, and I have steadily combated it in the conviction that the Quebec Act is really one of the most unwise and disastrous measures in English Colonial history. It will be shown below that it was founded on the misconceptions and false information of the Provincial officials; that though it secured the loyal support of those classes in Canada,—the clergy and the noblesse,—whose influence had been represented as all important, at the critical juncture this proved a matter of small moment. For the noblesse were found to have no influence, and that of the clergy was found in main measure paralyzed by the provision which had again laid on the people the burden of compulsory tithes. Without the Act the old ruling classes, there is every reason to believe, would have taken precisely the same attitude, and the people would not have been exposed to those influences which ranged them on the side of the invader. Apart from Canadian affairs, the disastrous effect of the measure on public feeling in the older provinces must be strongly considered in any estimate as to its expediency.

Judgment as to the general political wisdom, in distinction from the expediency, of this settlement of the constitution (and as it proved, largely of the history), of Quebec, will depend mainly on the view taken of certain general political facts and problems connected with the later history of British North America; aspects which I revert to more specially in my conclusion. A factor in the decision must, however, be the opinion held of the character and spirit of the administration to which that settlement was immediately due. An examination of the antecedents of the Act will indeed, I think, establish the conviction that the main desire of the authors of the measure was to further the security and

cerning the unshaken loyalty of the French Canadians, see Watson, *Constitutional History of Canada*; Lareau, *Hist. Droit Canadien*; Ashley, *Lectures on Canadian Constitutional History*; Bourinot, *Parliamentary Procedure and Practice in Canada*. Mr. Kingsford, the latest and best of Canadian historians, while admitting the disaffection of the Canadians at the beginning of the war, represents it as only momentary, and warmly defends the policy, expediency, and success of the Act.

prosperity of the Province and fulfill treaty obligations toward the French Canadians, and will show that there is practically no evidence of more insidious aims with regard to colonial affairs in general. But it will also appear that the step was accompanied by manifestations of an arbitrary policy, and that it was taken at a moment when its authors were exhibiting in other ways real evidences of hostility to the free spirit of American self-government. It would be surprising indeed to find a high degree of wisdom and enlightenment displayed in any colonial measure that emanated from the ministry of Lord North. The careful and candid student will on the whole, I think, come to the conclusion that though there are in the annals of that ministry many more discreditable achievements than the Quebec Act, no single step taken by it has been more politically disastrous than that which, beside increasing the colonial difficulties of the moment, is mainly responsible for the continued burdening of modern Canadian life with a steadily growing problem of national divergence.

My sources of information are stated in detail in Appendix II. The main study is based almost entirely on the manuscript copies of British State Papers in the Canadian Archives (the more important ones being also examined in the originals or original duplicates of the London Colonial and Record offices); though I have used with profit all the later material that was available, I am not conscious of any such obligations as would call for more special notice than has been given throughout in my notes. An exception however must be made in regard to Dr. William Kingsford's *History of Canada*, now in course of publication. The high value of Dr. Kingsford's book has been already fully recognized, and I very heartily concur in the recognition. My own main work on the period he has already covered has been done indeed in entire independence, and our conclusions frequently differ; but still my more intensive investigation owes a great deal to his more general and most

279 4

suggestive views. The material used for the general Western aspects of this study has been found mainly in the invaluable library of the State Historical Society of Wisconsin. With regard to personal assistance, I am heavily indebted to Dr. Douglas Brymner, the well-known Canadian Archivist, and to the late Professor Herbert Tuttle of Cornell University. Dr. Brymner has not only facilitated in every way my use of both the Canadian and the English Archives, but has supplemented this assistance by the steady help of that wide and accurate knowledge and keen judgment to which American historical scholarship already owes so much. In Professor Tuttle's seminary the study was begun in the ordinary course of post-graduate work; that early stage of it owes a great deal to his searching and suggestive criticism, as does its whole progress to the abiding inspiration of his own work and methods. I wish also to express my obligation to Professor Frederick J. Turner, the Editor of this series, for very helpful discussion on various points, and for careful and suggestive proof-reading throughout.



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

| | PAGE. |
|---|-------|
| English establishment in Quebec..... | 275 |
| The "Military Rule," 1760-4..... | 275 |
| Outline of constitutional history, 1764-91..... | 277 |
| Abstract of Quebec Act, 1774..... | 278 |
| Material conditions, 1760-74..... | 278 |

CHAPTER I.

THE FRENCH CANADIANS.

A. General.

| | |
|---|-----|
| Official characterizations..... | 282 |
| Difficulty as to such statements..... | 283 |
| General religious petitions, 1764..... | 284 |
| Relations between <i>seigneur</i> and <i>habitant</i> | 285 |
| Pacific attitude of the people..... | 286 |
| Emigration to France..... | 287 |
| Popular perception of changed conditions..... | 288 |
| Attitude toward specific matters..... | 290 |
| Watchfulness of officials..... | 291 |
| Absence of popular movements..... | 292 |
| Elements of political education..... | 293 |
| Evidence as to political progress..... | 294 |
| The <i>bourgeoisie</i> | 295 |

B. The Noblesse and the Clergy.

| | |
|---|-----|
| General official statements as to Noblesse..... | 297 |
| Political manifestations of noblesse..... | 298 |
| The Clergy in the "Military Period"..... | 299 |
| Satisfactory conduct of Clergy throughout..... | 301 |

CHAPTER II.

THE BRITISH SETTLERS.

A. Numbers, Origin, Occupations, Character.

| | PAGE. |
|--|-------|
| Numbers..... | 303 |
| Birth and early life..... | 303 |
| Americans and non-Americans..... | 304 |
| Occupied mainly in trade..... | 305 |
| Connection with the land..... | 306 |
| Antagonism to of Provincial executive..... | 306 |
| As shown in general official reports..... | 307 |
| Injustice of this attitude..... | 309 |

B. Political Attitude.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Prevalence of the American spirit..... | 309 |
| Apparently intolerant attitude..... | 310 |
| The two sections of the party..... | 310 |
| The Grand Jury of 1764..... | 311 |
| Petition against Murray, 1765..... | 313 |
| Opposition to customs duties..... | 313 |
| The general ground of this..... | 314 |
| The Province and the Stamp Act..... | 316 |
| Commercial memorials, 1770..... | 318 |
| Petitions for an Assembly, 1768-74..... | 318 |
| The British party and the Civil law..... | 320 |

C. Relations with the French Canadians.

| | |
|---|-----|
| Hostility to the noblesse..... | 321 |
| Increasing influence with people..... | 322 |
| Traces of this..... | 323 |
| No evidence of irreconcilable conditions..... | 324 |

CHAPTER III.

THE PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT.

A. General Status.

| | |
|--|-----|
| A Crown Colony without an Assembly..... | 326 |
| Viewed from standpoint of Constitutional legist..... | 326 |
| Proclamation of 1763 the constitutional basis..... | 328 |

| | PAGE. |
|---|-------|
| Unconstitutionality of the actual government 1764-74..... | 328 |
| Parallel case in Nova Scotia, 1749-55..... | 329 |
| Instructions to Quebec Governors..... | 330 |
| Provincial legislation null and void..... | 331 |
| Difficulty as to laws legally subsisting..... | 331 |
| - Examination of status of English civil law..... | 332 |
| - Bearing of Proclamation of 1763..... | 333 |

B. General Administration.

| | |
|---|-----|
| The position of the Governor..... | 337 |
| Relation between Governor and Council..... | 338 |
| The Council..... | 339 |
| Legislation of the period..... | 341 |
| Executive work of Governor and Council..... | 343 |
| Judicial work of Governor and Council..... | 343 |

C. Judiciary. Civil Service.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Organization of Provincial judiciary..... | 344 |
| Recognition of French conditions..... | 346 |
| Important change of 1770..... | 347 |
| Laws actually in use..... | 348 |
| Confusion and difficulty on point..... | 349 |
| Continued use of French law..... | 352 |
| Slight resort of people to courts..... | 354 |
| Injury from confusion and uncertainty..... | 355 |
| Burdensome procedure..... | 356 |
| Abuses of Civil Service..... | 357 |
| Patent offices and fees..... | 358 |

D. Finances.

| | |
|---|-----|
| Dependent financial position of Province..... | 360 |
| Possible sources of revenue..... | 361 |
| Customs duties..... | 362 |
| Expenditures..... | 363 |

CHAPTER IV.

THE SPIRIT AND DEVELOPMENT OF ADMINISTRATION.

| | |
|---------------------------|-----|
| Scope of the enquiry..... | 365 |
|---------------------------|-----|

A. The Provincial Governors.

| | PAGE. |
|---|-------|
| Unusual importance of office..... | 365 |
| Governor Murray..... | 366 |
| Policy of Murray's administration..... | 368 |
| Governor Carleton..... | 369 |
| Policy of Carleton's administration..... | 371 |
| Errors common to both governors..... | 372 |
| Carleton's attitude toward French..... | 373 |
| The importance of his views in this regard..... | 375 |

B. The Imperial Office.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Imperial attitude toward French and English..... | 375 |
| Prejudice against the English party..... | 378 |
| General policy of Imperial executive..... | 380 |
| As shown in the fundamental documents..... | 380 |
| The commission of Governor Murray..... | 381 |
| As compared with a Nova Scotian one (1749)..... | 382 |
| With a New York one (1754)..... | 383 |
| Bearing of the divergences..... | 384 |
| Commissions and Instructions of Carleton..... | 384 |
| Official relations of Imperial and Provincial authorities.....(Note) | 386 |
| Special interpositions of Imperial executive..... | 386 |
| In regard to legislation..... | 387 |
| Executive interferences..... | 388 |
| Hillsborough and inter-provincial Congresses..... | 389 |

CHAPTER V.

THE QUEBEC ACT, — ITS ORIGINS AND AIMS.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Special interest of the Act..... | 391 |
| The different aspects of its importance..... | 391 |

A. Preliminaries.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Long delay of the settlement of the government..... | 391 |
| Instability of English administrations, 1760-70..... | 392 |
| General references to Canadian affairs, 1764-74..... | 393 |
| Appearance of the Quebec Bill, May 2, 1774..... | 394 |
| The Commons' Debates on Quebec Bill..... | 395 |
| Small attendance in House..... | 397 |

*B. History of Main Provisions.**a. Boundaries.*

| | PAGE. |
|---|-------|
| Importance of this feature as affecting general Western history | 398 |
| Modern views in regard to it | 398 |
| The idea of change in British policy, 1760-3 | 399 |
| Slightness of evidence produced therefor | 400 |
| Pertinent circumstances attending treaty of Paris, 1763 | 400 |
| Political writing and the new acquisitions | 401 |
| Arguments used in Parliamentary debates | 403 |
| Bancroft and Lecky on the Treaty | 404 |
| The Proclamation of October, 1763 | 405 |
| Implied duplicity of its language | 406 |
| Profession of solicitude for Indians | 406 |
| Real meaning of this | 407 |
| Causes for anxiety about Indians | 408 |
| Previous Imperial attitude on matter | 409 |
| Proclamation of 1763 only the culmination of this | 411 |
| The special question as to limits of Canada | 411 |
| Absence of definite idea of limits at peace | 412 |
| Preliminary consideration of matter | 413 |
| Proclamation in this regard only a partial settlement | 415 |
| Disorganization of fur-trade in delay of full provision | 416 |
| Steady increase of injury and danger | 417 |
| Natural result the extension of Quebec | 419 |
| Discussion of matter in Quebec Act Debates | 420 |
| Statements of Wedderbourne and Lyttleton | 420 |
| Simply expressions of old colonial policy | 423 |
| As is also the whole treatment of matter | 423 |
| The steady attitude of the Board of Trade | 424 |
| Expression of it in 1768 | 424 |
| Franklin and Hillsborough on this | 426 |
| "Vandalia" grant in 1772 no disproof of this | 426 |
| For this region on different basis | 427 |
| As shown by Reports of 1768 and 1772 | 428 |
| Old policy still existing north of Ohio | 429 |
| William Knox on the point | 429 |
| Disastrous character of this Western policy | 431 |

b. Religion.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Lecky and Continental Congress on this provision | 432 |
| Government and the Roman Catholic Church in Canada | 433 |

| | PAGE. |
|---|---------|
| Real import of the Treaty provision | 434 |
| Concessions in regard to the Bishop..... | 435 |
| Instructions to Carleton, 1768..... | 437 |
| Exact force of provisions of 1774..... | 438 |
| No real Establishment of Roman Catholic Church..... | 439 |
| As shown by Carleton's Instructions, 1775..... | 439 |
| Provisions of these in favor of Church of England | 440 |
| Discussion of subject in Commons, 1774..... | 441 |
| Position of Roman Catholic Church but slightly improved..... | 442 |
| Treatment of Church in Island of Granada, 1763-8 | 444 |
| Government influenced mainly by Treaty obligations | 446 |
| As shown by illiberality elsewhere | 447 |
| Liberal conduct toward Church throughout period..... | 447 |
| Attitude toward regular clergy..... | 449 |
| <i>c. Civil Law.</i> | |
| Establishment of French law, 1774..... | 450 |
| But English law not properly "abolished."..... | 451 |
| Development of policy in this matter, 1763-74..... | 451 |
| Carleton's vigorous views..... | 455 |
| Reports of Provincial officials..... | 456 |
| Important change in regard to land-granting, 1771..... | 457 |
| Reasons for and meaning of this..... | 458 |
| The legal provision in the Commons, 1774 | 460 |
| Instructions to Carleton, 1775..... | 461 |
| <i>d. Legislative Assembly.</i> | |
| Arbitrary appearance of denial of this..... | 463 |
| Board of Trade on, in 1765..... | 463 |
| Presumption of Assembly in later Instructions..... | 464 |
| Report of Wedderbourne, 1772..... | 465 |
| Discussion of matter by Masères, 1773..... | 467 |
| The import of his views..... | 468 |
| Debate in Commons, 1774..... | 469 |
| No evidence of sinister design..... | 471 |
| Absence of such evidence with regard to Act throughout..... | 472 |
| But no reasons for careful concealment..... | 472 |
| Some reason for open avowal..... | 472 |

C. Application of the Act.

| | PAGE. |
|--|-------|
| New Instructions to Governor, 1775 | 473 |
| New development in regard to council | 474 |
| Checked by home government | 475 |
| Failure of Act to reform official abuses | 477 |
| Continued confusion and uncertainty in law | 478 |
| Anarchy in administration of law, 1775-91 | 478 |
| Act therefore does not advance good government | 479 |

CHAPTER VI.

THE QUEBEC ACT AND THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

A. The Revolution in the Province of Quebec.

| | |
|--|-----|
| No ground for laudation of <i>policy</i> of Act | 480 |
| For not intended as this would imply | 480 |
| And did not produce the effects supposed | 481 |
| Disastrous influence on general colonial troubles | 481 |
| Effect on English party in Quebec | 482 |
| Carleton's report of seditious movements, November, 1774 | 483 |
| Correspondence with Boston Committee | 484 |
| Final split in the English party | 485 |
| Tories and Revolutionists | 485 |
| Latter a small element | 486 |
| Conduct of former throughout war | 487 |
| - The Quebec Act and the French Canadians | 487 |
| No ground to expect favorable results on latter | 488 |
| Ground for expecting unfavorable ones | 489 |
| Evidence as to alienating effects | 490 |
| Difficulty as to early reports | 492 |
| Influence of the English malcontents | 493 |
| Fears of the French Canadian leaders | 493 |
| Increase of popular hostility to Act | 494 |
| First shown clearly in American invasion | 495 |
| Early steps of Congress concerning Canada | 495 |
| The mission of John Brown | 496 |
| The first military operations (May, 1775) | 496 |
| Carleton attempts to raise militia | 497 |
| His complete failure | 497 |
| Proclaims Martial Law (June 9, 1775) | 498 |

| | PAGE. |
|--|-------|
| Official reports as to continued hostile attitude of people..... | 498 |
| Evidence of Chief-Justice Hey and M. Badeau | 500 |
| Evidence from the Continental forces..... | 501 |
| Inadequacy of some contemporary reflections..... | 504 |
| Futility of efforts of the clergy..... | 505 |
| Defection of Canadians not merely momentary..... | 506 |
| As shown by later careful official reports..... | 507 |
| Widespread nature of the disaffection..... | 510 |
| Statistics as to Canadians on British side..... | 510 |
| Attitude of the <i>bourgeoisie</i> | 511 |
| Effect of the French-American alliance..... | 512 |
| Courses open to noblesse and clergy..... | 512 |
| Quebec Act wholly needless and largely injurious..... | 513 |

B. The Failure of the American Expeditions.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Connection of this enquiry with previous statements..... | 513 |
| No effective use made of Canadian partiality..... | 514 |
| Conduct of invaders tends to alienate Canadians | 514 |
| Inadequacy of general causes assigned for failure..... | 514 |
| Colonial authorities as to importance of Canada | 515 |
| Real place of the "hard money" difficulty..... | 516 |
| Canadians laid under contribution..... | 517 |
| Continental statements as to ill-treatment of..... | 518 |
| General character and conduct of Continental troops..... | 521 |
| Statements of commanders..... | 522 |
| Testimony from the ranks..... | 523 |
| Dangerous influence of Carleton upon latter..... | 525 |
| The last of the expedition..... | 526 |
| General reflections upon it..... | 527 |
| What might have been achieved | 528 |

CONCLUSION.

| | |
|---|-----|
| Relations of study to American Revolution..... | 529 |
| Purpose of examination of the origins of Quebec Act | 530 |
| Objection with regard to the earlier colonial troubles..... | 530 |
| Consideration of English ministerial conditions, 1764-70..... | 531 |
| Whig party committed to Quebec Act provisions..... | 532 |
| The study with regard to later Canadian history..... | 533 |
| Misfortunes entailed by act..... | 533 |

274⁹

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

xvii

| | PAGE. |
|--|-------|
| What should have been done in 1774..... | 534 |
| Illustration from case of Louisiana..... | 534 |
| Considerations as to early English settlement..... | 535 |
| Loyalists kept out by the Quebec Act..... | 537 |
| The direct developments from the Act..... | 538 |
| Lord Durham's Report in 1839..... | 539 |
| Opinions as to Anglicizing of Quebec..... | 540 |
| The development that might have been secured..... | 542 |

APPENDIX I.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--------|
| The Quebec Act, 1774..... | 544-52 |
| The Quebec Revenue Act, 1774..... | 552-57 |

APPENDIX II.

| | |
|------------------|---------|
| Authorities..... | 558-562 |
|------------------|---------|



THE PROVINCE OF QUEBEC AND THE EARLY AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

INTRODUCTION.

What was known under the French as Canada or New France came into English possession through the capitulation of Montreal, September 8, 1760, and was finally ceded to England by the Treaty of Paris, February 10, 1763, closing the Seven Years' War. As thus ceded, no definite limits were assigned to "Canada, with all its dependencies," the only boundary line mentioned in regard to it being the Mississippi river. The British government was thus given a free hand in defining its extent, subject to the fixed boundaries and well-established claims of the adjacent colonies, to the indefinite possessions of the Hudson's Bay Company, and, more or less, to the conceptions of the Canadians themselves. Many causes intervened to delay a final settlement of the matter of boundaries, and meanwhile, by the Royal Proclamation of October 7, 1763, the new Province was defined so as to embrace, for the time being, a rectangular district of not more than 100,000 square miles, extending along both sides of the St. Lawrence river from the mouth of the River St. John to the point where the St. Lawrence is intersected by the 45th degree of north latitude.

From the date of the capitulation till August 10, 1764, the new acquisition was governed by the commanders of the

English forces in occupation, and the period is therefore known as that of the Military Rule. The investigation of political conditions in the Province does not necessarily have much to do with this preliminary suspension of civil government; but a brief statement of the general character of the Military Rule is necessary for several reasons, especially to show what had been the earliest experience of the French Canadians under British government, and with what anticipations they were likely to view its permanent establishment. It may be safely asserted that the military character of the government, so far as felt by the people in ordinary affairs, was to a large extent merely nominal. The final authority of course resided in the military arm, and the courts established for the administration of justice were of a military form; but these courts were not governed by the principles of martial law, at least in matters where the old French law or custom could be discovered or applied. French Canadians had a share in their administration,¹ while such instruments of local government as existed under the French seem to have been largely retained.² All contemporary testimony from the French Canadians is unmistakeable in its appreciation of the justice and humanity of the general proceedings of the military, and of the hopes the people had thus acquired for the future.³ The official statements throughout the period as to the very satisfactory conduct of the French Canadians must be admitted to show a large degree of at least external harmony. We may conclude therefore that the conduct of the British authorities during this difficult time

¹ See Lareau, *Hist. de droit Canadien*, II, 87. For evidence of the satisfaction of the French with these courts see reference to petitions for their retention. (Canadian Archives, Q. 2. p. 273).

² See as to continuance of the office and functions of the captains of militia, Ordinance concerning sale of fire wood, Nov. 27, 1765, Vol. of Ordinances in Can. Archives.

³ See *Report Canadian Arch.*, 1888, p. 19. See also *N. Y. Colonial Documents*, X., 1155, for a French memoir (1763) concerning the possibility of exciting a rebellion in Canada. It speaks of the people having been further drawn from their allegiance to France by the "mild régime of the English, the latter in their policy having neglected nothing to expedite the return of that comfort and liberty" formerly enjoyed.

had been such as to win in large degree the confidence of the conquered people, and that civil government was established in 1764 under favorable auspices.

It was on the model of the other Crown Colonies in America that British civil government was introduced on August 10, 1764, in pursuance of the Proclamation of October 7, 1763, and under a commission appointing Gen. James Murray, one of the resident military officers, "Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over our Province of Quebec." Under this official and his successor, Col. Guy Carleton, government was conducted throughout the whole period covered by my investigation. Until 1775 the Proclamation of 1763, a purely executive act, continued to form the basis of administration; for the Quebec Act, passed May, 1774, and going into force one year later, was the first interference of the Imperial Parliament in Canadian affairs. This remained the constitution of Canada from 1775 to 1791, at which latter date its provisions, so far as they affected the western part of the country, then being settled by the United Empire Loyalists and now known as the Province of Ontario, were repealed by the *Constitutional Act*. As affecting however the settled regions acquired from the French and distinctively known after 1791 as Lower Canada, the Quebec Act, in its main provisions, still continues in force. It has kept alive in British North America a French nation, never so united or self-conscious as at the present time. One of the main objects of this inquiry is to investigate closely the conditions which led to this Act, and the state of government which it was intended to amend, with reference to the general wisdom and expediency of the measure and to its special connections with the American Revolution.

As I must constantly anticipate in my references to the Quebec Act it will be well perhaps to introduce here a short statement of its main provisions.¹ With the accompanying Revenue Act it enacted:

¹ See App. I. for full reprint.

1. That the province of Quebec should be extended to include all the territory which the French had been supposed to lay claim to under the name of Canada, i. e., on the east to Labrador, on the west to the boundaries of Louisiana and the Hudson Bay Company's territory, and on the south to the boundaries of the other provinces and the Ohio; including therefore to the southwest and west the regions which now form the states of Ohio, Michigan, Indiana, Illinois, Wisconsin, and part of Minnesota.

2. That all previous governmental provisions in regard to Quebec as before constituted or to any part of the added territory should be annulled, and that the Provincial government should for the future consist of a governor and council, both appointed by the king, and together invested with a strictly limited legislative and money power. That a revenue should be provided for the province by customs duties imposed by the Imperial government, said revenue being entirely at the disposition of the Imperial authorities.

3. That full toleration of the Roman Catholic religion should exist in the province, including the removal of all disabilities by test oaths; and that the Church of Rome should "hold, receive and enjoy" its accustomed dues and rights with respect to its own adherents.

4. That though the English criminal law should continue to prevail, the inhabitants should "hold and enjoy their property and possessions, together with all customs and usages relating thereto, and all others their civil rights," according to the ancient laws and customs of Canada; these laws and customs to remain in exclusive possession until altered by provincial ordinances.

It may readily be imagined that Canada emerged from the final struggle of French and English in no very prosperous condition. Authorities agree in their doleful descriptions of the greatly weakened and almost destitute state of the colony in 1759, on the eve of the great contest; and the efforts of the two following years still further reduced it. During the first or military stage of the British occupation we meet with frequent official references to the danger of famine, and the dependence of the people on the government. But this state was not of long duration. When civil government is established, August, 1764, the crisis seems past, and the colony may be said to have again attained the position it had held on the eve of the

conquest. The new blood and capital that had been introduced, together with the unbroken peace of four years, had stimulated all branches of industry and had opened the way for the remarkable growth that is clearly traceable down to 1775. The inhabitants cultivated their lands and pursued the Indian trade and the fisheries in peace and with comparatively little molestation from the new state of things. Content to be left alone, they concerned themselves little about public affairs, and it is not till 1775 that we meet with any general political manifestations on their part. Harvests steadily increased; the fear of famine died away; the fanciful schemes for the commercial salvation of the province which we meet with in the early years gradually disappeared. Trade, at least in the wholesale and foreign branches, fell into the hands chiefly of the small but enterprising body of new English-speaking settlers who, attracted by the fur trade and the fisheries, had followed in the wake of the conqueror; and it soon received from them a very notable impulse. The cultivation of the soil, remaining almost entirely in the hands of the French Canadians, shared more slowly in the general improvement. The old French methods of culture had always been bad, and it was not till the latter part of the French régime that the country had produced enough for its own subsistence; but before the year 1770 a considerable quantity of grain was being exported.¹ In the opening up of new

¹ Striking evidence as to the comparatively prosperous condition of the people in the latter part of the period is furnished in scattered references of the more observing revolutionists who visited the province, 1775-8. Charles Carroll (*Journal*, Maryland Hist. Soc. Papers, 1876, p. 98), writes in May, 1776, that the country along the Sorel "is very populous, the villages are large and neat, and joined together with a continued range of single houses, chiefly farmers;" and after contrasting the prosperity of these farmers with the poverty of the seigneurs, adds: "It is conjectured that the farmers in Canada cannot be possessed of less than one million pounds sterling in specie; they hoard up their money to portion their children; they neither let it out at interest nor expend it in the purchase of lands." The writer of Henry's *Account of the Campaign* directed special attention to the *habitant*, and testifies to his economy and prosperity. "It seemed to me that the Canadians in the vicinage of Quebec lived as comfortably in general as the generality of the Pennsylvanians did at that time in the County of Lancaster." (Albany, 1877, p. 95.)

lands, however, very little progress was made in the early years; not indeed until the old French form of grant was reverted to.¹ Manufactures were primitive and unimportant. The policy of the government with regard to them does not seem to have differed in the main from that followed contemporaneously in the other colonies; though there are evidences of more enlightened conduct in the latter part of the period.²

The growth in population of the province during this period cannot be very accurately stated, but a comparison of the various conflicting estimates with general data leads to conclusions that are probably not much astray. A considerable decrease was occasioned by the removal to France, on the conquest, of most of the official and a large part of the noble and commercial classes;³ and in 1762 the official returns give a total of 65,633 for the settled parts of the province. Beyond this there was by 1775 a scattered population in the upper western country of about 1,000 families, as well as fishing colonies around the mouth of the St. Lawrence. The growth throughout the period was almost entirely a natural one. Cramahé writes in 1773 that "fourteen years' experiences have proved that the increase of the province must depend upon its own population." But the French Canadians then as now needed no outside assistance in this matter, and it is probably safe to estimate them at 90,000 in 1775. Higher estimates, (and the contemporary ones of Carleton and Masères are much higher),⁴ are manifestly inaccurate in view of the fact that the official census of 1784 asserts a total of only 113,012.

The population from the beginning was divided into two well defined sections of very unequal strength; (1) the French Canadians, who are constantly referred to in the official correspondence as the "new subjects," and (2) the

¹ See below.

² See Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, pp. 760, 839; Q. 6, p. 15.

³ Murray states July 17, 1761, that the population was then 10,000 less than in 1759.

⁴ Evidence before Commons in Quebec Act debate, Cavendish, *Report*.

small new English-speaking element, designated as regularly as the "old subjects." These sections, in their distinctive features and activities, will be later considered separately. Suffice it now to say that the British element was almost exclusively a trading one, and that but a very small part of it devoted itself to agricultural pursuits. It had been attracted to the province by the fur or Indian trade, and we shall find that the influence on the fortunes of the colony thus early exerted from this quarter was destined to be of the utmost importance throughout the period.

CHAPTER I.

THE FRENCH CANADIANS.

A. *General.*

It does not come within the possibilities of this investigation to present any close character study of the French Canadian, though it will be readily conceded that some such study is indispensable to the proper understanding of the conditions under which we must consider the new rule. For such a picture we can, however, go to Parkman, whose latest sketches bring the *habitant* and *gentilhomme* before us as the English conqueror found them; the former a loyal, ignorant, easily-led, but somewhat unstable peasantry of military extraction and training, with a decided taste for the wild, free life of the woods; the latter an entirely military semi-nobility, who from their first appearance had as the basis of existence the Court and the Camp, and who were almost as poor and ignorant and politically powerless as the *habitant*, whom up to this time they had found a docile follower, and of whose wild and hardy life they had been full sharers. In less romantic but not less pleasing colors is the *habitant* described by Governor Murray in 1762 — "a strong, healthy race, plain in their dress, virtuous in their morals, and temperate in their living;" in general entirely ignorant and credulous, they had been prejudiced against the English, but nevertheless had lived with the troops "in a harmony unexampled even at home;" and needed only to be reassured on the subject of the preservation of their religion to become good subjects.¹ Two years later the same authority writes of the French Canadians generally as "perhaps the bravest and best race upon the globe, a race, who, could they be indulged with a

¹ *General Report*, 1762, (Can. Arch., B. 7, p. 1).

few privileges which the laws of England deny to Roman Catholics at home, would soon become the most faithful and useful set of men in the American empire."¹ And November, 1767, Carleton describes them as comprising 10,000 men who had served in the late war, "with as much valor, with more zeal, and more military knowledge for America than the regular troops of France that were joined with them." Indeed, this military origin and training of the people must be always kept in mind in estimating their attitude and the causes likely to influence them. Easily led, they were by no means timid or spiritless.

The clearly marked upper class sections of the French Canadian population — the noblesse and the clergy — will be considered more particularly later; for though small in numbers their political weight was very great. Meanwhile, I shall have regard to general features, so far as they can be discerned. And here we are not always free of uncertainty; for when the new English observers speak of the "French Canadians," or the "new subjects," or the "people," in a general way, it is by no means always easy to determine how much worth the observation has as a general one, or to what extent the observer's vision is narrowed by special conditions. There can be little doubt that most of the representations of the officials as to the attitude and character of the "new subjects" are really applicable only to the small section of them that came more immediately and easily under view,—the noblesse. These were continually hanging about the governmental steps and obscuring the mass of the people; the latter, with no knowledge of their former leaders' designs, and steadily growing out of sympathy with their whole life, stolidly pursued the work that was nearest to their hands, content to be let alone, and troubling themselves very little about changes of government or law.

¹To Board of Trade, October 29th, 1764. Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 233.

One of the first unmistakably general observations by the new rulers is an assertion by Murray in 1762 that the people are not ripe for the same form of government as in the other colonies. Their strong attachment to the church of their fathers and the great influence the clergy had exercised and could still exercise over them, are frequently spoken of and insisted upon; though as early as 1762 (after two years of peace and English government), we find Murray stating in his official report that "they do not submit as tamely to the yoke, and under sanction of the capitulation¹ they every day take an opportunity to dispute the tithes with their curés."² A year later (October 23, 1763),³ he urges on the home government the necessity of caution in dealing with religious matters; adding however, that the people would not stickle for the continuance of the hierarchy, but would be content with the preservation of the priesthood as a devotional and educational body. Several petitions in regard to religious matters accompany this letter, and these are undoubtedly the first general manifestations within our period of French Canadian opinion on any subject.⁴ They appear on the eve of civil government, being called forth probably by the news of the definite ceding of the country to England. Of their genuineness and representative character there can be little doubt, and making all allowance for the spirit of humility and modesty which the situation would be likely to engender, we cannot escape the conclusion that the body of the people had no desire for anything more in regard to religion than the measures necessary for the complete en-

¹ In the 27th article of the capitulation (September 8, 1760), the French commander had demanded that the people should be obliged by the English to pay the customary dues to the Church — a demand which was referred by Amherst to the will of the king. The clause was undoubtedly instigated by the clergy, and may be interpreted as showing that the latter were not at all disposed to trust to voluntary contributions. The point should be kept in mind in considering the attitude of the Canadians towards the Quebec Act, which re-established compulsory payment.

² Can. Arch., B. 7, p. 1.

³ *Ib.*, Q. 1, p. 251.

⁴ *Ib.*, Q. 1, pp. 226-47.

joyment of its voluntary features, and that they were already distinctly opposed to its legal establishment with compulsory powers.

As to the relations between the *habitants* and their old secular leaders, the noblesse, we have few indications previous to the Quebec Act. Murray, in a general report¹ immediately after his recall, (while still governor, but under the shadow of disapproval and investigation), represents the state of things as perfectly satisfactory, in the sense of the *habitants* being still of a submissive and reverent spirit; saying that they are shocked at the insults offered the noblesse by other classes in the community. This must be taken very cautiously, for Murray's object was to represent the noblesse, with whom he had been very closely associated against those other classes, as thoroughly in sympathy with the great mass of the people. Nor of much greater weight, probably, is Carleton's representation, March 15th, 1769, as to the advisability of admitting some of the noblesse to the Council on account of their influence over the lower classes (and over the Indians).² For he too seems to have remained in error on this point until roughly awakened by the utter failure of the seigneurs in 1775 in their attempt to assert, for the first time since the conquest, the old influence. This will appear more fully later; at present we need only notice the statement by Chief Justice Hey, that Carleton "has taken an ill measure of the influence of the Seigneurs or clergy over the lower orders of the people, whose principle of conduct, founded in fear and the sharpness of authority over them now no longer exercised, is unrestrained, and breaks out in every shape of contempt and detestation of those whom they used to behold with terror, and who gave

¹ Can. Arch., B. 8, p. 1. (Aug. 20, 1766.)

² Can. Arch., Q. 6, p. 34. See also to Shelbourne, Jan. 20, 1768 (Q. 5-1, 370), and Nov. 5, 1767 (Q. 5-1, 260). The latter is printed in full in *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 41.

them, I believe, too many occasions to express it."¹ Our later investigation will show that there can be little doubt that the influence of the noblesse had steadily declined from the first hour of English domination, and that the *habitant* had come with remarkable rapidity to look upon the seigneur merely in the light of an obnoxious landlord.² The causes of this change are not obscure and include a clearer perception of the changed character of government than the Canadians are generally credited with. For the main reason, no doubt, was the greatly altered position of the noblesse under the new regime, and their utter deprivation of that real military and nominal judicial authority which they had formerly enjoyed.³ The contemporary social relations in old France will at once suggest themselves to the reader; and I need here only remark that this is not the only indication we have that social conditions in the New France were not so different as has usually been supposed.

Coming more particularly to the matter of general political attitude we are at once struck by the fact that the trouble shortly before experienced with the Acadians seems to have no parallel in Canada down to the American invasion. At the capitulation the Canadians acquiesced by the most complete submission in the new rule, and during the period that elapsed before the fate of the country was finally decided we have in the reports of the commanding officers only the strongest expressions of content with the manner in which they are conducting themselves. Murray's testimony (already quoted), is amply supported by that of others representing all sections of the country. Burton (commanding at Three Rivers), says that they "seem very happy in the change of their masters," and "begin to feel

¹ To the Lord Chancellor, Aug. 28, 1775. Can. Arch., Q. 12, p. 203.

² See Masères' *Account of the Proceedings, etc.*; also Cramahé to Hillsborough, July 25, 1772. (Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 160.)

³ The influence of military position upon the *habitant* was early perceived by Murray, who in 1764 strongly urges on the home government the necessity on this account of the military and civil authority in the Province being united. (Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 206.)

that they are no longer slaves." ¹ Gage (at Montreal), writes that "the people in general seem well enough disposed towards their new masters." ² The strongest assertions come from Haldimand, a French-speaking Swiss soldier, (Carleton's successor in 1778 as governor of the province), who may be supposed not only to have been best able to make himself acquainted with the real attitude of the people, but also to have been the least easily swayed in his conclusions. August 25th, 1762, ³ he writes in the most emphatic manner in regard to the groundlessness of the fears that had been expressed lest the Canadians should be dangerously affected by a recent success of the French in Newfoundland, and later asserts that, with the exception of the noblesse and clergy they are not uneasy as to their fate, and will easily console themselves for the change of rulers. ⁴ Allowance must probably be made in these representations for the natural desire of the military authorities to put their management of the country in the best light possible; but making all such we can still have no doubt that matters were in a perfectly pacific (perhaps, rather, lethargic), state, and that from the conquerors' standpoint the conduct of the *habitant* left little to be desired.

The people were indeed thoroughly exhausted from the recent struggle and all thought of further resistance had departed with their leaders, the most irreconcilable of whom had gone to France at the capitulation. They had been stimulated in their efforts against the English by representations of the tyranny the latter if successful would immediately institute,—representations which had been the more easily credited from their knowledge of the fate which had overtaken the Acadians. ⁵ But that this fear was

¹ Official report, May, 1763. Can. Arch., B. 7, pp. 61-83.

² Official report, March 20, 1762. Ibid., B. 7, p. 84.

³ Ibid., B. 1, p. 216.

⁴ To Amherst, December 20, 1762, and February, 1763. Ibid., B. 1, pp. 262, 266.

⁵ Murray to Halifax, March 9, 1764. Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 73.

rapidly dispelled is strongly indicated by the statistical statement with regard to the emigration to France, which had been provided for in the treaty, and which was open without restriction to all for eighteen months from its conclusion. As we have already seen the leading French of the official, military and commercial classes had left before the cession; it is safe to conclude that these for the most part had never been very strongly rooted in the country, and were first of all, Frenchmen. The later records show that those who had any landed interests in Canada joined but little in this movement, and that still fewer of the mass of the people went.¹ The term of facilitated emigration extended through the summer of 1764, and in August Murray, after collecting statistical statements from the different commanders, writes that only 270 are going from the whole province, most of whom "are officers, their wives, children and servants." The tone with which the people finally accepted the irrevocable handing over of the country to England is very plainly to be seen in the religious addresses which have already been referred to as the first movement in any sense common that we meet with on the part of the Canadians. The tone is a manly one, and without any hypocritical professions of pleasure at the state of affairs, indicates a readiness (recognizing "que toute autorité vient de Dieu") to make the best of a bad business.

In general, therefore, with regard to the lower classes, we do not find throughout the period preceding the Quebec Act any indication that might have made the rulers uneasy. And certainly if anybody had profited by the change of government it was the *habitant*. He had been relieved from very grievous burdens, and at least during the earlier years, does not seem to have felt much new pressure in their stead. His peace and security had formerly cost him con-

¹ Emigration on their part was of course a much more serious matter. And the Canadians were early remarkable for love of their native country. (See Cramahé to Hillsborough, July 25, 1772. Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 160.)

stant and often most critical military service; now it cost him nothing.¹ And that he was not slow in appreciating some aspects of the change in government is shown by a difficulty those in charge of the *batteaux* service met with in the autumn of 1765. This service (of transporting by water troops and supplies to the garrisons in the upper country), was a constantly necessary one, and had been performed during the military period (i. e., 1760-4) without any difficulty by means of impress warrants,—the people apparently regarding as a matter of course what they had been accustomed under the old régime to do as a part of their regular militia duty. On the separation of the civil from the military authority such demands upon the people in time of peace became illegal,¹ and the service had not been otherwise provided for. During the first year of civil government it seems to have been continued, however, in a moderate way without opposition that we hear of; but October, 1765 the officer in charge reports great difficulties. Governor Murray had refused to grant impress warrants, sending instead to the local authorities recommendations of a peremptory nature; but we find it stated that half of the parishes applied to had refused to send a man, and that in one place the people had threatened to beat the bailiff. The military officer reports that "the bailiffs disregarded the orders given and the people were adverse and corrupted," and again that "the Canadians are now poisoned in their minds and instructed that they cannot be forced on such services." And it was not until an impress warrant of full power had been issued by the governor (on the plea of unavoidable necessity), that the service could be performed.¹ But it would seem that it was only on its military side of relief from oppressive duty and the immediate control of the seigneur or captain of militia, that the change of government seems thus to have

¹ See opinion of Prov. Att.-Gen., October 5th, 1765. Can. Arch., Q. 3, p. 81.

² Lords of Trade to Colonial Secretary, May 16th, 1766, with enclosures. Can. Arch., Q. 3, pp. 53-120.

been appreciated. In a letter to Shelbourne of December 24th, 1767, Carleton, after discussing the fact that the French Canadians still continued to transact their minor legal affairs in ways which would be invalid in the higher courts, writes that he has met only one Canadian "who sees the great revolution¹ in its full influence," and that he anticipates general consternation as the situation comes to be known.

In January, 1768, we find Carleton declaring that the exclusion of the Canadians from office, though directly concerning but a few (as but few were eligible), indirectly affected the minds of all, being regarded as a national slight and prejudice. There is strong reason for doubting the accuracy of this statement and for believing that on the whole the body of the people did not trouble themselves about the matter. It is difficult to come to a decision as to how far a similar opinion may be justified in regard to the movement that undoubtedly gained ground, or at least more confident expression, every year, with reference to the full restoration of the ancient civil laws.² But we are safe in taking whatever general expression we find on this head in a much more representative light, for every presumption would lead in that direction, and the influence of the clergy was a constant factor therefor.³ As stated above, the earlier years do not show any very decided steps, and no doubt the more resolute stand of the later years is largely attributable to political education on the part of a few, and to the increasing pressure of the new system, which was daily augmenting the points of contact. It must from year to year have been found more difficult to follow the course with which the people have been

¹ He is referring more especially to the laws, supposedly *in toto* changed by the Proclamation of 1763.

² English criminal law was never objected to, and probably touched the people on few points. See evidence of Carleton before House of Commons, 1774, Cavendish's *Report*.

³ See in connection here the later discussion of the extent to which French and English law was actually used.

credited, of avoiding the courts (for the Canadians were naturally a litigious people).¹ Not many petitions or memorials on this subject have come down to us from these years, but there were undoubtedly more than we know of. It was Carleton's policy to discourage this or any other form of popular demonstration,—a policy which his known sympathy with the objects of the French and the hopes he held out of their being soon attained, enabled him to follow out pretty successfully. August 7th, 1769, he writes that when last at Montreal he had succeeded in suppressing "the rough draft of a memorial to the king for the ancient laws," which had been "communicated for my approval."² October 25th, of the same year, he says that the lack of petitions on this subject was due solely to himself, and that if there had been given any hint that such were thought requisite, "there is not a Canadian from one extremity of the province to the other that would not sign or set his mark to such a petition."³ He seems to have succeeded in inspiring the Canadians who were so minded with confidence in his advocacy of their wishes, and when he left the province in the autumn of 1770 (going expressly, as was well known, to give advice preparatory to a decisive settling of the government), he was presented by the French Canadians only with some addresses in regard to education, which they beg him to add to the points to be represented on their behalf.

In a word it may be safely asserted that there was nothing in the attitude of the people during this period to give the government serious disquietude. And we have evidence that the officials both at home and in the province were keeping a close watch for all symptoms of discontent, and were predisposed to see them if they existed. March 27th, 1767, Carleton writes to Sir William Johnson (in answer to

¹ Memorial of Pierre du Calvet, October, 1770. Can. Arch., Q. 7, p. 279.

² Can. Arch., Q. 6, p. 115.

³ Can. Arch., Q. 6, p. 151. Reasons for doubting this assertion will be presented later.

an opinion expressed by the latter that the Canadian traders were tampering with the Indians):—"Ever since my arrival I have observed the Canadians with an attention bordering upon suspicion, but hitherto have not discovered either actions or sentiments which do not belong to good subjects."¹ November 20, 1768,² he writes to Hillsborough (apparently in answer to some uneasiness at home), that his observation of the people has not revealed anything to cause him to give any credit to alarming reports; adding, however, (now evidently referring only to the noblesse), that he has not the least doubt of their secret attachment to France, and that the non-discovery of traces of a treasonable correspondence was not to him sufficient proof that it did not exist. Early in 1772 Hillsborough transmits to Quebec a copy of a treasonable letter to France, alleged to have been signed by members of the Canadian noblesse.³ In answer Cramahé declares his disbelief in its genuineness, but shows himself by no means satisfied of the trustworthiness of any class. However, the latest utterance we have previous to the Quebec Act is a statement by the same official, December 13th, 1773, that the people are tractable and submissive.⁴

It will be inferred from what has been said above that we are not to look for reflections of the public mind in the form of public meetings. Such demonstrations had been jealously prohibited by the French government for more than a century before the advent of the English, and while there is no indication throughout this period that the people generally expressed any wish for such a privilege,⁵ the attitude of the provincial government was

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 122.

² Letter printed in full in *Report Canadian Arch.*, 1833, p. 48.

³ Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 111.

⁴ Can. Arch., Q. 10, p. 22.

⁵ Carleton testified before the House of Commons in the debate on the Quebec Bill that he had never heard of petitions from the inhabitants to meet in bodies. The statement was supported by Chief-Justice Hey, who said that he knew of no conference among the Canadians regarding forms of government. That some popular movement,

evidently not much more liberal than during the old régime. All popular movements, not only by way of public meetings, but also through addresses, petitions, etc., were frowned upon by the authorities. Both Murray and Carleton were men of autocratic temper and of military training, and seem to have regarded all such attempts to influence governmental action as partaking of the nature of treason.

Very little need be said with regard to such administrative aspects of the new régime as might be considered factors, however slight, in the political education of the French Canadians. It will be remembered that under the old régime the highly centralized government had acted in local matters entirely by officials appointed from headquarters. The situation is but very slightly different in this first stage of English rule. The only trace of local self-government that is to be found is with regard to the parish bailiffs, (in large measure replacing the French captains of militia), who, beside their duties as administrative officers of the courts of justice, acted also in their several districts as overseers of highways and bridges, as fence viewers, and sometimes as coroners. These officials and their assistants were appointed by the government out of a list of six names annually furnished by the householders in each parish.¹ That the regulation was observed throughout the period and that the people seem on the whole to have complied with it, though not very eagerly,

however, early took place among the French of the town of Quebec is shown by a paper in the Haldimand collection. It is an answer by Murray to a charge that he occasioned discord among the old and new subjects by allowing some of the latter to meet in a deliberative way; his explanation being that this had been permitted only under careful restrictions, and with the desire of guarding the dependent French dealer against the influence of the English trader. That at least one such meeting took place is certain; but it is equally evident that there were very few, if any, more. It is most probable that the movement was due to a small group of professional men at Quebec, whom I shall have occasion to refer to later as very rapidly taking the place of the noblesse in the leadership of the people. The matter is of importance also with respect to the dreaded influence of the English trader.

¹ Ordinance of Sept. 17, 1764.

(probably, as in the case of juries, regarding it more as a burden than as a privilege), is shown by hints from the Council minutes.¹ Further than this we have no trace of participation by the people in their own government; such local affairs as were not managed by the bailiffs being in the hands of the justices of the peace or other direct appointees of the central government. Of direct representation of the people in regard to the central government there was of course none during the period, the Assembly which had been promised in the proclamation of 1763 never being established.² We need not delay over what might be regarded as forms of indirect representation,—as through the requirement that the council should consist only of residents, and through grand juries whose duty it was to report grievances, and whose report we find in one instance the direct occasion of new legislation; for these could contribute little or nothing to political education.

But yet that such political education was proceeding the following study will, I think, furnish considerable indirect and cumulative evidence. Just now I shall point only to some striking direct evidence as to the progress made up to the American invasion. It is the statement of a revolutionary officer stationed at Three Rivers, and entrusted

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 295; Ib. 5-2, p. 876.

² In regard to the assembly we meet at the outset a curious uncertainty as to whether any measures were actually taken for the bringing of it together. The modern French Canadian historian, Garneau, asserts that it was actually convoked by Murray, and that its sitting was prevented by the refusal of the Canadians to take the oaths. Marriott, in his report to the Crown, 1774, says in regard to an assembly that "the fact is, though summoned and chose for all the parishes but Quebec by Gov. Murray, it has never sat." On the other hand Masères states in 1769 that "no assembly has hitherto been summoned." The probability of fact is with Masères, for it seems incredible that such an important step as the summoning in the much-debated matter of an assembly, not to say an actual election, could have taken place without any indication being given in an unbroken official correspondence which goes minutely into comparatively insignificant matters. Marriott, (who is probably Garneau's authority), was possibly misled by some notice of the election of bailiff-lists. It is certain that no assembly was ever constituted, and that whether the French Canadians were or were not given an opportunity to refuse to take the religious oaths required, these oaths were the main cause of the delay. That delay is dwelt upon elsewhere in connection with general imperial policy and the genesis of the Quebec Act.

through that district (containing seventeen parishes), with the task of replacing the militia officers appointed by Carleton by others in the interest of the revolutionary cause. Such was the public feeling in this district that this was done by popular election, the account of which shows the existence of a high degree of interest among the Canadians in the proceeding. "In some parishes there are three or four candidates for the captaincy, and I receive information that bribery and corruption is already beginning to creep into their elections. At some the disputes run so high that I am obliged to interfere."¹ July 5, 1776, Gen. Wooster writes to Congress that he had caused similar elections to be held in every parish (apparently of the District of Montreal).² The political advance of the French Canadians will best be appreciated through the examination later of their general attitude toward the Quebec Act and the American invasion. One of the conclusions of this study is that under the discouraging and unprogressive conditions which marked the few years of misgovernment between the conquest and the American revolution they had yet made such advance in the comprehension and appreciation of English government as to justify the strongest confidence in the possibility of a rapid and harmonious Anglicizing of the new province.

I had purposed treating of the *bourgeoisie* separately, but the material seems on the whole scarcely to warrant a sharp distinction between this class and the general body of the *habitants*. In the former term I include the great majority of the inhabitants of the towns,³ as well as the retail dealers throughout the country and out of it among the Indians; and the social conditions of old France at the time would lead us to look for almost as wide a chasm between

¹ Amer. Arch., IV. 5, 481. "Extract of a letter from an officer in the Continental Army, dated Trois Rivières, March 24, 1776."

² 5 Amer. Archives, I. 12.

³ The population of Quebec and Montreal is given in 1765 by Murray as 14,700.

the *bourgeois* and the *habitant* as between either and the *seigneur*. But this is a point in which we do not find the social conditions of old and new France corresponding; for in Canada the *bourgeois* attitude was in the main that of the peasantry from which it had largely sprung, and with which it had constant and close intercourse.¹ It is probable indeed that in the absence of manufactures and the great possession of trade by the English element, a large part of the urban population was directly connected with the land, having been attracted to the town by reasons of security and convenience.² Garneau asserts, indeed, that the merchant class went to France at the conclusion of peace; but the statement is probably true in regard only to the more considerable dealers. We are told by Murray in 1762 that the retail dealers are generally natives, and this evidently continued to be the case throughout the period. One of the natural results would be the bringing of the French commercial class largely under the influence of the English, the latter practically monopolizing the wholesale trade; and of such an influence we have many traces.³ It is to be expected, of course, that we should find the townsmen more active in public appearances. The addresses in 1763 on the subject of religion are evidently more especially from them; those from Montreal and Three Rivers expressly so represent themselves, though claiming also to act on behalf of the country regions. How correct the assumption of representation is we are left to determine for ourselves, but it is safe to assert that there exists no petition or memorial of any kind coming from the *habitants* in the first instance, nor any indication of any right of action being deputed by them to their so-called representa-

¹ See Haldimand's statement to Germaine, July 6, 1781, about the connection between the traders of the town and the country and the influence of the latter over the peasantry. (Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 40.)

² An ordinance was issued by Bigot, toward the close of the French régime, against the country people moving to the towns.

³ Especially in connection with the Quebec Act, 1774-5. See also Carleton to Shelburne, November 29, 1766. (Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 40.) See above, p. 293, note.

tives. The peasant was too ignorant and too unaccustomed to such measures. But nevertheless we may conclude that, except on points manifestly only of urban application, the voice of the townsman is in the main expressive of general grievances and desires. At the beginning of the period Haldimand expressly classes the shopkeeper among the general body of the inhabitants in their apparent indifference to the fate of the country.

B. The Noblesse and the Clergy.

As said above, for full and vivid pictures of the different classes of the community we can go to Parkman. All that is attempted here is to set forth such indications during our period as may seem to have a bearing on the problems of government. And first in consideration must come the noblesse, the old secular leaders. The earliest general representations we meet with in regard to them are found in the reports of the military commanders in 1762. Murray's picture is not a pleasant one (and it should be remembered that Murray is generally their determined champion, and was so regarded by them); it represents them as in general poor, extremely vain, arrogant toward the trading community, (though very ready to reap profits in the same way when opportunity offered),¹ and tyrannical with their vassals.² The contemporary reports of Gage and Burton do not enter into characterizations, but agree with Murray's in stating that the English government will not be relished by the noblesse, and that any emigration will be from their ranks. The vast extent of the seigniories (five or six miles front by six or nine deep), is enlarged upon by Burton; but these estates produced very little to their holders, and we have an apparently trustworthy statement to the effect that 128 of the seigniories

¹ It will be remembered that on account of the poverty of the class its members were allowed by the French government to engage in trade without losing caste.

² See Hey to Lord Chancellor, August 28, 1775, for statement of the low opinion he had formed of the noblesse in council. Can. Arch., Q. 12, p. 203.

yielded an average of only £60 per year.¹ Certainly the poverty of the seigniorial families is a matter there can be no doubt of; we meet with constant references thereto throughout the period, it being frequently assumed that their means of livelihood had been taken away by the deprivation of public employment.² For it will be remembered that this class was from first to last under the French a military and administrative one,³ though without any real influence on the government, which generally took the part of the *habitant* against them. They were not country gentlemen, most of them residing constantly in the towns and visiting their estates only for the purpose of receiving dues. Everything goes to show that their influence over the people was purely of military foundation, and that it fell to pieces when the military relation ceased.⁴

As shown by a report of Carleton⁵ the most important part of the order left Canada at the capitulation or the conclusion of peace; those who remained being of a lower rank, of less property, and of less close connection with France. These latter are reported as comprising 126 male adults, some of whom have families. The first political manifestation which purports to be exclusively from them is the memorial of the seigniors of Quebec to the king, 1766, in defense of Murray,⁶ signed by twenty-one names. The document is a strong expression of personal satisfaction with that official and his methods, beginning, however, with a comparison of the civil government with the military one they had first experienced in a manner very unfavorable to the

¹ Marriott puts the value of the best at £80 a year. (*Code of Laws*.) See above, p. 279, note, for reference in Carroll's *Journal* to poverty of the seigneurs.

² Masères states that 120 had lost office by the conquest, and Carleton writes to Townsend, November 17th, 1766, that they had been wholly dependent on the French crown. See also same to Shelbourne, March 2d, 1768. (*Can. Arch.*, Q. 5-1, p. 382, and *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1886, Note D.)

³ Carleton to Townsend, Nov. 17, 1766. *Can. Arch.*, Q. 3, p. 411.

⁴ See Haldimand to Germaine, July 25th, 1778. *Can. Arch.*, B. 42, p. 10.

⁵ Nov., 1767. See *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 44.

⁶ *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 19.

former. It denounces the "Cabal" which the old subjects and a few deluded new subjects had formed against the governor and supplicates his restoration. Of somewhat wider scope is the corresponding petition in the same year from the seigniors of Montreal, which, after asking for Murray's retention, goes on to complain of their own exclusion from office and of the expense of the required registration of land (with thirty-nine signatures). In November, 1767, Carleton writes¹ that as nothing had been done to attach the gentry to the British interest, and as they had lost all employment by the change, it could not be hoped that they would be very warm in its support. "Therefore, all circumstances considered, while matters remain in their present state, the most we may hope for from the gentlemen who remain in the province is a passive neutrality on all occasions, with respectful submission to government and deference for the king's commission in whatever hand it may be lodged; these they almost to a man have persevered in since my arrival, notwithstanding much pains have been taken to engage them in parties by a few whose duty and whose office should have taught them better."² One year later (November 20th, 1768), he speaks of their "decent and respectful obedience to the king's government hitherto," though frankly admitting that he has no doubt of their secret attachment to France, which "naturally has the affection of all the people."³

Of much greater importance than the noblesse, through their more deeply-seated influence over the people, were the Roman Catholic clergy. Readers of Parkman will recall the turgid rhetoric in which at the close of his "Old Régime" he sums up the vast share that had fallen to the Church from the very first in the founding and direction of the colony; and though during the period we are con-

¹ *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 41.

² See Carleton concerning the disapproval by the gentry of the verdict against the crown in the matter of duties, December 24th, 1767. (*Can. Arch.*, Q. 5-1, p. 315).

³ *Can. Arch.*, Q. 5-2, p. 590.

sidering that influence was undoubtedly on the wane, (how much so will be seen in regard to the American invasion), still it was a factor that cannot be neglected. It would seem that the military period had been favourable to the preservation of the personal influence of the clergy, notwithstanding the indication referred to above of the loss of tractability on the part of the *habitant* in the matter of tithes. For they (as well as such other local magnates as were accessible), took in large measure not only during the military period but even probably in some degree till the Quebec Act, the place of the French local judiciary. Garneau says that all disputes were settled by the intermediation of the clergy and other local leaders,¹ and though his picture is undoubtedly overdrawn, every presumption is in favour of a considerable movement in this direction. It was to the clergy and to the old militia officers rather than to the noblesse that the peasant would naturally betake himself, if only for the reason that with them he felt more in sympathy as being largely of the same class. For the lower clergy then as now was largely drawn from the ranks of the peasantry. Murray, in his report of 1762, expressly states that the most prominent were French, the rest Canadians of the lower class. This is a division we should expect, and it is not surprising also to find indications of some jealousy and difference of view between the two sections. The Canadian born element would be much more easily reconciled to the new rule, and it is very probable that the moderate representations spoken of above, which refrain from laying stress on the preservation of the hierarchy, were inspired solely by this element, well aware that the continuance of that hierarchy meant in all probability the continuance of the domination of the foreign born priest. Gage, in his report from Montreal in 1762, speaks of this division of interest and of the necessity of detaching the Canadian clergy entirely

¹ *Hist. du Can.*, II, 386. (Quebec, 1859.)

from France. The growth of a native priesthood with feelings not always in harmony with the old government of Church or State, had been a slow one, but that such an element was now firmly established there can be no doubt.¹ Up to the conquest the scale had been constantly turned in favour of the French-born element, which, according to Cramahé, regarded the Canadian clergy with contempt.² The policy of the new government may be seen from the statement in the same letter that the French clergy were then jealous of the Canadian as likely to get all the benefices, and that hence the French were in favour of a change which the Canadians were strongly interested to prevent.

Whichever element was uppermost however, and by whatever motives it may have been influenced, we have no indication of any but the most satisfactory behaviour throughout this period on the part of the Church in Canada. In June, on the conclusion of peace, a mandate was issued by the vicar general (the highest ecclesiastic remaining), recommending to the inhabitants submission and fidelity. In the autumn of the same year we meet the general addresses already spoken of,³ which seem to have been called forth by the depleted state of the priesthood and by fear lest the lack of a bishop should leave it to die out. They are all probably inspired. One of these addresses is from the chapter of Quebec, and we must conclude that the moderation of the demands had met with the approval of the prevailing portion of the clergy. It expresses no anxiety for a continuance of priests from Europe, expressly saying on the contrary that those educated in the native seminaries would be more patriotic, more united, and less exposed to new opinion;⁴ and that they

¹ See Haldimand to Germaine, September 14th, 1779. Can. Arch., B. 54, p. 177.

² Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 160. To Hillsborough, July 5, 1772.

³ Above, p. 234.

⁴ The petition from Three Rivers dwells more fully on means of escaping French influence in preserving the clergy.

(the petitioners), would be satisfied with a merely titular bishop with full ecclesiastical jurisdiction, but without exterior dignity or compulsory means of support. It is fully evident that the petitioners are sincere, and that they aim only at the measures necessary to preserve their educational and spiritual position.

CHAPTER II.

THE BRITISH SETTLERS.

A. Numbers, Origin, Occupations, Character.

The term "old subjects" was applied during this period and for long after to those inhabitants of the province who had been subjects of Great Britain before the conquest,—i. e., to the new English-speaking element that accompanied or followed the conqueror. The numerical weight of this element would alone hardly entitle it to consideration, for at no time during the period did it in all probability embrace more than 500 or 600 male adults. As late as 1779 Haldimand refers roughly to the non-Canadian population as 2,000 in number. We know, however, that there was some exodus from the province in 1775-6, and it is probable that the maximum number of English-speaking inhabitants had been reached soon after the conclusion of peace. For Carleton writes, November, 1767, that they are diminishing, being discouraged by the severe climate and the poverty of the country.¹ But notwithstanding this insignificant numerical strength, the energy and the peculiar position of this element make it impossible to avoid reckoning with it.

Presumably these "old subjects" were subjects of Great Britain by birth. But to what extent they had previously been resident in other parts of America, or what proportion of them was American born, it is not easy to determine. And the settlement of the point is of considerable interest in view of their connection later with the American revolutionists. We are safe in concluding that the smaller portion only of them were in Canada previous to the conclusion of peace, and that this portion was the least

¹ *Report Canadian Archives*, 1888, p. 43.

respectable one, and composed mainly of those afterward spoken of with contempt by the provincial officials as sutlers and discharged soldiers¹—a class mainly no doubt of European birth. As to the remaining and larger portion, the scattered references that we have lead to the conclusion that they were mainly born in the British Islands. But some of them had doubtless, for shorter or longer periods, been resident in the other colonies before coming to Quebec, and a few were American-born. Whether it was that the portion with previous colonial experience was more enterprising and free-spoken than the others, we find that it comes to stand for the whole in the official mind. Knox, in his "Justice and Policy of the Quebec Act,"² evidently regards the British subjects in Canada as having all come from, or being all identified with, the other provinces; and this view may be regarded as the general one taken in England. We have, however, among the Haldimand papers a careful analysis of the British in the District of Montreal, 1765, in regard to birth and occupations,³ from which we learn that of the 136 adult males there at that time, 98 were born in the British Isles, 23 in other parts of Europe, and 12 in the American colonies; nothing being said as to residence immediately before coming to Canada. But there are many indications that whether this analysis can be considered as representative of the whole body or not, the more politically influential of the new settlers were conversant with the social and governmental conditions of the other colonies to a degree which forces us to the conclusion that the knowledge must in most cases have been acquired by periods of considerable residence. In the first public appearance of the new element in the province under civil government—the presentment of the grand jury of October, 1764,—we find frequent references to the judicial

¹ The census report of 1765 mentioned below gives 43 of the 136 in the Montreal district as of this character,

² London, 1774.

³ Can. Arch., B. 8, p. 96.

conditions of the other colonies such as would occur only to those who were recalling institutions (peculiar to the colonies), under which they had lived and to which they had become attached.¹ Similar evidence appears in their remonstrance against the judiciary ordinance of 1770,² and in some commercial representations concerning the English bankruptcy laws in 1767.³ Further we have particular information in regard to individuals who later became noteworthy for open sympathy with the revolutionary cause, and find that they are nearly all of American birth or of American political education. A list "of the principal persons settled in the province who very zealously served the rebels in the winter 1775-6"⁴ names 28 individuals, of whom only 7 are of non-American birth. In this list we find the names of many of the main leaders in the political movements just previous to the Quebec Act. It is evident in short that the most determined and outspoken section among the new settlers were American by birth or adoption, and it is probable that that portion was, in relation to the whole, a small one. This will be shown more fully later when I speak of political movements. That a distinction could be made, and was made by the provincial officials, is shown by a reference of Carleton to the scale of duties lately adopted as being approved by "both Canadian and English merchants, the colonists excepted."⁵

The new English-speaking population seems to have been practically all resident in the towns of Quebec and Montreal. Its main occupation was trade,—a trade which had the fur traffic for its backbone. Many of its members are asserted by their detractors to have come to Canada because they had failed everywhere else, but the fact that Canada offered exceptional advantages for the fur trade

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 2, pp. 233-63.

² Can. Arch., Q. 7, p. 95.

³ Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 243.

⁴ Can. Arch., Q. 13, p. 106.

⁵ Dec. 24, 1767. (Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 300.) See also to Dartmouth, November 11, 1774. (Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 11.)

affords a more creditable explanation. Many were mere agents for English firms; some, especially of the discharged soldiers, became small retailers of liquor. So averse were they to land occupation, at least on the terms first offered, that the lands set apart for the discharged soldiery were in few cases taken up. But they took with considerable avidity to the acquiring of seigniories when that form of grant was re-established,¹ and Hillsborough, April 18, 1772, writes that he is pleased to find "that so great a spirit of cultivation of the waste lands in the colony has spread itself among His Majesty's natural born subjects." There can be little doubt that by the end of the period they had come into possession of a large proportion of the seigneurial estates of the province;² but there is no probability that they at this time settled down on these estates in any permanent manner. They undoubtedly continued to be identified with the towns, and it is sufficiently correct for all purposes to regard their connection with Canada as caused and continued either by commercial interests³ or by situations held under government.

As to the character of this new element we are unfortunately dependent almost entirely upon the testimony of its bitterest enemies. The causes of this enmity will be more fully apparent later; the fact is that throughout the whole period of civil government the provincial administrators and the "old subjects" were in direct and for the most part bitter antagonism. The latter claimed that they had come into the country in reliance on the Proclamation of 1763, which they considered contained a distinct promise of the establishment in Canada of the forms of government and the system of law that prevailed in the other colonies; consequently they maintained a hostile attitude to the system in operation, as purely provisional, and impatiently

¹ See elsewhere concerning land grants.

² See *Evidence*, Quebec Act Debates. Also Masères, especially with regard to English petitions and memorials for an Assembly, 1773.

³ See Carleton, *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1890, p. 1.

demanded the fulfillment of the asserted pledges. The governors on the other hand had speedily arrived at the conclusion that such changes would be most disadvantageous to the country, and would imperil its possession; and they consequently regarded with no favourable eye the turbulent little body which seemed to be aiming at the same licentiousness as (in the official opinion), prevailed in the other colonies. It is the same antagonism that we see contemporaneously in these other colonies, increased ten-fold by the peculiar circumstances of the province. Race and social prejudices, and collisions between the civil and military elements, complicated the situation and intensified the opposition of the British trading community to the old French military system and its favorers. And in view of these facts we must take with caution the assertions of the governors, who, just as they erroneously looked upon the noblesse as the true representatives of the Canadians, seem to have indiscriminately classed together the whole old subject body as turbulent and republican, and bent on nothing but the oppressing of the French population and the acquiring of gain. That there were individual instances to which they could point in support of this view cannot be denied; nor can we doubt that the British element throughout the most of the period might well present to the harassed official an intolerant and unconciliatory attitude. But a scrutiny of the evidence will show that the constant official censure was to a large degree unjust and undiscerning, and that the British party in the Province of Quebec deserved very much more consideration from the authorities than it received. The matter is of importance from other grounds than those of historical justice. For there can be little doubt that the incorrect ideas that swayed the official mind on this point were one of the main agencies in the genesis of the Quebec Act.

Murray's expressions of dislike for his fellow-countrymen seem to date from the grand jury presentment of 1764,

when he writes home of the "licentious fanatics trading here," whom nothing will satisfy except "the expulsion of the Canadians."¹ The following March 3, he says that the merchants "are chiefly adventurers of mean education, either young beginners, or, if old traders, such as had failed in other countries; all have their fortunes to make and are little solicitous about the means."² August 20, 1766, after he had left the province, he writes of the party which had procured his recall, that "most of them are followers of the army, of mean education, or soldiers disbanded at the reduction of the troops;" and adds, "I report them to be in general the most immoral collection of men I ever knew."³ This representation is evidently little to be regarded. Carleton, though no particular friend of Murray, seems, however, to have at once assumed the same attitude toward the old subject, and probably with more confidence, as knowing that the home government was not at all likely to gratify their wishes. As with Murray, his military training prejudiced him in favor of the old system and of the military noblesse, to both of which the English element was bitterly opposed. November 25, 1767,⁴ he describes the old subjects as having "been mostly left here by accident, and are either disbanded officers, soldiers, or followers of the army, who, not knowing how to dispose of themselves elsewhere, settled where they were left at the reduction; or else they are adventurers in trade, or such as could not remain at home, who set out to mend their fortunes at the opening of this new channel of commerce," and adds that they have for the most part not succeeded, and are abandoning the province. March 28, 1770,⁵ he writes in regard to the necessity he has been under of taking from the justices of

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 233.

² *Ib.*, p. 377.

³ Can. Arch., B. 8, p. 1.

⁴ *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 42.

⁵ *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1890, p. 1.

the peace their jurisdiction in civil cases, on account of the oppressive methods of many of them, and proceeds to explain what these methods were; saying that those who had failed in business sought the office in order to make it a means of extortion, and had therein very grievously taken advantage of the ignorance of the people. This oppression seems to have been for a short time a real grievance, and has been considered one of the principal proofs of the evil character of the English element; but a closer examination will show that in that view it has been exaggerated. For it was such as hardly could have been practiced by any but justices in the remoter parts of the province, or at least by those in the country districts, and I have shown above that very few of the English were settled outside of the towns. So that it must have been confined to about a dozen individuals,¹ and cannot possibly be taken as any indication of the general character of the English-speaking settlers. The matter is simply an instance of the careless grouping and indiscriminate judgments of the period, or possibly of intentional misrepresentation in order to prejudice the case of the old subject in the eyes of the home government. That this result was attained may be seen in the writings of the pamphleteers who defended the Quebec Act, as well as in the arguments of its supporters in the Commons.

B. Political Attitude.

What the political attitude of the English party was may be easily gathered from the foregoing. Whether or not accustomed to the greater self-government of the American colonies we find the whole body strongly imbued with a certain degree of the American spirit and determined to lose no opportunity of pressing their claims for the establishment of English law and an Assembly. They con-

¹ The list of justices of the peace for the whole province as first appointed, included only twenty-three names, of whom most were resident in the towns. See p. 312, note 1.

tended throughout that the promises of the Proclamation of 1763 on these points had been among the main inducements to the taking up of their residence in the province; and in season and out of season, without regard to the difficulties in the way either from the original constitution of the province or from the hazardous nature of the British hold on it, they pressed their demands on the home government and refused any tolerance to the existing provisional arrangements. So that at first sight it would appear (as has generally been represented), that in the pressing of these demands the party showed throughout a factious and intolerant spirit, and gave little evidence of political forethought, or of consideration either for the Canadians or for the difficult position of the administration. As to political forethought they must be judged mainly on a careful consideration of the later events, with regard to the question as to how far they were justified in their contention that the English system of law and government, so far as they claimed it, would not really be objectionable or injurious to the mass of the people. As to the intolerance and inconsiderateness of their attitude, we must guard as before against indiscriminate grouping; and it will be found moreover that the evidence on these heads is confined to the early years of the period. A comparison of the names appended to the various petitions and other public manifestations of the time with what appears later as to the individuals who espoused the revolutionary cause, shows that these manifestations were the voice really of that small section which, chiefly American-born, was most thoroughly permeated with American ideas, and which kept itself in touch with the movements on the other side of the border. The bulk of the party, English-born, slower of comprehension, and less used to American self-government, more or less acquiesced in the movements of the bolder spirits, partly on general principles of popular leadership, partly because they had a common ground in their desire

for, and anticipation of English laws and governmental forms.¹ Hence, it is not surprising that we cannot trace any definite dividing line² between the English-born and the colonists until the actual resort to arms drove the leaders into the arms of the revolutionists. In connection with this it is interesting to note that the first public manifestation of the British party was the most violent and outspoken, supporting therein the idea that it was representative of the views of the American element when that element had in freshest remembrance the forms they were attached to and had hoped to bring with them into Canada. These hopes had been disappointed by the passing of the judiciary ordinance of September 17, 1764, which, though afterwards condemned by those who supported the continuance of the old system as having aimed at the complete overturning thereof, seemed to the English party a very partial and unsatisfactory measure. Accordingly, at the general quarter sessions of the justices of the peace held at Quebec in the following month, the fourteen English who were summoned (together with seven French), as a grand jury, seized the occasion to express in no measured tones their deep disappointment and disapproval.³ The main presentment began (in direct contempt of court), by condemning the late ordinance in regard to the power

¹ It is not probable that the claim of general representative powers put forward in 1764 on behalf of the grand jury, (discussed below), was seriously entertained except by a few of the bolderspirits; but the attitude of protest and disappointment was evidently largely shared, even by those whose later actions were much more moderate. For in the evidence connected with an investigation in 1768 into the suspension by Murray of a public official, one of the charges against whom was that he had been prominent in this grand jury movement, we find a comparatively numerously signed letter of thanks to the jury from their English fellow-countrymen in Quebec, which states that the signers consider the jury "as yet the only body representative of this district," and that in regard to the digression from usual form in the proceedings, "the want of a General Assembly in the province sufficiently justifies your conduct to the public." (Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, pp. 629-69.)

² Though see Carleton's reference above to the difference of opinion in regard to customs duties. See also Carleton to Hillsborough, April 25, 1770, concerning the refusal of the majority of the old subjects to take the steps urged by the more violent concerning the judiciary ordinance of that year. (Can. Arch., Q. 7, p. 89.)

³ Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 242.

given to the justices and to the number and incapacity of these officials,¹ and expressed a determination never again under the system complained of, to act as jurors. It then proceeded to make the very remarkable claim on behalf of the signers as grand jurors that they "must be considered at present as the only body representative of the colony," and therefore "as British subjects have a right to be consulted before any ordinance that may affect the body they represent be passed into law;" furthermore demanding that "the public accounts should be laid before the grand jurors at least twice a year, to be examined and checked by them, and that they may be regularly settled every six months before them." This claim² shows that while considering the existing government as only provisional, they could not grasp the fact that as British subjects they were even under it to be excluded from some form of the self-government they had been accustomed to. The fourteen

¹ It is noteworthy that this condemnation was later abundantly justified by the complaints as to the ill-working of this provision and the revoking of it by the ordinance of 1770. Here we find the representatives of the English party strongly condemning at its initiation a measure the ill-working of which was afterwards used as a weapon of reproach against that party.

² Which they do not attempt to fortify with any precedent from the other colonies, though frequently bringing such on other points. I have been unable to find any direct connection between this incident and contemporary events in the other colonies, but the conclusion is irresistible that some such must have existed. By June, 1764, it was known in America that Grenville had given notice of the Stamp Act, and that a bill had been passed increasing customs duties. Before the end of the month Otis and others had formed a committee for intercolonial correspondence and resistance. Popular attention throughout the summer had become more and more concentrated on the subject, and in September the New York Assembly had boldly claimed for the people "that great badge of English liberty, the being taxed only with their own consent." (Bancroft, III, 89.) Of course, the Quebec movement was as yet fully taken up with a stage beyond which the other colonies had long passed. And we shall see later that it was not likely to get beyond that stage with the bulk of the party. Though it is to be noted that Cramahé writes in July, 1774, (to Dartmouth, Can. Arch., Q. 10, p. 79), that "His Majesty's subjects in this province, tho' collected from all parts of his extensive dominions, have in general, at least such as intend remaining in the country, adopted American ideas in regard to taxation, and a report transmitted from one of their correspondents in Britain that a duty upon spirits was intended to be raised here by authority of Parliament, was a principal cause of setting them upon petitions for an assembly." It connection with this see following pages in regard to the revenue trials and the Stamp Act.

English jurors alone also presented an additional article protesting against the admitting of Roman Catholics on juries or to the professions as "an open violation of our most sacred laws and liberties," and tending to the insecurity of the province.

The next appearance of these remonstrants is in the petition of the Quebec British traders against Murray in 1765, signed by twenty-one names,¹ the signers claiming to act on behalf of their fellow-subjects. The friction between the party and Murray seems to have steadily increased in the intervening year and finally had resulted in this representation, which was later thought to have procured the governor's recall. It began² by stating that the connection of most of the petitioners with the country dated "from the surrender of the colony," goes on to represent the conduct of the governor and the measures of government as oppressive and injurious, threatens removal from the country in case of non-redress, and ends by requesting the establishment of a house of representatives "to be chosen in this as in other Your Majesty's provinces, there being a number more than sufficient of loyal and well-affected Protestants, exclusive of military officers;" the Canadians to be "allowed to elect Protestants," without the burden of test oaths. The demand for an assembly reappears with more or less distinctness all through the period; though while Carleton remained in the province his decidedly discouraging attitude seems to have prevented any very united movement. But resentment at the withholding of representative institutions appears to be the main moving cause in a very determined stand by the English mercantile class after 1766 against the collection of the old French customs duties. In accordance with legal opinion as to the reversion to the crown of all sources of revenue possessed by the French government, the imperial authorities had in

¹Eight of these were among the fourteen English jurors in 1764.

²*Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 14.

1765 ordered the above collection, and July 21, 1766, a provincial proclamation was issued setting forth the duties and the ground on which they were claimed.¹ A few days later it is reported officially that the merchants "will not pay their duties unless otherwise compelled." Some of them were accordingly prosecuted in the Court of King's Bench before a jury composed entirely of English, and which the Chief Justice charged to bring in only a special verdict as to the facts, leaving to a higher court the point of law² as to whether the English crown had become by the conquest and cession entitled to the old French duties. But the jury, thoroughly in sympathy with the recalcitrant merchants, refused to be restricted in this way, and brought in a general verdict of acquittal. Another suit shortly afterwards had the same result, and all efforts to collect the duties seem then to have been dropped for two years.³ In the fall of 1768, however, after an action in the British Common Pleas against Murray, in which the principle of the King's right to these duties was accepted without question, the commissioners of the treasury resolved to make another attempt, and instituted prosecutions anew. The issue was the same, however, though Masères (who was the prosecuting attorney), acknowledges that the jury "consisted of some of the most respectable inhabitants of Quebec, and of such as were most moderate in their principles and disposition." Writing in 1774 he says that it may be seen from these trials that these duties can never be collected in the Quebec courts; from which we may infer that no further attempt was made to collect them during the period.⁴

The ground of this determined resistance is nowhere clearly stated, but there can be little doubt that it was mainly inspired by some portion of the spirit then agitat-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 377.

² Called by him "very new and difficult."

³ Can. Arch., Q. 3, pp. 254, 400.

⁴ See Masères, *Commissions*, pp. 288-311.

ing the other colonies. In a letter shortly before the later trials Carleton states that the merchants based their opposition on the ground that the duties demanded were not quite the same as the French;¹ but that the real question was much broader is shown by the argument for the Crown of Masères, the attorney general, (reported by himself). In it he contends that "whatever might have been asserted to the contrary, in order to inflame the passions of the people and prejudice the minds of the jury against these duties, the king by them did not mean to exert any prerogative of imposing taxes by his own single authority and without the consent either of a provincial Assembly or of the General Assembly of the whole British Empire," and that therefore the requisition did not endanger the public liberty of the inhabitants and the privileges they claimed "either as English in general or under the proclamation of October, 1763, by which His Majesty had promised them the enjoyment of the benefit of the laws of England."² The attorney general is here attempting to remove the prejudice of a jury which was of the same class—the English trading class,—as the accused, and it is evident that he perceived that whatever the special plea put forward, the opposition was founded on the general claim of being English subjects, entitled to the operation of English laws and principles. It would seem also as if the spirit of opposition as expressed on the point had been steadily growing; for Carleton had written, December 24, 1767, that he was almost certain that a revenue would soon be raised from the customs sufficient to meet all expenses of government, and that "both Canadian and English merchants, the colonists excepted," were willing to pay much higher duties than those he was then proposing.³ Masères' description of the jury in the trials of 1769 shows that it

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 6, p. 65,—May 10, 1769.

² *Commissions*, pp. 304-5.

³ Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 316.

could not have been composed of these "colonists," and therefore we must conclude that either Carleton had deceived himself in 1767, or that the "colonist" spirit had on this point taken possession even of the "Canadian and English merchants."

This phase of the subject is the more interesting taken in connection with the undeniable acquiescence of the province in the Stamp Act shortly before.¹ For leaving out a very small circle no opposition to this Act sufficiently strong to send its voice down to us seems to have been made in Quebec or in Nova Scotia.² That it had been put regularly into operation is shown by the proclamation announcing its repeal, which says that "whereas many persons in publick office and others may at present have stamp paper and parchment that has not been made use of" they will be reimbursed for the same.³ But no statement can be found of any revenue from the tax, and it is most probable that the "resistance passive" which Garneau attributes to the province⁴ went far enough to reduce the receipts to a very small sum. That the section of the English party known as "the colonists" had made their voice heard against the act is shown by a reference of Carleton's, October 25th, 1766,⁵ and by a statement of

¹ The Stamp Act was in force in Quebec apparently from November 1, 1765, to May 28, 1766.

² With regard to Nova Scotia some documents* from a later period may here be referred to. In 4 *American Archives* (III. 619), we find a Whitehall memorandum dated September 1, 1775, that on that day His Majesty had graciously received an address from the House of Representatives of Nova Scotia, containing a declaration of entire submission to the supreme authority of the British Parliament and of readiness to pay taxes fixed by it, to be at its disposal. This loyal document, however, is followed (*Ib.* 780) by a letter from Halifax dated September 23, 1775, which says that the above address represents only about one-thousandth of the inhabitants of the province, and had been procured when most of the House of Representatives were absent; further, that owing to universal sympathy with the revolutionists no duties had been paid since August last, that some tons of tea arrived the day before had been thrown into the sea, and that the revolutionary forces at Boston had been continually supplied from Nova Scotia with fresh provisions.

³ *Can. Arch.*, Q. 5-2, p. 822.

⁴ *Hist. Can.*, II, 399.

⁵ *Can. Arch.*, Q. 3, p. 259.

Murray, August 20th, 1766, (in regard to the Canadians), that "tho' stimulated to dispute it by some of the licentious traders from New York they cheerfully obeyed the Stamp Act, in hopes that their good behaviour would recommend them to the favour and protection of their sovereign."¹ Previously (February 14, 1776, while the act was yet unrepealed), the governor had reported that "His Majesty's subjects in this province have not followed the example of the neighbouring colonies, but have cheerfully submitted to the authority of the British legislature."² On the arrival of Carleton in September, 1766, an address presented to him from the combined English and French inhabitants of the city and district of Quebec expresses "the most profound and submissive reverence to the legislative authority of the British parliament, of which we lately gave a public and signal proof by an immediate and universal obedience to the Stamp Act."³ Lastly, the argument which I have quoted from the attorney-general in the revenue trials of 1769 shows conclusively that the class he was trying to influence (i. e. the main, more moderate body of the English trading class), was not supposed to doubt, and therefore could not have made any fundamental objection to, the full legislative authority over the province of the British parliament.⁴ This class then we may suppose to have acquiesced grumblingly in the Stamp Act, while the smaller section of American birth or training had no doubt vigorously protested against it. As to the Canadians, the compliant voice of the address to Carleton doubtless represents correctly the attitude of those affected; but there is no ground

¹ Can. Arch., B. 8, p. 1.

² Ibid., Q. 3, p. 28.

³ Ibid., p. 344.

⁴ Of course it must be remembered that as the province had no assembly the same objection could not be made to such a claim as in the other provinces (see p. 312, note 2). The matter therefore stands on a somewhat different footing. It seems, however, very probable that the Stamp Act agitation in the other colonies, and its success, had considerable influence in emboldening the Quebec merchants to the stout resistance later to the revenue duties.

to suppose that any attention was paid to the Act by the mass of the French Canadian people. But few of these could, in its brief life, have even become aware of its existence; for, as I have elsewhere shown, the *habitant* at this time very slightly availed himself of English legal forms or courts.

In the spring of 1770 the British element again appears in strong opposition to the government in regard to the ordinance of February 1, 1770, which on account of the oppressive conduct of some of the justices of the peace took away from the whole body all power in matters that affected private property, and instituted for the protection of creditors methods which were considered by the merchants as unsatisfactory and precarious and likely to affect the credit of the province. The memorial in which the objections of the merchant body were expressed is evidently what it purports to be, a document almost entirely dictated by commercial considerations; and though the action of the government was justifiable and the ordinance in question probably necessary, I cannot look upon this movement of its opponents as of the purely factious and oppressive origin attributed to it by Carleton. In the same year we have the outcome of a movement spoken of by Carleton in 1768,¹ in another petition for a general assembly, which they claim in part as promised in the proclamation of 1763, and in part because necessary to arrest the declining state of the province and make it really of benefit to the empire. The assembly is still contemplated as being composed only of Protestants, (nothing being said as to the qualifications of electors), the petitioners asserting as in 1765 that "there is now a sufficient number of your Majesty's Protestant subjects residing in and possessed of real property in this province, and who are otherwise qualified to be members of a general assembly;" which they pray shall therefore be

¹ He writes, January 20, that the agitation for an assembly which he thought had been dropped a year before, has been resumed, the leaders being "egged on by letters from home." (Q. 5-1, 370.)

called "in such manner as is used in those provinces in America under your Majesty's government." (signed by 31 names).¹ Carleton left for England about the same time, and this step was probably intended to counteract the effect of his presence at home. For the following three years quiet seems to have reigned in the province, the British element applying itself energetically to the acquirement of landed property. As the home government, however, came more unmistakeably nearer to the adoption of decisive measures in regard to Canadian affairs, the political energies of the party revived, and as a consequence we have the very united and vigorous petitions of 1773 (October-January) for an assembly.² According to Cramahé³ the leaders of the old subjects sedulously attempted to induce the French to co-operate, and Masères relates that the negotiations were broken off in consequence of a refusal of the English to insert in the joint petition a specific request that the assembly might be composed of Protestants and Catholics alike, with more or less of a preponderance secured to the latter.⁴ The English then proceeded alone, and petitions and memorials were forwarded to the home government about the beginning of 1774, signed there can be little doubt by almost every old subject of any standing (outside the official circles), in the province. The wording of these is in the main of the same tenor as in the previous representations, but a very noteworthy change appears in the reference to the nature of the assembly asked for. In all the previous petitions it had been requested to be called "in such manner as is used in those provinces in America under your Majesty's government," coupled with the statement that there were sufficient qualified Protestants in the province to constitute such a body. This evidently means the exclusion of

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 7, p. 359.

² Ibid., Q. 10. See also Masères, *Account*.

³ Ibid., Q. 10, p. 22.

⁴ See below, c. 5.

Catholics, who, however, were to be permitted to vote. But in the present petition the words are, "in such manner and of such constitution and form as shall seem best adapted to secure peace, welfare and good government." The explanation of this change is given by Masères,¹ agent for the party in London, who states that though the old subjects had formerly entertained hopes of an exclusively Protestant assembly, on hearing that Catholics had been admitted to that of Grenada,² and that the government contemplated the giving of the same privilege in Quebec, they had resolved to acquiesce in this indulgence, though unwilling to join with the French in asking for it. In other words, the party had become convinced that there was no hope of an exclusively Protestant assembly, and preferred a mixed one to none at all; probably relying on their influence over many sections of the French to secure a considerable if not the greater share of the power wielded by such a body. The petitioners make the statement that the granting of an assembly is the only sure means of conciliating the new subjects.³

In the matter of the laws to be established in the province we find that, as with regard to an assembly, the views of the British party became much more liberal toward the close of the period. The presentment of the grand jury quoted above shows that they were disposed at first to assume a most intolerant attitude, and (holding strictly to the wording of the treaty of cession), to enforce against the French Canadians the penal laws which were not enforced at home. But this we can consider the result of only a momentary access of irritation and disappointment, and as probably confined to a few individuals. For we find nothing of the kind later and have seen that all the petitions for an assembly contemplated the admission

¹ *Additional Proceedings, etc.*, p. 61.

² For conditions in Grenada see below, chapter V., B. b.

³ This petition was supplemented by a corresponding one from the London merchants who were commercially connected with Canada.

of the French Canadians to the franchise. It will also be shown later that the old subjects welcomed and eagerly availed themselves of the restoration of the French form of land tenure. Representations in November, 1767 prove that a large part of them were opposed to the introduction of the English bankruptcy laws. Masères, who had been an ardent British partisan throughout, and who became in 1774 the agent of the party in London, may be considered to represent pretty accurately their views on these points, and he expressly and frequently declares that the English inhabitants, aware of the uneasiness and confusion that an enforcement of the English laws of inheritance and landed property would have occasioned in the province, had always been willing that the French laws on these subjects should be continued.

I have thus brought my scrutiny of the "old subjects" down to the establishment of the new constitution and the bringing of the province within the range of the revolution. The consideration of the attitude of the party in this crisis is reserved for another place.² It will then be found that the division of feeling whose traces we have discovered beneath apparent unity, becomes at once very manifest, declaring itself in the same active opposition that was found in the other colonies between Tories and Revolutionists.

C. Relations with the French Canadians.

Of social relations, which it is not within my province to go fully into, we do not meet many traces. There are a few references to inter-marriage and other social connections between members of the noblesse on the one hand, and members of the English military or official circles on the other; but these could be in this brief time of but slight influence, politically speaking. Little or no communication took place between the noblesse and the main body of the English — the commercial class. — the prevailing sentiments

² See below, chapter VI.

being more or less intense degrees of contempt or hatred.¹ I have already referred to the fact that the bitter animosity between the English element and Murray was due largely to the latter's partiality for the noblesse; and there can be little doubt that the same state of things was prevalent to some degree under Carleton. But apart from the aristocracy,—a small class, with constantly declining influence,—we have considerable evidence of a very constant intercourse, daily increasing in influence on the attitude of both sections, between the main body of the English and the main body of the people. This was based in the first place on commercial relations, which gave the few vigorous and enterprising English merchants, in whose hands was the greatest part of the trade (probably the entire wholesale and foreign trade), and who in the later years also more directly affected the county districts by the large acquirement of seignories, an influence out of all proportion to their numbers or weight with the government. This development was aided by the appearance of those new French leaders from the professional and educated class of whom I have spoken above as becoming rapidly imbued with English ideas of government. There can be no doubt that in the ten years during which civil government had been in operation a very considerable change had taken place in the social and political attitude of the body of the people; and we must consider the main factor therein to have been that part of the English element with which the people were brought into daily contact.

The first occasion on which we find representatives of these two sections of the population acting together,—on the grand jury of 1764,—is one in which the French part is exhibited in the light of a very easily hoodwinked or influenced section, which discovers the real nature of its action only through later outside inspiration. Early in 1766 we find in connection with some difficulties concerning the

¹ Murray to Shelbourne, August 20, 1766. Can. Arch., B. 8, p. 1.

quartering of troops at Montreal that the new attitude of the French in protesting against the billeting upon them seems to have been due to the instigation of the English civil element, which for some time past had been on extremely bad terms with the military. The affair unmistakably shows among the French Canadians in that town an access of intelligence, or at least of knowledge of the non-military spirit of the English laws.¹ The language of the memorial of the Quebec seigniors on behalf of Murray in 1766² proves that even then there was associated with the old subjects in their opposition to that governor a number of the new, who are said for the most part to be "slaves to their creditors."³ Of combined English and French movements we have, however, very few traces. We have seen above how the attempt at combined action failed in regard to an assembly in 1773, and it is probable that many other such fell through from similar causes. Shortly after Carleton's arrival he writes in connection with the Walker affair (an assault on an objectionable magistrate which was the outcome of friction at Montreal between the English civil and military elements), that the Canadians are being led by the English into the seditious practices of the other provinces in the belief that these are "agreeable to our laws and customs," and "are thereby induced to subscribe sentiments very different from their natural disposition."⁴ The degree of influence which the English element had acquired over the French in this short time is dwelt upon by Masères, who contends that in the event of an assembly being granted most of the French Canadian constituences would choose English representatives. And in the account he gives of an approach by some of the leading French of the town of Quebec (of the professional class), to the English for the

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 3, pp. 122-70.

² *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 21.

³ See above, p. 292, note 5, concerning meetings of French Canadians.

⁴ Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 40.

purpose of joint action towards an assembly, the French delegation is represented as admitting that even if the greater share of the assembly be granted to the numerical superiority of the French, the English will more than make up by their superior knowledge and capacity for public business.¹

The vigor and modern character of the political methods resorted to by the British party may be seen by Carleton's reference to a memorial against the new judicial ordinance of 1770, in which he states that he was "really ashamed of the manner in which I was informed many of the king's old subjects had behaved, sending about handbills to invite the people to assemble in order to consult upon grievances, importuning, nay, insulting. many of the Canadians because they would not join them."² Similar methods are referred to with regard to the movement of protest against the Quebec Act, and the language used indicates a considerable degree of success. As early as November, 1774, (i. e., six months before the calling upon the people for armed service revealed their real attitude), Carleton writes of the upper classes of the Canadians that they "are not without fears, that some of their countrymen, under the awe of menacing creditors and others from ignorance, may have been induced" to join with the old subjects in their efforts against the "oppression and slavery imposed upon them [the Canadians; Carleton is quoting the representations made to the people], by those acts of parliament." These efforts will be discussed more fully in another place;³ their success proves, among other things, that in this crisis at least the leadership of the people had fallen in very large measure to the more advanced section of the English party. At present it will be sufficient to point out that on the whole, if we except the ineradicable hostility between the

¹ Masères, *Additional Papers, etc.*, p. 21.

² Can. Arch., Q. 7, p. 89.

³ Below, chapter VI.

noblesse and the commercial English element (an hostility which was not one of race), we certainly discover throughout the period no signs of irreconcilable discord and difference of view or interest between the main French and the main English population. It is true that the peculiar attitude of the government towards the English element imposed upon it the necessity of cultivating the body of the people more than otherwise perhaps would have been the case. But taking out the extremists on both sides we would probably find that the average opinions as to the disposition of government and the laws were by no means so wide apart as the makers of the Quebec Act supposed.

CHAPTER III.

THE PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT.

A. General Status.

A full presentation of the conditions attendant on government in the province of Quebec throughout our period is essential to any accurate estimate of general policy then or later. It is therefore necessary to discuss some general problems that lay at the basis of authority, and to describe briefly the character and principles of administration previous to the Quebec Act.

The government of the province, not only during this period, but also under the Quebec Act down to 1791, may be described as that of a crown colony¹ without an assembly. As no other such government existed contemporaneously among the older continental colonies, or had existed since the first rude beginnings of government there, we cannot turn to these for illustration.² But a clear idea of the exact constitutional status of the province as it appeared to the highest legal authority of the time will be acquired from a study of Lord Mansfield's famous judgment of 1774 in regard to the island of Grenada.³ Grenada and Quebec (together with East and West Florida), had been on precisely the same footing with regard to the conditions of acquirement and the constitutional documents that had issued concerning them. Both had been long settled French colonies, conquered by England about the same

¹ Using the classification of colonial governments into *crown*, *proprietary* and *popular*, according to the method by which the governor was appointed.

² We might perhaps except Georgia, 1751-4, during which time the province was governed directly by the crown. But as there was then also neither governor nor council, and as when in 1754 these were appointed, an assembly came with them into existence, it does not seem worth while to refer more directly to conditions there.

³ Case of Campbell vs. Hall, 1774. Cowper's or Loft's Reports.

time, and surrendered on conditions of capitulation very nearly the same; they had been ceded permanently by the same treaty under explicit statement of being affected by the same stipulations;¹ and finally they had been grouped together and made subject to precisely the same regulations by the Proclamation of 1763. This proclamation had been followed in the case of each by commissions to governors, couched (so far as the present point is affected), in almost precisely the same terms. The Grenada case turned on the question whether the king, without the concurrence of parliament, had power to make a legislative enactment with regard to the Island subsequent to the date of the above mentioned Proclamation of October 7, 1763, which made known to all concerned, that as regarded the new acquisitions therein mentioned, he had "given express power and direction to the governors of our said colonies respectively, that as soon as the state and circumstances of the said colony will admit thereof they shall with the advice and consent of our said Council call and summon general assemblies in such manner and form as is used in the other colonies under our immediate government," and that he had given power to the governors, with the consent of the councils and of the assemblies as so constituted, to legislate for the provinces concerned. This is the material instrument involved, though Lord Mansfield cites also another subordinate proclamation of the same tenor, and the commission to the governor by which he is given the power spoken of; but whatever added force would come from this last would also affect the province of Quebec to precisely the same degree. Lord Mansfield's conclusion is that, while previous to the publication of these documents (i. e., previous to October 7th, 1763), the king alone, through the legislative power over a conquered country given him by the royal prerogative, could make any legislation concerning the recent conquests consistent with the constitution,

¹ See Houston, *Canadian Documents*, p. 64.

he had by the publication of these instruments divested himself of this power, and had voluntarily and irrevocably granted to the new provinces a constitution under which the legislative power over them could be exercised only by a provincial assembly or by the British parliament. In other words, the Proclamation of 1763 was a charter of liberties granted to all who were or might become concerned with the regions in question, granted for the express purpose (as stated in it), of inducing them to become so concerned, and therefore, they having acted upon it, irrevocable without their own consent. The case in question had reference to taxation; but evidently nothing depends on this fact, for the decision of the chief justice is given in general terms; "we are of the opinion that the King . . . had precluded himself from an exercise of the legislative authority which he had before."

The conclusion from this is that the Proclamation of 1763 must be looked upon as the Constitution of Canada throughout the whole of this period, or up till the date at which the imperial parliament first took legislative action concerning the country;¹ and the result is therefore reached that government without an assembly (i. e., government as it existed down till the Quebec Act), was constitutionally invalid, all legislation by the governor and council alone being constitutionally void. This position cannot be affected by any quibbling as to the exact terms of the above mentioned instruments. It is true that the words of the Proclamation in regard to the calling of an assembly are, "as soon as the state and circumstances of the said colony will admit thereof," the governor and council being apparently left judges as to when that might be; but we do not find that any contention on this point was raised in the Grenada case, or that Lord Mansfield, (who, it will be remembered, was a strong assertor of royal prerogative and

¹The Quebec Act (14 Geo. III, c. 83, Sec. 4.) practically recognizes this, in beginning with the express abrogation of the Proclamation and the subsequent commissions.

colonial subordination, and who therefore would undoubtedly have given full attention to any point which would have enabled him to save the king's authority from this decided check), took anything but a mere passing notice of these words. The words of the proclamation are "power and *direction* to our governors:"¹ and that no argument can be founded on the substitution, (probably unintentional and in pursuance of official forms), for these in Murray's commission of the phrase "power and *authority*," is shown by an examination of the case of Nova Scotia some few years previous,—an almost parallel case, the study of which will I think strengthen my argument in every point. The position of those settlers who in Nova Scotia claimed the fulfillment of the promise of the full enjoyment of English constitutional forms was, if anything, weaker than in Quebec, for the fundamental proclamation under which settlement had been invited, emanated not from the King-in-council, but from the Board of Trade.² It promised the prospective settlers that a civil government should be established, "as soon as possible after their arrival, whereby they will enjoy all the liberties, privileges and immunities enjoyed by His Majesty's subjects in any other of the colonies and plantations in America;" and the commission of the governor, issued two months later, grants to him "full power and authority, with the advice and consent of our said council from time to time as need shall require, to summon and call general assemblies . . . according to the usage of the rest of our colonies and plantations in America." In conjunction with such assemblies he and the council were to have full power of legislation, granted in precisely the same terms as are used in the commission given to Murray. And no provision is made, as none is made in Murray's commission, for legislative action without such an assembly. It will be noticed that the phrase

¹The italicising is mine.

²March 7, 1749. See Houston, *Can. Documents*, p. 7.

used in the proclamation above, "as soon as possible after their arrival," is fully as indefinite as that quoted from the other documents, and that the determining of the possibility is apparently left to the governor. In this light he and his successor chose to understand it, and without taking any step towards an assembly proceeded to legislate with the council alone for six years. Finally, in 1755, the attention of the Board of Trade was called to this state of affairs, and it immediately submitted the validity of the laws so enacted to the British crown lawyers, the attorney-general at that time being the William Murray who afterward as Lord Mansfield delivered the judgment of 1774. The answer was that, "the governor and council alone are not authorized by His Majesty to make laws till there can be an Assembly,"—an opinion which was not supported by any arguments other than a reference to the king's order that government should be in accordance with the commission and instructions.¹ The Board of Trade immediately proceeded to compel the governor (notwithstanding his assurances that the legislative authority of the governor and council was not questioned in the province, and that very great difficulties would attend the calling of an assembly), to comply with the original promise, enjoining him moreover to see that one of the first legislative measures of the assembly should be the passing of an act of indemnity for proceedings taken under the laws previously enforced.²

There is no reason to suppose that the conclusion I have thus drawn from the highest legal opinion of the time is affected by later instructions to the governors. To Murray there was issued what Masères calls a "private instruction," granting to him and the council, power "to make such rules and regulations as shall appear to be necessary for the peace, order and good government, taking care that nothing be passed or done that shall in any wise tend to

¹Houston, *Can. Documents*, p. 18.

²*Ib.*, p. 17.

affect the life, limb or liberty of the subject, or to the imposing any duty or taxes." Carleton's commission in 1768 is accompanied by general instructions, of which the tenth article is to the effect that, whereas he has been directed by the commission "that so soon as the situation and circumstances of our said province will admit thereof, you shall, with the advice of our Council, summon and call a General Assembly," he is as soon as possible "to give all possible attention to the carrying of this important object into execution;" but that, "as it may be impossible for the present to form such an establishment," he is in the meantime to make with the council alone such rules and regulations as shall be necessary, under the same restrictions as were imposed on Murray. These instructions of course emanated only from the executive power, and it is hardly necessary to further contend that as such they were, according to Lord Mansfield, of no avail against the fundamental instruments discussed above. So long as the difficulties in the formation of an assembly were not so great as to occasion the entire suspension of civil government, the power of the Home executive to delegate legislative authority to the colonial one had no existence, for the simple reason that the former was not itself possessed of any such authority. Difficulties such as existed in Quebec had been pleaded by the government in Nova Scotia thirteen years before in an exactly parallel case; but no attention had been paid to the plea by the Crown lawyers or the Board of Trade.

It is manifest, therefore, that the provincial legislation throughout this period was *in toto* null and void. But this does not quite dispose of the problems involved in the matter; for, apart from the question of the legislative competence of the Provincial government, the most diverse opinions have been entertained with regard to the laws legally subsisting throughout the period. The difficulty is with the civil laws only, it being universally

acknowledged that the criminal code accompanied the conqueror without further enactment. But it was also contended learnedly in many quarters, and it was the main article of faith with the English-speaking party in the province, that the fundamental imperial documents by which civil government had been established were adequate to, and had resulted in, the introduction of the English civil law, if not *in toto* at least in the same degree as that in which these laws were operative in the other colonies.¹ It may perhaps be contended that this was the view, not only of the "old subjects," but also in the early official world, and that the legislation whose validity has been discussed above was mainly intended only to provide administrative machinery or applications for laws already established in bulk. The fundamental acts relied on for such an establishment were the capitulation of Montreal (and of the province), September 8th, 1760, the Treaty of Paris, February, 1763, and the Imperial Proclamation of October 7, 1763. It is necessary therefore to briefly consider these.²

The first of these documents is of a purely negative character, Amherst replying to the demand that the Canadians should continue to be governed according to the custom of Paris and the laws and usages of the colony, by the remark that they became subjects of the king. The

¹ The prevailing ideas in regard to the position of the colonies generally as to the introduction of English law, are probably expressed in Knox's *Justice and Policy of the Quebec Act*, 1774. He states that English colonists take with them such statute law only as, (of date previous to the starting of the colony), is applicable to their circumstances, or such of later date as expressly mentions the colonies. The result (he continues), is that the new colony is in most cases without laws, "and the magistrates usually adopt the usages of the neighbouring colonies, whose circumstances and situation bear a near resemblance to their own; and by the tacit consent of the people to their fitness they acquire the authority of laws; and things are conducted upon this (though somewhat arbitrary) footing, until a legislature is formed; and then the laws of the other colonies are taken as models; and with such alterations as circumstances render necessary, they are enacted the laws of the new colony." It is interesting to note that Knox adds that this was the procedure in Quebec, the old laws of the colony being adopted till the legislature could make new ones. If he refers to actual use this is practically correct; but by no means so with regard to the actual legislative steps taken in formal enactment. See below, chapter V, with regard to the province of Grenada.

² The pertinent parts are reprinted carefully in Houston, *Can. Documents*, pp. 32-74.

only bearing of the Treaty of Paris on the matter is an indirect one, Masères contending that the phrase with regard to the toleration of the Catholic religion, "as far as the laws of Great Britain permit," shows that it was the British intention that these laws should be the fundamental rule of government in the province. The *intentions* of the crown are to be considered presently; meanwhile it may be concluded that the Treaty of Paris, except with regard to the criminal law, does not affect the legal point; unless indeed it be considered necessary to combat the opinion that conquest and cession *ipso facto* make at once legal in the conquered territory all the laws of the conqueror. But it should be enough on this point simply to refer again to the opinion of Lord Mansfield (stated by him as a "maxim," the "justice and antiquity" of which were "incontrovertable"), that "the laws of a conquered country continue in force till they are altered by the conqueror."¹ The remaining question then is this. Assuming as Lord Mansfield does, that the king had up till the publication of the Proclamation of 1763 possessed general legislative power within the limits of the constitution, were the English civil laws introduced into Canada by that proclamation?

The proclamation declares that the king has by letters patent under the great seal (i. e., by the governor's commission), "given express power and direction" to the governor to summon an assembly as soon as possible, in the same manner as in the other royal provinces; that he has granted to the governor, council and assembly, when thus brought together, power, "to make constitute and ordain laws, statutes and ordinances . . . as near as may be agreeable to the Laws of England, and under such regula-

¹ In Grenada judgment. See also his letter to Grenville, December 24, 1764, *Grenville's Correspondence*, III, 476. Also reports of crown lawyers on Canada, 1766. There seems no need of further discussing this; the curious are referred further to *Blackstone*, I, 107; *Clark, Colonial Law*, p. 4; *Bowyer, Universal Public Law*, c. 16; *Burge, Commentaries on Colonial Laws*, I, 31; *Halleck, International Law*, p. 824; *Lower Canada Jurist*, II, App. 1. For these references I am indebted mainly to Lareau, *Hist. Droit. Can.*

tions and restrictions as are used in the other colonies;" and that in the meantime "all persons inhabiting in or resorting to our said colonies may confide in our Royal Protection for the enjoyment of the benefit of the laws of England." To which end power has been given to the governor and council to establish courts of justice "for the hearing and determining all causes as well criminal as civil, according to law and equity, and as near as may be agreeable to the laws of England." The first part of this gives a power the conditions of the exercise of which were never realized, and which thus has no bearing on the present question; but the second part, which claims to provide for the temporary non-realization of these conditions, and which directs the use of the laws of England "as near as may be" while at the same time giving no authority to the provincial government directly to enact these laws, would certainly seem to have been considered by its authors at least as in itself sufficient to some extent for their legalization or introduction. But even this would appear not to have been the case. In response to an inquiry from Carleton concerning the putting into force in Quebec of some English commercial law, the Earl of Hillsborough, then secretary of state, replies (March 6, 1768), that as one of those who had drawn up the Proclamation of 1763,¹ he could state "that it had never entered into our idea to overturn the laws and customs of Canada in regard to property, but that justice should be administered agreeably to them, according to the modes of administering justice . . . in this Kingdom;" adding on the point in question, that "it is impossible to conceive that it could ever be His Majesty's intention, signified either by the Proclamation or by the Ordinance for the establishment of Courts of Judicature, to extend laws of that particular and

¹ He was then President of the Board of Trade. Horace Walpole refers to him at an earlier period as "a young man of great honour and merit;" but his subsequent career shows that he possessed little judgment or moderation.

municipal nature to the colony, even if the intention had been to have overturned the customs of Canada."¹ A further official indication of the intent of the proclamation is found, nearer the time of issue, in the report of the crown lawyers, April, 1766, on the legal condition of the province. This, after strongly advising that the local usages be left undisturbed, states as one of the main sources of disorder in the province, the alarm taken at the proclamation of 1763, "as if it were the Royal intention, by the judges and officers in that country, at once to abolish all the usages and customs of Canada with the rough hand of a conqueror rather than in the true spirit of a lawful sovereign."² Whatever this may imply it certainly refers to the Proclamation, not as introductory of any law or legal principle, but as at the most merely indicating an intention, to be more or less gently and gradually carried out. Finally Attorney-General Thurlow, in the Quebec Act debates 1774, refers to the document as a crude production, which "certainly gave no order whatever with respect to the Constitution of Canada," and asserts that it is an unheard-of and absurd tyranny to regard it "as importing English laws into a country already settled and habitually governed by other laws." "This proclamation . . . was not addressed to the Canadians; . . . I would ask from what expression it is, that either the Canadians can discover or English lawyers advance, that the laws of Canada were all absolutely repealed and that a new system of justice, as well as a new system of constitution, was by that instrument introduced."³

Authoritative legal and official statements therefore support the lay judgment in the opinion that the general and vague expressions of the proclamation could not be taken as adequate to the overturning in whole or part of the

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 344.

² Smith, *History of Canada*, II, 27.

³ Cavendish, *Report*, pp. 24-37.

ancient system of civil law, and the express introduction of English, either common or statute. The province could not be regarded in the light of a new colony, into which the settlers brought with them a certain part of the common law of the parent state; and hence it would seem that the introduction of common law could not be effected any more easily than that of statute. As to statute law, public promulgation has always been essential to validity; but no publication of any portion of that law was ever expressly made in the province.¹

This discussion belongs, however, rather to the realm of legal theory than to that of practical constitutional investigation. For the validity of the legislation in question remained unchallenged either in the province or at home, and no hint of an indemnity for the acts committed thereunder is to be found in any of the discussions connected with the Quebec Act. We have official references now and then to individual ordinances as overstepping the legislative authority, and a few are disallowed by the home government apparently on this ground; but no general objection seems to have been made then or at any time thereafter to the exercise of the legislative power. Nor, stranger still, have modern writers on this period, even those occupying a legal standpoint, taken adequate note of these fundamental considerations; a neglect which must be my excuse for the extent to which I have gone into them.

¹ It is to be noticed in this connection that the general supposition among the English in the province in the earlier years, as to the introduction of English law, was based, not on the proclamation alone, but mainly on the ordinance of September 17, 1764; the inference being that this ordinance was considered necessary to the completing or enforcing of the work of the proclamation. Carleton writes to Shelburne, December 24, 1767, that the whole French constitution and system of law and custom "in one hour we overturned by the Ordinance, . . . and laws ill-adapted to the genius of the Canadians . . . unknown and unpublished, were introduced in their stead." It has been shown above, however, that this enactment was necessarily null and void, as an overstepping of the power of the legislator. See Lareau, *Hist. Droit. Can.*, II, 39-53, for discussion of this matter.

B. General Administration.

It is of course not possible here to enter into any investigation of the constitutional functions at this period of colonial administrations in general, or of this one in particular. My object is simply to indicate generally the lines and limits of practical conduct, with special reference to the peculiar conditions of the province. Such a statement must be taken in close conjunction with the investigation of general policy to which the succeeding chapter is devoted, and especially with the analysis of Commissions and Instructions there attempted.

Murray's commission as governor (1764), invested him, apart from the Council, with the following powers and duties:

- a. Keeping and using the public seal.
- b. Administering required oaths to all other public functionaries.
- c. A negative voice in both council and assembly and the power of adjourning, proroguing or dissolving the latter.
- d. Appointment of ecclesiastical officers.
- e. Pardoning or reprieving of legal offenders, so far as that power was delegated to colonial officials.
- f. Certain military powers in time of war.

These seem to be the usual powers, and we need not delay on them, except to notice that the military authority granted Murray was purely a militia one (that is to say, of the extent usually granted), notwithstanding the fact that he represented with some force¹ the necessity of a different regulation on account of the peculiar position of Quebec. The representation was of avail later, for the supreme military command in the province (i. e., over the regular troops on all occasions, as well as over emergency forces in time of war), was practically joined to the civil in 1766,

¹ To Halifax, October 15, 1764. (Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 206.)

and formally so in 1770. Other changes were made later in the position of the governor, concerning which it is necessary to here make only the general statement that, with the military modification, the result was to place the English governor much more nearly in the place occupied by the old French one.

In regard to the council apart from the governor, and the relation between it and him, I find that during the most of the period, the conditions (defined in the governor's Instructions), were practically identical with the contemporary ones in the older crown colonies.¹ The phrase used constantly in regard to the relations between the council and the governor in the carrying on of joint duties, requires the governor to act with its "advice and consent." This position of the council is defined by Masères as one of "advice and control;" but how far the element of control really entered depended largely of course on circumstances and individuals. How far it could be eliminated under a strong hand may be conjectured from the fact that the governor was by his commission generally, if not always, invested with an unlimited veto power on all legislation, and that the carrying out of executive measures rested almost entirely with him. He had, moreover, on what he might choose to regard as emergencies, power of suspension from the council; besides being in the province the dispenser of general governmental favours, and in most cases the only effectual medium of access to the home administration.² An examination of the council

¹ See instructions to Sir H. Moore, governor of New York, issued November 27, 1765. Or for the Province of Georgia, about the same time. The latter province, in its late establishment as a crown colony, and the presence on its borders of far-reaching tribes of Indians, a source at once of danger and of profit, occupied in the southern system of colonies a position analogous to that of Quebec in the northern.

² How ineffective the "control" of the council practically proved in Quebec is tacitly acknowledged by Masères himself in his later recommendations of such changes in formation and maintenance as would protect it against the governor. In a close examination of the council records throughout the period, I have discovered only one instance where the official language (and I am not unmindful of the untrustworthiness in such

records leaves with us the impression on the whole of a body so docile as to present no obstacle to the will of such a man as Carleton. Abridged as the latter's power really was, he was able to rule more autocratically than even Murray. But that this was not the intention of the home authorities may be conjectured from the changes in his instructions; and we shall see later how after the Quebec Act a more decisive intervention was made in favour of the council.

The council had no stated times or conditions of meeting, the available members being apparently called together as occasion arose. The full list comprised twelve names, and the *personnel* was subject to constant change, only three of the original dozen remaining in the province at the close of the period. Temporary appointments had to be constantly made, and June 22, 1773, the lieutenant-governor writes that no meetings had been held for the last three months of 1772 for want of a quorum. During the administration of Murray we have no details of the council proceedings. This seems due to neglect on the part of the colonial office in not requiring reports;¹ for references elsewhere leave no doubt as to the fact of meetings or the keeping of minutes. The first full report is in 1766, and

connections of official wordings), supports the theory as to the power of the council; and in that instance, if control were really exercised, it can be shown to have been most probably caused by exceptional circumstances. Carleton's attitude toward his council may be judged from his assertion of practical independence soon after his arrival, in regard to an instance where he had expressly convened only a portion of it. And it is to be remarked that his conduct on that occasion was not censured by the home authorities. (See *Can. Arch.*, Q. 3, pp. 259-70.) A few months later he dismissed two of the council on his sole authority. His representation of this matter also proved satisfactory to the home government, which paid no attention to the plea of the aggrieved members, that "the independence of His Majesty's council, not only of Quebec, but in every other province, seems interested in this event." (*Can. Arch.*, Q. 4, p. 40; pp. 198-239, 247.) This is the only instance of the dismissal of councillors met with. Murray's relations with his advisors seem to have been amicable throughout.

¹ A neglect which I have frequently noted, and which I shall emphasize elsewhere as steadily marking the home administration with regard to Canada down almost to the Quebec Act.

from this time down we have regular accounts of proceedings.¹

In comparing the English council down to the Quebec Act with the council under the French régime, we find at first sight a close resemblance in composition. The French council in the last stage of its development, (i. e., from the beginning of the 18th century), consisted, beside the governor, intendant, and bishop, of the same number of ordinary councillors (12), appointed, and apparently removable, in the same way. If we regard the English governor as representing the bishop, and the English chief justice and governor as dividing between them most of the functions of the intendant, (not indeed a very accurate supposition), we may look upon the councils as practically identical in composition. But in considering the respective spheres of action, we discover very notable differences; differences which for the general purposes of government made the English council a very much more important body. In regard to legislative functions the French council had power only in cases not provided for by the established *Coutume de Paris*, the royal edicts, or the ordinances of the intendant (the last especially affecting all parts of the life of the people); while in ordinary executive work its powers were again much narrowed by the great range of the same official, whose prerogatives were always jealously defended and exercised. On the other hand, in judicial matters the French council seems to have had a much wider sphere than the English, and to have acted within it much more constantly and vigorously. So much so indeed that there can be little doubt that it was intended finally to be restricted, so far as the peculiar circumstances of the colony should render ad-

¹ No definite instructions are found as occasioning this change, and it would seem that none such are to be found contemporaneously in regard to the other colonies. Carleton had doubtless, however, received directions of some kind before entering on the government, and the 80th Article of his Instructions of 1768 require him, "upon all occasions to send unto us . . . a particular account of all your proceedings and of the conditions of affairs within your government." This direction does not appear in the instructions of 1775 or 1778, though full minutes continued to be sent.

visible, to much the same sphere of activity as that allowed to the old parliaments of France. Within these limits it seems to have been a much more vigorous, though much less harmonious body than the English council, either of Quebec or of the older colonies. It met weekly, worked with dispatch, and made its influence daily felt in every part of the province. It was by no means under the control of the governor, and was always split up into two, and not unfrequently into three, factions; a want of harmony, however, which does not seem to have seriously affected the satisfactory execution of its main work.

In considering the actual legislation of the period we find the more important ordinances to be about forty in number, of which more than one-half were passed under Murray's administration, or in the first two years. The main subjects treated are as follows: The judiciary (9 ordinances); the currency (3); regulation of retail trade, including markets (14); relations of debtors and creditors (3); police regulations (3); registering of lands, etc. (1); highways (1); protection against fire (3). Measures of an exceptional character provided for the ratifying of the decrees of the courts of justice during the preceding military period, prevented anyone leaving the province without a government pass, forbade the selling of liquor to the Indians, made temporary provision for billeting troops in private houses, and imposed a fine for being more than three months absent from public worship. Much of the commercial legislation is decidedly paternal in tone. The ordinances of the first part of the period are as might be expected somewhat carelessly drawn. One has an *ex post facto* clause; another mixes together in the same enactment two apparently utterly unrelated regulations; a third describes and prohibits a serious offence without stating any penalty. In most cases fines are the only punishment, but in three ordinances (which are not noticed as repealed, and were therefore evidently considered as law through the whole period), the

penalties include imprisonment up to one month, though the instructions debarred provincial legislation from affecting the liberty of the subject. In three others (two of which were disallowed, apparently on this ground), conviction could be secured by the oath of an informer, who got half the fine. It is evident, in short, that the apprentice work of the council was not guided by any particular directions from home. Such directions were, however, issued to Carleton in 1768, and the legislation we have subsequently is apparently devoid of such objectionable features. The minutes of council show the ordinances to have been framed with very considerable care and deliberation,¹ following the lines of English parliamentary practice. In most cases, however, the number of councillors present is merely a quorum or less than one-half the whole.² The ordinances seem from the beginning to have been published in both French and English, but it was not till 1768 that the prior submission of the French translation to the inspection of the council was made necessary before publication. As to the occasion and manner of the initiation of legislation we have few particulars; but in one instance (February 16, 1768), we find an ordinance called forth by the submission to the council through the chief justice (an *ex-officio* member of it), of a presentment of the grand jury in the supreme court; while in another case (April 24, 1769), it seems to have been occasioned simply by the representation of a Quebec magistrate.³ Petitions were no doubt very frequently the basis of action. The

¹ See (e. g.) the procedure in the case of the ordinance of February 1, 1770, for the reform of the judiciary. At a council meeting of August 18, 1769, a committee is appointed to report concerning complaints on the subject. The report appears September 14, and on being approved, the attorney general is ordered to prepare an ordinance embodying its recommendations. The draft of this is submitted at the next meeting (January 10, 1770), is referred to a committee, and returned by it February 1st, with an amendment. The amended ordinance is ordered to be translated into French, and on the translation being approved of at the next meeting, (February 14), the two versions are ordered to be immediately promulgated.

² The Quebec Act ordered that legislation should require a majority.

³ See Can. Arch., Q. Minutes of council of above dates.

manner of publishing ordinances was at first by public reading in the towns on beat of drum, followed by printing in the *Quebec Gazette*. A few months later this was supplemented by an order that all curés should read to their congregation after Sunday services all government measures so published.

The multifarious forms of the council's executive activity can be as easily imagined as they would be tedious to enumerate. Its main and regular functions were the granting of lands, the establishment and maintenance of means of communication, the regulation of trade and manufactures, the appointment and supervision of judicial and local officials, the examination of public accounts, and the consideration of complaints against public officers. It acted in important matters by means of committees and much of its time was expended in the examination of petitions. General measures, aside from ordinances, were known as Proclamations or Advertisements, and seem at times to encroach on the properly legislative sphere; at least it is difficult to see the distinction between matters provided for in some of them and other matters which were clothed with the dignity of an ordinance.¹

The judicial functions of the governor and council, (regulated by the governor's instructions), were the ordinary ones of the supreme colonial court of appeal, and do not require close discussion. I have spoken above of the corresponding powers of the French council as being very similarly exercised, but, through the greater range of appeal, as much more closely and constantly touching the people, even making allowance for the fact that the English council was not hampered by a parallel jurisdiction such as that of the intendant. The instances of judicial action on the part of the latter at any part of the

¹ None of these instruments appear after 1768. Many of them were simply the re-issue under the colonial seal, of general or special acts of the home executive.

period are few in number,¹ there being none under Murray's administration. Notwithstanding one dubious incident,² the council's judicial activity seems to have been beneficial. Its application of English constitutional principles, and the thoroughly English spirit of its procedure, are illustrated by a case in 1767 which seems at first sight a direct overstepping of its jurisdiction.³ But that it was not given to vexatious or illegal interference with the courts is shown not only by the rarity of such cases, but also by the record of a couple of instances in which appeals were dismissed as not cognizable. Nevertheless, a general oversight seems to have been kept on the judiciary, especially in its lower stages. As a striking illustration we may notice here the action taken on receipt of well founded complaints against many of the justices of the peace of the District of Montreal in 1769,—complaints which a few months later were more fully met by an ordinance greatly curtailing the power of the justices.⁴ In the meantime, and almost immediately on receipt of the complaints, a circular letter was addressed to the offending magistrates, in which the conduct complained of was censured in the strongest terms, and particular directions were given as to the method of amendment.

C. Judiciary. Civil Service.

The commission issued to Gov. Murray in 1763 granted him power, in conjunction with the council, "to erect,

¹ This is mainly due of course to the restriction of civil appeals to cases involving a high money value (£300).

² This was a case of the reversion by the council of a judgment of the court of common pleas. Appealed to the crown, (the only such appeal of the period), the Privy Council decided, (after a delay of four years), to uphold the original court. But to the consequent order the provincial council seems to have paid slight attention; for in 1774 we find an apparently well-founded complaint to Dartmouth from the original appellant in the case, to the effect that though the decision of the Privy Council had been transmitted to Quebec, the governor and council had taken advantage of a technical difficulty to refuse all reparation. The case seems from first to last a reversion and denial of justice. (See *Can. Arch.*, Q. 10, pp. 94-104).

³ See *Can. Arch.*, Q. 4, p. 230.

⁴ See full details in *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1890, p. xvii, and following.

constitute and establish such and so many courts of judicature and public justice" as should be found necessary, these courts being declared by the previous proclamation of October, 1763, to be for the "hearing and determining all causes as well criminal as civil according to law and equity, and as near as may be agreeable to the laws of England." The institution of the judiciary in accordance with the powers then given was through the provincial ordinance of September 17, 1764, which remained for the most part the basis of the administration of justice throughout the whole of the period. Its main provisions were:

1st. Establishment of a superior court, or Court of King's Bench, presided over by a Chief Justice, "with power and authority to hear and determine all criminal and civil causes agreeable to the laws of England and to the Ordinances of the Province." To sit twice a year at Quebec, with the addition of a court of assize and general goal delivery once a year at Montreal and Three Rivers. Appeal could be made to governor and council.

2nd. Establishment of a Court of Common Pleas, to determine all cases concerning property above value of £10, with appeal to King's Bench concerning £20 or upwards, and to council directly for £300 or more. The judges "to determine agreeably to equity, having regard nevertheless to the laws of England, as far as the circumstances and present situation of things will admit, until such time as proper ordinances for the information of the people can be established by the government and council agreeable to the laws of England:" but "the French laws and customs to be allowed and admitted in all causes where the cause of action arose before October 1, 1764."

3rd. Establishment of justices of the peace in the different districts, with power to each in his own district "to hear and finally determine in all causes and matters of property" not exceeding £5, and to any two to do the same

up to £10. Three were to be a quorum, with power of holding quarter sessions and determining up to £30, with appeal to the King's Bench, while two of the body were to sit weekly in rotation in the towns of Quebec and Montreal.

I have elsewhere spoken of the marked English character of this ordinance and of the manner in which it was received in the province.¹ There are no traces of reference to the old French judiciary, and apparently the only indications that the legislators were aware that the community for which they were legislating was not an English one, are the concessions as to the use of French procedure and law in causes begun before October 1, 1764,² the admission of French Canadians to juries in the King's Bench, (apparently not in the Common Pleas), and the admission of Canadian lawyers to practice in the Common Pleas, (apparently not in the King's Bench). I shall elsewhere detail the extension of these privileges by instructions from home; instructions which it will be remembered did not come into effect during Murray's administration. The only other judiciary enactment of importance under Murray is an ordinance of March 9, 1765, by which all juries were directed to be in future summoned from the province at large without regard to the vicinage of the action or crime. This remarkable interference with one of the fundamental principles of the jury system seems to have been occasioned by temporary circumstances, and was remedied by Carleton very soon after his arrival in the province.³

¹To what a large extent the legislators believed that they were introducing English law by this ordinance is shown by the amending one of November 6 following. For later opinions as to it, see Carleton, December 24, 1767, (Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 316), and Reports of the Board of Trade, 1765, 1766, (Can. Arch., Q. 3, pp. 53, 171.) See also above, p. 336 note.

²See also ordinance of November 6, 1764, for "quieting people in their possessions."

³Ordinance of January 27, 1766. This ordinance was approved. It should be considered in connection with that interference with the jury system in Massachusetts, which called forth the protest of the Massachusetts assembly July 8, 1769, against measures by which "the inestimable privilege of being tried by a jury from the vicinage . . . will be taken away from the party accused." (4 *Amer. Arch.*, I, 24.)

The instructions to Carleton of 1768 imply no change with reference to the judiciary, and taken literally would indeed intimate an intention of remaining closely by the English law and procedure. But that this was due simply to the careless following of old official forms is shown by later transactions. For not only was such an idea disregarded by the governor in his general policy, but the first important judiciary ordinance of his administration (February 1, 1770), is a direct abandoning of English institutions and a very considerable step toward the adoption of French. The ordinance was occasioned by that oppressive conduct on the part of justices of the peace in the district of Montreal which has been already mentioned, and had been prepared after an investigation by a committee of the council with the Chief Justice at its head, and an attempt to remedy matters by a letter of censure to the offending justices. There seems no reason to doubt the necessity and justice of the ordinance.¹ That of 1764 had given to the justices a power of final determination in matters of property far exceeding that ever exercised by similar magistrates in England (who, as the committee of council pointed out, were of a much more influential and disinterested class); and even this large power had been by some constantly overstepped and exercised in a most wantonly oppressive manner. Accordingly all jurisdiction (either singly or jointly), in matters of private property was now taken away and mainly transferred to the Common Pleas, the sittings of which were greatly extended and for which in such cases a definite line of procedure was laid down. The ordinance is also marked (as the old subjects complained), by the discretionary power granted to the judges. This, and the provision that the new jurisdiction given to the common pleas could be exercised by one judge (acting evidently in a summary manner), together with the prohibition of imprisonment and sale of lands in cases of debt,

¹ See *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1890, pp. xvii-xx, 1-9.

are distinctly French features, and mark the measure as a considerable step towards the restoration of French procedure in civil matters. That this was intended is shown by Carleton's explanation when transmitting it home; he says plainly that its aims were the "reducing the justices of the peace to nearly the same power they have in England," and the "reviving part of the ancient mode of administering justice in the Province."¹ And that it was so regarded by the general public is evident from the vigorous and numerous signed memorials against it from the merchants of Quebec and Montreal; representations which cannot be disposed of, as Carleton tries to do, as merely the angry and hungry voice of the dispossessed justices.² For the objections raised are not against the depriving of these justices of their ill-used power, but against the unusual and inadequate character, (in the opinion of the memorialists), of the substituted procedure. The ordinance was approved by the home government without delay and without any remark on its inconsistency with the instructions of 1768. It was a fitting prelude to that article of the Quebec Act which enacted that "in all matters of controversy relative to property and civil right, resort shall be had to the laws of Canada as the rule for the decision of the same."³

I have discussed elsewhere the questions connected with the dispute regarding the validity in the province of French

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 7, pp. 7, 89. For ordinance see p. 12, and for British memorials, p. 95.

² It is to be repeated that the English party had protested strongly in 1764 against the great powers now taken from the justices.

³ It should be noted that the only complaints that appear throughout the period on the part of the French Canadians with regard to the administration of justice, (apart from the matter of fees), are those remedied by this Ordinance. And the justices whose acts are complained of had not only been entrusted with powers greater than English law granted in the mother country, but had abused even these. No argument, therefore, can be drawn from the matter to show that the Canadians here displayed hostility to English law or judicial methods. But it must of course be conceded that the incident could not have had a favorable effect upon them; the effect probably was to confirm and continue the avoidance of the courts. The abuse had been fully removed, it should be clearly noted however, four years before the Quebec Act.

and English law; and it is well to bring here the consideration of the more practical and even more obscure problem as to the laws actually *used* throughout the period. This is one of the most important of the questions connected with the introduction of English institutions; and it becomes of even more immediate interest from the standpoint of the policy and effects of the Quebec Act. One of the main bases of both the arguments for and the later oft-expressed approval of that measure, was the belief that the establishment thereby of the French civil law and procedure, as relieving the French Canadians from the grievous oppression of a foreign code, would be and was most effective in so inspiring them with gratitude as to keep them loyal to the British connection. We shall see later that they were not loyal; we have now to consider whether the Quebec Act could really be expected to have the effect attributed to it. And so far as the present matter is concerned, it will be found that the French Canadians were not suffering from legal oppression in any sense, and that therefore they could not and did not experience with the Quebec Act any sudden or marked relief. Gratitude, or an enlightened view of self-interest in connection with the measure influenced only classes and individuals who did not need the additional reason for preferring the imperial to the revolutionary connection; the mass of the people perceived no such change of conditions as to form an offset to other very clearly discerned and most unpopular parts of the enactment.

That this is a totally different enquiry from the previous one as to legal validity we very soon discover. For a slight investigation shows that neither the governmental nor the popular opinions (at least among the "old subjects"), as to the laws which were strictly valid, very much affected the action of the great body of litigants, and that throughout the period the administration of civil justice was in a state of compromise and (from the legal standpoint), hopeless con-

fusion. Even the governmental opinion and practice on the point were sadly at variance, especially in the latter part of the period. Neither Murray nor his advisers seem to have been troubled with any doubts as to the validity in the province of all English common and much English statute law, or of their own legislative competence, within certain limits as to penalties, to further apply that law to any extent that might seem desirable. Whether they considered themselves, in the various specific ordinances, to be making English law valid by express enactment of it, or to be merely regulating the machinery by which the law, already in force through the fundamental documents on which the civil government rested, was to be put in operation, is not a matter of importance; I need only refer again to the language of the ordinance of September 17, 1764, in regard to the legal principles which were to guide the courts.¹ These provisions remained in force throughout the whole period, legally affected only by the slight compromises shortly to be mentioned; for even the ordinance of 1770, which was intended radically to amend that of 1764, and which was passed by a governor and council fully convinced that French civil law was about to be re-established, and fully in sympathy with the movement, makes no attempt whatever to anticipate events. And it is also to be noticed that up to 1770 the justices of the peace had authority to exercise the very large civil power which it was the object of that ordinance to take from them, according to a form of commission unmistakably based on the English law, directing the recipient to act "according to the laws and customs of England, or form of the ordinances and statutes of England, and of our Province of Quebec."²

Even in these commissions, however, there are indications of that policy of compromise and withdrawal in regard to English law which was one of the guiding principles of

¹ See above, p. 345.

² See Masères, *Commissions*, pp. 135-8.

Carleton's executive administration; it is further manifest in many ways that Murray had also pursued this policy more or less from the very first. We find in the fundamental judiciary ordinance of 1764 provision made that in the court of Common Pleas the French laws and customs shall be admitted in all causes between French Canadians "where the cause of action arose before October 1, 1764;" and in an amending ordinance a few weeks later, entitled "An Ordinance for quieting people in their possessions," it is ordained that until August 10, 1765, the tenures of lands granted before the conquest and all rights of inheritance in the same, should remain as they had been under the French "unless they shall be altered by some declared and positive law." No such law was ever enacted, and thus it will be seen that even for those who maintained the validity of the provincial legislation, the legal side of the position assumed a very confusing and indefinite aspect.¹ Certainly the popular opinions as to the bounds of valid law were of the most diverse and clashing forms, and the indefiniteness and perplexity thus created was one of the chief grievances of the period. The confusion of opinion and practice on these points is referred to by Thurlow in the Quebec Act debates as beyond all description; another speaker asserts that this confusion had never been so great as at that time (1774).² Lord Lyttleton in his "Letter to the Earl of Chatham on the Quebec Bill," (1774), draws a striking picture of the almost anarchical state of things in the province,—a picture which is of interest mainly as showing how matters were presented to the English public.³ For that it must be a greatly exaggerated one is

¹ See Carleton's evidence, 1774, as to the confusion in laws of property. (Cavendish, *Report*.)

² Which is to be expected from the increasing divergence between the practice and policy of government and its constitutional and legal bases of action.

³ The letter is in defense of the Bill. It asserts that in Canada "the French laws prevailed alone till 1764, when the English laws got a footing. The governors and officers of justice [were] always doubtful which to take for their guide, sometimes preferring the English, sometimes the French laws, as each seemed applicable to the case before them.

shown by several reflections. It was in the first place the interest of the government party, as upholding the Quebec Act, to give a strong impression of the bad state of things in Canada; the opposition on the other hand denied the state of chaos represented. It will be remembered, moreover, that a state of things which to lawyers in England, acquainted only with the imperfect and contradictory documents on which government had been constituted, and with the complaints of partisans, might seem confused and dangerous to the last degree, in the peculiar state of Canada was not likely to prove so fatal. The condition of things here described would seem certain to paralyse all energy and prevent all progress in the province; but we do not find in fact these results. Industry and enterprise were undoubtedly much hampered; but yet the only department of commerce that did not largely increase was the fur trade, and this was injured and impeded not so much by the confusion of law that prevailed in Quebec as by the want of all law in the regions outside its jurisdiction.

How then was the province preserved from the natural consequences of the confusion and uncertainty that certainly did exist? Partly from the fact that on the basis of a compromise system initiated by the government itself, and more than connived at in the courts, litigation continued to be conducted chiefly according to the old laws; mainly perhaps because the mass of the people resorted but slightly to the established courts. I have shown above that during the military period the French law and customs seem to have been closely followed wherever they could be discovered. A close study of the later period leads to the conviction that, in at least all matters affecting private property (i. e., in almost all the matters in re-

One year a proclamation, another year an instruction to a governor, another year a local ordinance, changed the principle and varied the course of their judiciary proceedings. In this fluctuation no man knew by what right he could take or give, inherit or convey, property; or by what mode or rule he could bring his right to a trial." (Pamphlets, Can. Archives, Vol. 62.)

gard to which nine-tenths of the people would be likely to come into contact with the administration of civil justice), these laws and customs continued to be given validity even in the highest courts. Under the fundamental ordinances quoted above, such validity could not be denied in a large number of cases. In all cases, moreover, a large discretionary power could be used in the court of Common Pleas through a liberal interpretation of the clauses directing its action; and much scattered evidence could be brought forward to show that the law administered in this court was French law wherever the use of English would have seemed to work injustice. In regard to the court of King's Bench, which was supposed to be adhering to English law with special closeness and to be bound to reverse appealed judgments founded on any other, we have the direct evidence of Chief Justice Hey before the Commons in 1774, that in all suits respecting property Canadian law and customs had been fully admitted by him, and that juries in the court had always been in the habit of regarding these customs as fully as juries in England regarded English ones. Further, that in appeal-cases, (to which the court was practically confined), he had always determined by the rules on which the case had been originally decided. In what seems without doubt to be his report on the judicature in 1769,¹ after stating the legal changes that had been worked by the supposed introduction of English law in 1764, he adds that "these things have not yet been practised,"—a statement which would seem to refer to the whole judicial administration. Masères testifies in 1774 that no inconvenience has as yet been occasioned in the province by the English laws so far as they had been experienced through the decision of the courts; adding that if these had been enforced in regard to landed property great uneasiness and confusion would doubtless have re-

¹ Anonymous paper in *Lower Canada Jurist*, Vol. I.

sulted. This statement is in support of the more explicit assertion in his report of 1769, that in the main with regard to landed property the Canadians had universally adhered to their former laws and customs. There is no reliable evidence to be set over against these statements, made by men who for years had been intimately connected with the administration of justice, and who had kept up their relations with the province during the whole period; we must conclude therefore that outside of strictly commercial matters even the litigious among the French Canadians were little if at all affected by English law. That law was used of course in all matters confined to the old subjects. With regard to suits between litigants of different nationalities it seems safe to assert that Canadian land law and customs were given full validity,—a course which would commend itself even to the English party after the reversion in 1770 to the French methods of tenure. In commercial matters on the other hand the English law seems to have obtained without much demur; but there is no reason to suppose that there was here any such divergence of principle as to introduce many disagreeable changes.

But, apart from the courts, it is evident that the question of codes was not a burning one among the people at large, for the reason that the main body had very little to do with the administration of justice, civil or criminal.¹ Carleton writes to Shelbourne December 24, 1767,² that "The people notwithstanding³ continue to regulate their transactions by the ancient laws, tho' unknown and unauthorized in the Supreme Courts, where most of their transactions would be declared invalid." He adds that he has met only

¹ Carleton testified before the House of Commons in 1774 that there were very few trials for offences on the part of the common people.

² Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 316.

³ That is, of the use or establishment of English law in the courts. Carleton is writing at the end of the period during which the Anglo-legal movement had been freshest and strongest, and the last part of the statement is shown above to be incorrect.

one Canadian "who sees the great revolution [i. e., in law] in its full influence." This evidently means that the Canadians kept clear of the courts, making use of their former laws and customs through the aid of those persons who had in large measure arranged their difficulties during the military period.¹ Masères in 1774 says the greater part of the French Canadians remain ignorant of the extent of the changes and have proceeded in regard to their lands on the assumption that the ancient laws and usages were still in force. And as he goes on to say that no litigation has yet arisen to give occasion for decisions which would make them better informed, we must conclude that he means they had not in these matters resorted to the courts. In the Quebec Act debate Attorney-General Thurlow made the statement (uncontradicted), that "if any dispute arose there was no instance of the Canadians resorting to the English Courts of Justice, but they referred it among themselves."² These statements are supported by indirect evidence and justify us in concluding that the main body of French Canadian litigants had not resorted to the courts, but had used through private instrumentalities their old property laws and customs.

The main conclusion I have reached therefore is that, for the various reasons discussed above, the judicial conditions existing in Canada up to and at 1774 were not such as to cause the formal re-establishment of the old civil law by the Quebec Act to affect the mass of the people in any considerable degree. But nevertheless the situation was one of such confusion and uncertainty as made imperative some decided act of settlement. It may justly be urged that, even in the absence of material grievances, the very fact that the Canadians kept aloof from the courts showed

¹ See here also the evidence before Commons, 1774, to the effect that the noblesse kept out of the courts from pride, and resorted to arbitration.

² Cavendish, p. 31. Thurlow was speaking from a partizan standpoint, but he had gotten up Canadian affairs thoroughly, having prepared an elaborate report after examination of all the available material.

a degree of dissatisfaction or distrust, if not dread, that called for immediate action. Moreover, that much friction and complaint existed cannot be denied. But a close examination of the manifestations of this will show that it was in large degree really political in origin, or that it was inspired not so much by oppression in the every day operation of law as by uncertainty with regard to the future. It is rather the apprehension of the educated and intelligent non-litigant¹ than the specific cry of the actually aggrieved. Where it is really the latter it will be found again that it is the expression of dissatisfaction with, not new law, actual or supposed, but new procedure. For there can be no doubt that this latter contrasted very unfavorably with the old in regard to the essential features of expense and expedition. So far as English features were at all responsible it is probable that the peasantry were kept from the English courts by these more evident changes and not by legal differences of which they were wholly ignorant.² In the letter quoted above, Carleton, after his strong statement as to the ignorance of the people in regard to the great legal changes and their avoidance of the courts, adds, "The present great and universal complaint³ arises from the delay and heavy expense of justice," the courts having "introduced all the chicanery of Westminster into this impoverished Province." The judiciary under the old régime had been the most praiseworthy part of the administration, being effective, easy of access, and marked especially by expedition and inexpensive methods. It had been largely and beneficially inspired by the old French paternal attitude, the judges being always ready to interpose for settlement without the expense of a trial. In

¹ Neither noblesse nor clergy went into the courts.

² See especially on this point the evidence of the provincial officers before the Commons, 1774. (Cavendish, *Report*.)

³ A good instance of the carelessness and exaggeration of the official language of the time. His own previous statement would show that such complaint must have been confined practically to the upper or educated classes.

all these points the change was decidedly for the worse, and taken in connection with the unfamiliar appearance of even the better parts of the new procedure, make it unnecessary to look further for the full explanation of whatever specific complaint or general apprehension is to be met with. With regard to seigneurial jurisdiction, it is not probable that the new régime had made any very noticeable difference. For though Parkman seems to think that the lower forms of that jurisdiction continued to be exercised in Canada down to the conquest, Carleton asserts that at that time there were hardly three feudal judges in the whole province.¹ And at all times there had been an appeal from the seigneurial to the royal courts in all matters involving more than one-half a crown. With regard to the reception and use by the Canadians of the most important feature of the changed procedure,—the jury,—we have the most conflicting statements; but Burke's opinion² that they had expressed no dislike of the new institution, directly or indirectly, seems thoroughly well-grounded.

As to the general civil service, I need delay here only on those features which would affect the popular estimation of the new régime. The great abuses of the later French administration might be expected to insure a favorable reception even of the very imperfect English one; but nevertheless we meet with considerable complaint. The main cause of this was the fact that the more important positions, being filled by patent from the home government, were practically independent of the provincial administration, and were almost always executed by deputy, the appointees renting them out to the highest bidder. The abuse is succinctly and strongly put by Murray in March, 1765. He writes: "The places of the greatest business in the province have been granted by patent to men of interest in England, who have hired them

¹ The statement is supported by strong contemporary evidence.

² Cavendish, *Report*.

to the best bidder, without considering the talents or circumstances of their representatives. One man (e. g.) who cannot read a word of French, holds five such offices." ¹ And in his defense at the close of his administration he attributes the difficulties of government largely to "the improper choice and the number of the civil officers sent over from England," not one of whom understood French, and the compensation of whom depended entirely on their fees. Power of supervision and suspension was indeed given to the governor, but that this was not sufficient for the remedying of the evil is shown by Carleton's letter to the treasury, January 12, 1775, just at the close of the old order of things. In this he speaks of the misfortunes hitherto attendant on the Provincial government, in that the inferior officers, "proud of the superior weight and influence of the Boards from whence their Commissions issue," and relying for protection on their patrons, "almost lose every idea of that subordination so essential to good order," and are in all measures of the colonial administration "for the most part cold and at best neutral." ² This was written in the belief that the operation of the Quebec Act would remedy the evil; for though no direct mention is made of the matter in that Act or in the instructions that accompanied it, Carleton refers later to the clause in it "which vacated all commissions," as being "in consequence of complaints;" it being thereby intended "to put a stop to all deputations, and to compell all who had offices here to reside and do their duty in person." It is evident that there was here a very serious abuse, capable of paralyzing the best efforts of government.

Inseparably connected with the subject of the patent offices is the matter of fees in general. For as Murray said in 1766 the compensation to the deputies at least depended entirely on what could be wrung from the people and the

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 377.

² Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 122.

government in this form. It is not necessary to suppose that these fees were upon a scale of unheard of extortion; indeed Carleton, their most determined opponent, expressly states that they were not greater than in the other provinces,¹ and Murray declares that he was ordered by his instructions to establish them on that scale.² The hardship consisted in the fact that a system which had been adapted to the ability of the most prosperous of the other provinces was suddenly fastened upon one utterly impoverished, and with a people unused to such payments. The heaviness of the burden is apparent in every direction. May 14, 1767, Carleton writes, "Upon my arrival not a Canadian approached me that did not complain of the number of fees demanded, and particularly of the exorbitant expenses that attended the obtaining any redress by law;" adding that the fees on the registering of land alone (a requirement which ultimately was not enforced, probably from this reason), would have amounted to more than double the current coin of the province. He encloses a copy of the fees as fixed upon by Murray and the Council in 1765;— a document of about twenty closely written pages of large foolscap, the fees ranging all the way from £6 to 3d, and the total number of official acts so to be remunerated being about 350. The tendency of Murray's administration was not to restrain such expenses,³ but Carleton from the first resolutely set his face against them, and one of his earliest acts was to relinquish his own personal fees.⁴ His vigorous statements were not wholly disregarded by the home government, but no decided measures of alleviation were adopted at any time within our present view. The heedless injustice which had ordered the fees to be established on the same scale as in the other colonies seems indeed to have been early repented of, for in the instructions of the

¹ To Shelbourne, May 14, 1767. (Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 173.)

² Can. Arch., *Cal. Hald. Coll.*, p. 92.

³ See *Advertisement of the Council*, Aug. 12, 1765. (Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, p. 812.)

⁴ See *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1890, p. xiii. Also Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, pp. 445-82.

Receiver General early in 1766 it is ordered that the salaries and profits of the inferior officials connected with the Provincial treasury shall be no greater than under the French government. In July, 1768, Hillsborough writes to Carleton in answer to his representations of abuses, that the king is determined to stop the evils connected both with the patent offices and with the fees in general; that the subject has been laid before the Board of Trade, and that in the meantime he is to make temporary regulations for the restraining of fees within bounds.¹ The new instructions of the same year contain, however, only the indefinite direction "to take especial care to regulate all salaries and fees belonging to places, or paid upon emergencies, that they be within the limits of moderation." It is most probably in pursuance of this recommendation that we find an entry in the public accounts for the first half of 1769, of a payment to the Chief Justice of £100 "in lieu of fees, at the rate of £200 per annum." In April, 1770, we hear of a committee which has "the fees of the public officers of this province under consideration;" but nothing seems to have been then effected, and for the remaining four years the matter, with all similar ones, awaited the expected radical change in constitution.

D. Finances.

It remains only to make a brief statement as to the finances of the provincial administration. It is in the consideration of the financial condition of Quebec as contrasted with that of the other Crown Provinces that we have brought home to us most vividly its peculiar and dependent position. In all the others, financial affairs were, through the Assemblies, in the hands of the people, and outside of the customs Great Britain had, normally, neither control nor expense. In Quebec on the other hand not only was the revenue (the word is here a misnomer), almost entirely fur-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, p. 602.

nished and expended¹ by the home government directly, but the probability is that but a very small part of it had any connection with the province as a source. We have seen that the Quebec legislative authority was from the first expressly prohibited from "imposing any duty or tax;" and that the Council was more mindful of this injunction than of other such restraints is shown directly by entries in the Council minutes,² and by the fact that none of the ordinances disregard it. This restriction was to be in force only till an Assembly should form part of the legislature; but that it was intended even then to keep a large measure of control over the finances, and thus to prevent the growth of the obstacles which beset the royal path in the other provinces from this key to the situation having fallen entirely into colonial hands, is probably shown by the directions concerning legislation embodied in the instructions of 1768.³

It is evident that if my argument as to the legislative power subsequent to the Proclamation of 1763 be correct, revenue could be legally drawn from the province during the period only through the customs, or through such other special rights and prerogatives of the Crown as were attached to it under the French régime, and might be contended to have passed over unimpaired with the sovereignty of the country. I say *other* special rights, for it is clear from Lord Mansfield's judgment that the only customs duties that could be collected were those which had been found in force at the conquest,⁴ and it seems equally certain that there is no radical distinction between these and such other dues as lands (e. g.) had hitherto been subject to. All together would seem to have been simply transferred in the same manner as other public property,

¹ At least after 1766, when the Receiver General was appointed.

² Can. Arch., Q. 3, pp. 160-70; Q. 8, p. 126.

³ See below for general discussion, chapter V, section C.

⁴ See resolution of Imperial Privy Council, Nov. 22, 1765, concerning requiring of old duties. (Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 472.) See also below for suits against Murray in 1768.

and it is only on the impossible supposition that all French law and custom had been by the conquest and cession immediately abrogated that the right of the crown to them could be disputed. But these principles seem not to have been clear to the authorities at the time. Action in regard to the old land dues was no doubt hindered further by the confusion and uncertainty that prevailed as to the laws in general, and it seems certain that no revenue was derived from this source at any part of the period. The new rents from soccage lands, and the profits from the judiciary, we may also regard as not worth consideration. The fur trade monopoly in the northeast had been a considerable source of profit to the French government, and had passed unquestioned to the English; but it was leased through the whole of this period for £400 per annum.

The only remaining source of revenue was the customs, and it is to this quarter that we must look for any appreciable lightening of the burden of the English taxpayer. Unfortunately, though the references to duties are frequent, and though they received the careful attention of government from the first, we have no conclusive reports as to the amounts actually collected. On the conquest duties had been imposed by the commanding officer and levied until the establishment of the civil government; the rates required being slightly in excess of the old French ones, and the whole amount thus collected being stated as £11,000 sterling. In 1768 actions for recovery were brought against the governor in the British Court of Common Pleas, on the ground that the military government had no authority to impose duties; but on it being shown that these were substantially the same as those fixed by the French, the plaintiffs agreed to accept a verdict only for the excess. In accordance with this verdict we meet with various entries in the Quebec Council minutes in 1770 of orders for repayments of this excess to various other complainants, the sum repaid amounting in all to £2,000. So that it re-

sults that the duties levied during the first four years of the occupation (when commerce was of course very much depressed), would yield about £2,000 per annum. This amount we should expect to be largely increased during the later years; but there is no probability that anything was collected under the civil government.¹ A Provincial proclamation of May, 1765, seems to be intended to apply the Imperial customs Act of the previous year; but as more than a month later Murray reports that he is and will be "entirely at a loss how to carry on the business of government without money,"² it seems to have effected no change in the situation. In July of the same year the home government took the finances of the province more directly under control by the appointment of a receiver-general, who was to be independent of the provincial administration, was to receive all moneys and warrant all expenditures, and was to report directly to the Treasury. His instructions³ direct him to collect the old French duties, and in doing so, "to strictly conform himself to the ancient customs and usages of the said country before it was conquered by His Majesty." Of the receipts the surplus, after "defraying the expenses of civil officers and contingencies of government in the Province," was to be remitted home. The only result apparently of the new official's efforts were the ineffectual actions against the English traders which have been discussed above.⁴

From this consideration of the various possible sources of provincial revenue, we may conclude that the amount derived therefrom was so slight as to make very little difference to the Imperial treasury. As to the total expenses

¹ Murray writes to the Board of Trade, March 3, 1765, that he has long expected in vain "the decision of the rum duties," and does not know "how government is to be carried on here without a shilling. I am little solicitous about my own salary, the amount of which is still unknown to me, but the indigence of the judge and other officers sent from England is equally alarming and hurtful to the public." (Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 377.)

² Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 424.

³ See Masères, *Commissions*, pp. 156-9.

⁴ Pp. 313-16.

of the civil establishment we have no definite statements, but from various references it may be concluded that they were about the same as under the last years of the French régime.¹ Masères states that the amount drawn yearly on this account from the Imperial treasury was about £10,000. In the "Returns on Public Income and Expenditure," (printed for House of Commons, 1869), Quebec is specially mentioned only for the year 1768, when an item of £6,722 is set down for its civil establishment. The "Annual Register" and "Parliamentary History," which apparently aim to give detailed financial statements from year to year, do not afford any further light, no direct mention being made of Quebec, although there are given regularly the estimates for the civil establishment, not only of Nova Scotia and Georgia, but also of East and West Florida, which had been granted civil constitutions at the same time and in the same manner as Quebec. The only explanation seems to be that (in accordance with the general neglect and mismanagement of Canadian affairs), owing to the prominence of the military service in Quebec, the accounts were included under military heads. The civil list established in 1775 (see Carleton's instructions), amounted to about £18,000, and of this about £8,000 can be directly attributed to additional expenses caused by the enlarged sphere of government under the Quebec Act. This then brings us back to Masères' estimate.

¹ Murray states (*Report, 1762*), that in 1757 the total civil expenses of the French administration amounted to £11,158. The revenue of the same year (apparently drawn mainly from the fur trade), was £13,961.

CHAPTER IV.

THE SPIRIT AND DEVELOPMENT OF ADMINISTRATION.

In the previous chapter I have attempted a description of the surface conditions of government in the Province of Quebec throughout our period,—such a description as might have been given by a contemporary, especially a contemporary official. My object in the present chapter is to go behind the scenes, and examine the animating spirit under the official forms, with special reference to development in the bases of action. In so doing regard will be had mainly and constantly to the Quebec Act as the centre of the inquiry, with the purpose of seeing what light, if any, may thus be thrown on its genesis and intent.

A. The Colonial Governors.

My investigation here has therefore to do almost entirely with the Home or Imperial Administration. But, as the chief of the influences brought to bear on that authority, it will be necessary first to consider the general spirit and policy of the heads of the colonial government.¹ It is evident that a large discretion was necessarily always left to the Provincial Governor; but the normal limits of this discretion were at this time in the case of Quebec much extended from the fact that during the early part of the period the home government had no decided or consistent

These were, (a) *Gen. James Murray* (1725?—1794), younger son of a Scotch peer. Brigadier with Wolfe at capture of Quebec and left in charge of the conquered province during the Military Period, he was Governor-in-Chief from Aug. 10, 1764, to Oct. 26, 1768, but left the country finally in June, 1766.

(b) *Col. Guy Carleton* (1724-1808), of an Irish family, was at the siege of Louisbourg and Quebec, and came to the province as Lieutenant-Governor, September, 1768. He held that position until October, 1768, when he became governor-in-chief, so continuing till June, 1778, though absent from the province August 1st, 1770-September 18, 1774. Made Baron Dorchester and reappointed to Canadian Government, 1786.

policy, and that in the latter part the expectation of a speedy general constitutional settlement joined with other factors in causing a steady neglect of the immediate affairs of the province. It is therefore desirable to see in what ways and to what extent the actions of the Home Administration were based on the representations of the provincial authorities.

Gen. James Murray had been connected with Canada from the first hour of English rule there, and when put at the head of the new civil government had had almost five years' intimate knowledge of the country. If personal characteristics had prevented his fully profiting from his experience, there can be no doubt of his integrity, and of his strong desire to see justice done and the best interests of the country advanced. As has been shown above both he and the other military commanders seem from the first to have made every effort, consistently with the safety of the new possession, to reconcile the Canadians to the new rule. These same motives were no doubt as strongly present during his control of the civil government. That his success was not commensurate with his efforts, and that the two years of his civil administration were a period of constant turmoil, cannot, however, be denied; nor yet that the explanation must be largely found in his personal character, and in a want of tact and discernment which would have insured failure in a much less difficult situation. He was hasty in judgment and violent in temper, and his military training had prejudiced him in favour of the old Canadian military aristocracy, which he credited with more influence over the people than it had for a long time possessed. The same cause blinded him to the real character and importance of the new English-speaking commercial element. A light is thrown on Murray's character by some observations in his own defence just before the installment of civil government.¹ After refer-

¹ To Board of Trade, April 24, 1764. (Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 107.)

ring to the difficulties that have attended the military rule owing to the character of the various sections of the population, and of the caution he has exercised in enforcing martial law, "knowing how jealous the people of England are of the military arm, upon all occasions, and how eagerly they would have laid hold of the least shadow of blame," he proceeds to speak of his mortification in being "too often obliged to substitute reprimands from my own mouth in place of fines and prisons, choosing to risk my own popularity rather than give a handle to the factious. Hence, I find I have been represented in England a man of a most violent, ungovernable temper." Unfortunately for the entire validity of this ingenuous defense, we find that the violent manifestations of temper continued under the civil government; and we cannot but conclude that there was too much ground for the complaint made in the English petitions in 1765 of his "rage and rudeness of language and demeanour."¹ In general, however, we find his attitude towards the French Canadians to be one of forbearance and magnanimity,² and the seigneurs came to look upon him as their special protector;³ but that even they were not always safe from his irritability may be seen in the memorial of the Chevalier de Lery.⁴ It must indeed be conceded that few positions could have been more trying than Murray's at this time.⁵ He was left without revenue or clear instructions to carry on government over a people who, rightly or wrongly, he thought had conceived a slighting idea of his position from the fact that he had been deprived of all military command in the province; feeling himself moreover under compulsion to introduce an order of things which he considered in the highest degree injurious and unjust. But making all allowances for his difficulties, we

¹ *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 15.

² See letter to Justices of Montreal, Oct. 9, 1765. (*Can. Arch.*, Q. 3, p. 90.)

³ *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 9.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 31.

⁵ See his defense, August 20th, 1766. (*Can. Arch.*, B. 8, p. 1.)

must conclude that he was peculiarly ill-fitted to cope with them, and that his career in Canada cannot be considered to have been marked by much discernment or administrative ability.

Murray's own judgment and inclination were from the first strongly opposed to any radical changes in the civil law and constitution of the province. His views on this matter were probably closely connected with his strongly expressed opinion that the civil governor in Quebec ought also to have the chief military command. One of his first enactments was the Judiciary Ordinance of September 17, 1764, which, though evidently intended to give effect to the supposed Imperial policy of introducing the general body of the English law, was thought by the English extremists of the time to have given undue privileges to the French Canadian Catholics. In writing home in defense of this measure¹ Murray strongly recommends granting the Canadians "a few privileges which the laws of England deny the Roman Catholics at home." In the various and complicated disputes with the military authorities which soon follow, the governor appears in a comparatively favourable light as the upholder of civil law and the protector of the people against the military; though it is impossible to keep from feeling that his attitude was to some extent influenced by the strained nature of the personal relations then existing between himself and the military officers. Interesting hints as to his policy can be got from his defense against some anonymous charges made in 1765 or thereabouts, chiefly with reference to the military government. In this he says that it was a maxim of his "to shun addresses from the traders," and to consult the men of property in the colony (by whom he means the seigneurs,—the possessors of landed property), and that he had displeased the Protestants in trying to conciliate the Canadians to British rule. That his partiality for the noblesse

¹ Oct. 29, 1764. *Can. Arch.*, Q. 2, p. 233.

went beyond the limits of justice and good government may be conjectured from the reference in their memorial in his defense to "the politeness and deference of this governor for persons of good birth,"¹ and from his own acknowledgment that he did "recommend to the magistrates at Montreal not to billet any of the soldiers upon the noblesse, unless in cases of the utmost necessity,"—a tenderness which he adds they had a right to expect from the regard paid to people of family in all countries. And he somewhat naively inquires, "Can there be a greater instance of the turbulent, levelling spirit of my accusers than this very complaint?"

Though recalled in apparent disgrace² Murray succeeded in vindicating himself from all the charges brought against him, and retained the office for two years longer. His recollections of his Canadian stay may be seen by a reference in a letter to Haldimand from one of the East Indian ports in 1775, in which he speaks of spending his life tranquilly now, differently from what he did in Canada.³

Colonel Guy Carleton had also had early experience in Canada, but it does not appear to have afforded him much idea of the real state of the country. He and Murray were of the same profession; and the integrity and earnest endeavour after good government which characterized the former can even more unhesitatingly be ascribed to the latter. To him also must be conceded a larger share of statesmanlike qualities than is exhibited by any other official in the early history of the country. Carleton was indeed, like Murray, first a military man, and his most striking services to Canada were perhaps military ones; but he

¹ *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 19.

² See concerning his reception, *Can. Arch.*, B. 68, p. 157. He was recalled on the recommendation of the Board of Trade on account, as expressly stated, of the complaints of the merchants trading to and in the colony. The severe strictures of Hillsborough (quoted below. See also above, p. 344) may perhaps be explained by the fact that Hillsborough had been president of the Board when the Proclamation which he accused Murray of grossly misinterpreting had been drawn.

⁴ *Can. Arch.*, B. 6, p. 278.

was also a man of considerable civil experience, of wide statesmanlike views,¹ and of no small amount of discernment with regard to both men and events. He was for twenty years, intermittently, the chief figure in Canadian life; and his work here is consequently the main feature of what biographers agree in considering a somewhat distinguished career.

Personally he was a man of infinitely more dignity than Murray,—one who often left with his contemporaries the impression of a somewhat reserved and frigid nature. His self-control may be illustrated by the testimony of an eye witness to one of the most trying events of his life—the abandoning of Montreal to the Americans in 1776.² His attitude toward the revolution was a most unbending one, and is clearly shown in a letter to Dartmouth during the siege of Montreal,³ in which he refers to the threatening communication of Montgomery in regard to alleged ill-treatment of American prisoners, and adds, "I shall treat all their threats with a silent contempt, and in this persevere, were I certain of falling into their hands the following week, not thinking myself at liberty to treat otherwise those who are traitors to the King, without His Majesty's express commands." Yet after the remnant of the American force had retreated from the walls of Quebec in the spring of 1776, leaving behind them many sick and wounded ("dispersed in the adjacent woods and parishes"), we find him issuing a proclamation to the local officials to make diligent search for such persons and to afford them all possible relief, reassuring them by the promise that as soon as their health should be restored they would

¹ For some acute general remarks on the tendencies of American government, see letter to Shelbourne, Jan. 20, 1768. (Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 370.)

² Lt. Gov. Hamilton to Dartmouth, Aug. 29, 1776. (Can. Arch., Q. 12, p. 212.) Has been "exceedingly struck by the unmoved temper and firmness of the general. Though deserted by the most ungrateful race under the sun, though a general without troops, and at the eve of quitting Montreal to give entrance to lawless rebels his mind appeared unshaken . . . though undoubtedly wrung to the soul."

³ Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 267. (Oct. 28, 1775.)

be set at liberty.¹ In October, 1776, writing to Burgoyne in reference to a recent victory over the rebels, he says that inasmuch as it is over fellow subjects it is no ground for rejoicing. The attitude of Carleton in regard to Burgoyne's expedition throws further honorable light on his character. For though deeply mortified by the slight to himself in the transfer of the command on this occasion to Burgoyne, we have the latter's most emphatic testimony to his zealous and strenuous efforts to make the expedition a success.² The traits of Carleton's character which seem to have made most impression upon those who had to do with him in Canada were his justice and impartiality, testimony to these recurring from all quarters. Of a more even and balanced nature than Murray he made neither such bitter enemies nor such warm friends.

Carleton had the great advantage over Murray, so far as his relations with the home government were concerned, of coming to his government more fully and directly informed as to the trend of Imperial views in regard to Canada. The Board of Trade when advising Murray's recall had at length taken the state of the province into consideration, and had drawn up a paper of recommendations with which Carleton was of course conversant. Though nominally Murray's subordinate for the first two years, there was no official relation between the two, and apparently a strained personal one,—the natural consequence of the fact that Carleton really displaced Murray and was supposed to represent an opposite policy. The former has sometimes the air of censuring the conduct of his predecessor, and his first steps on arriving in the province were considered by some to have been dictated by hostility to Murray's friends in the Council. But however this may have been we find that Carleton did not escape the most

¹ A promise that was fulfilled, over 1,200 being sent home on parole. See Carleton to Germaine, Aug. 10, 1776. (Can. Arch., Q. 12, p. 135.) For the strongly favorable impression made on these troops by Carleton see *Journals* of the invaders.

² Burgoyne to Germaine, May 14, 1777. (Can. Arch., Q. 13, p. 107.)

disastrous part of his predecessor's policy,— the partiality for and dependence upon the noblesse. The men, from birth, character, and training, were essentially imbued with the same prejudices and ideas of government, and Carleton was moreover in a degree bound to even greater consideration of the leading French families, from the fact that he was likely to be entrusted with the carrying out of the policy of preserving the institutions of which they were supposed to be the main support. This supposition he brought with him from England, and I have already frequently referred to the fundamental error (as to the relations between noblesse and people), involved in it. It was an error to which can be traced the main defects and failures of his policy and of its outcome, the Quebec Act. I have above credited Carleton with considerable penetration and judicial ability in regard to men and events; but in this matter his prejudices seem to have lulled his judgment to sleep, and he remained contented with an estimate of the people derived from the small and unprogressive body which was nearest him, and which was now every day becoming more and more detached from the real life of the country. He was, moreover, scarcely more just to the English element or more alive to its growing influence over the Canadians than was Murray. His personal stiffness and aristocratic bearing doubtless stood constantly in his way; and as late as 1788, at the beginning of his second term of office, Mabane, one of the oldest and most experienced of the ex-councillors, writes concerning Carleton's ignorance of men and things in the province, his partiality and his unpopularity.¹ Hence perhaps it may well be doubted whether, though of much broader views than Murray and infinitely superior to him as an administrator, he was really very much better qualified for this particular period of government. His efforts were fatally marred by his misconceptions of the situation.

¹ Can. Arch., B. 77. Mabane, it should be said, had had personal difficulties with Carleton in the early days of the governorship.

Having, like Murray, from the first taken the Canadian noblesse under his protection, one of Carleton's first acts was to follow the example of the French government in providing for them to some extent from the public purse. He lost no time, moreover, in urging on the home government the advisability as a matter of policy of utilizing the services of the class in all departments of the public employ. The mistake as to their influence over the people he seems to have laboured under during the whole period, and it explains sufficiently, (without charging him with undue class or professional prejudice), the deference he always paid to their views and wishes. The first striking letter of Carleton on general policy that we meet with, is that of November 25, 1767,¹ in answer apparently to information as to a late important action of the Privy Council. In this he starts by saying that he takes it for granted "that the natural rights of men,² the British interests on this continent and the securing the King's dominion over this province must ever be the principal points in view in forming its civil constitution and body of laws;" proceeds to advise the attaching of the seigneurs to British interests, (as above), and finally, after a discussion of military requirements, expresses the opinion that all governmental steps should proceed on the assumption that the present predominance of the French-speaking population will not diminish, but increase and strengthen daily; so that, "barring a catastrophe shocking to think of, this country must to the end of time be peopled by the Canadian race," and any new stock transplanted will be sure to be "totally hid and imperceptible among them." Specific recommendations as to laws he does not enter into, but it is easy to see whither his premises will lead him. Hence we are not surprised to find him a month later recommending in the most definite and decided manner the almost entire reten-

¹ *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 41.

² The use of this phrase here is rather suggestive.

tion of French civil law and custom. In this very important letter (to Shelbourne, December 24, 1767,)¹ he reminds the minister that the Canadians "are not a migration of Britons, who brought with them the laws of England, but a populous and long-established colony," with its own laws and customs, forced to a conditional capitulation. "All this arrangement in one hour we overturned by the Ordinance of the 17th September, 1764, and laws ill-adapted to the genius of the Canadians, to the situation of the province, and to the interests of Great Britain, unknown and unpublished, were introduced in their stead; a sort of severity if I remember right, never before practiced by any conqueror even where the people without capitulation submitted to his will and discretion." Then, after implying that the above Ordinance is both contrary to the terms of the capitulation and beyond the provincial legislative power, and declaring that it "cannot long remain in force without a general confusion and discontent," he proceeds to advise its repeal and the gradual reinstating of the old Canadian laws almost in their entirety. In accordance with this advice he transmits a draft of an ordinance for doing this in regard to landed property. We see, therefore, that Carleton's mind was fully made up on this subject more than six years before the Quebec Act. His views seem if anything to have become only more firmly fixed during the following years. He frequently re-urges the attaching of the noblesse by employment or by other attentions, his confidence as to their influence over the people apparently remaining undisturbed. But the fact that he was absent from the province for the last four years of the period is to be especially noted; for these years were the most important part of it, being those in which political education would, (through the unavoidable influence of the events in the other colonies), be proceeding at the most rapid rate.

The conceptions and misconceptions of Carleton I have

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 316.

considered especially noteworthy on account of the dependence the home administrations placed on him, and his great influence in the moulding of the Quebec Act. We have seen that he had the advantage of Murray in coming to the government *en rapport* with the home administration; and so far as appears this perfect agreement and confidence was maintained down till the last year of his rule (when personal difficulties arose between himself and the Secretary of State, Lord Germaine). The following of the course of events leaves with us the conviction that the colonial office depended on Carleton for practically all its instruction on Canadian matters, and that all its steps were guided by his recommendations. There have been more successful officials in English colonial history, but never one more thoroughly trusted. His military services in 1775 were confounded with his civil ones apparently, and he retired from Canada with the reputation of a master in all that concerned it. Accordingly we find that when in 1786 its affairs seemed to be again approaching a crisis which could not be neglected, he was sent out, invested with the new dignity of a peerage, to steer the ship of state through the troubled waters of another change of constitution.

B. The Imperial Office.

With regard to Imperial policy I shall first notice for a moment the general attitude of the successive home executives toward the political parties (or more accurately, the different races), in the province. This is an enquiry that will be resumed later in the attempt to determine how far the Quebec Act was in accordance with previous measures, and how far dictated by the supposed emergencies connected with the threatening stand of the other colonies. Just now I confine myself to general expressions of policy, contained in regular and confidential communications with the provincial administration; communications which as of a strictly private nature and made to the officials in the

full confidence of the home government, I can find no reason for taking at anything but their face value. At the outset it may be said that in small matters as in great the correspondence is of a nature to impress us strongly with the justice and humanity, if not with the far-sightedness, of the views entertained and advocated by one and all of the various secretaries in charge of the colonial department. The utmost attention is given to every symptom of discontent on the part of the people and the attachment of them by conciliatory and just treatment is constantly urged. Notwithstanding the energy of the English-speaking element in the colony in making themselves heard both there and at home, the authorities seem never to have lost sight of the fact that Canada was French and likely to remain French.¹ Early in the period the minister writes that dutiful behaviour will secure the French Canadians all the benefits of British government; and that these were not empty words is shewn by the instructions sent out in regard to the judiciary ordinance of September 17, 1764, as we gather them from the wording of the amending ordinance of July 1st, 1766.² The preamble of the latter states that his Majesty has signified by an additional instruction "that the welfare and happiness of his loving subjects in this province do require that the said ordinance should be altered and amended in several provisions of it which tend to restrain his Canadian subjects in the privileges they are entitled to enjoy in common with his natural-born subjects;" and it is accordingly enacted that Canadians shall be admitted equally with British-born on all juries and to the legal profession. In the following year the state of the provincial judiciary was taken up more seriously, and we get very important indications of the way in which the matter was viewed at

¹ See Carleton to Shelborne, Nov. 25, 1767, *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 42; also Cramahé to Dartmouth, December, 1773. (*Can. Arch.*, Q. 10, p. 22.) See also debate in Commons on Quebec Act, 1774, for position taken by both government and opposition that the French Canadians must be the first consideration.

² For Ordinances see *Can. Arch.*, Q. 5.

home, from the minutes of the Privy Council meeting of August 28, 1767.¹ It was resolved that the government officials in the province should be instructed to report on the existing defects, and "whether the Canadians in particular are, or think themselves aggrieved according to the present administration of justice, wherein and in what respect, together with their opinions of any alterations, additions, or amendments that they can propose for the general benefit of the said province." The proceedings here inaugurated were interrupted and delayed by ministerial changes, but the views of policy on which they were founded evidently remained the same. In the spring of the following year, Shelbourne was replaced in the secretaryship by Hillsborough, who retained it up till the eve of the Quebec Act. His first letter to Quebec, dated March 6th, 1768, conveys to Carleton, (who had been strongly advocating the retention of the French laws and customs), His Majesty's approval "of the humanity and tenderness you have shewn with regard to the peculiar circumstances and situation of His Majesty's new subjects;" and recommends him to take measures to reconcile the new subjects to unavoidable delays in regard to a general settlement.² In the following July he writes in the same strain, fully approving of all the governor's recommendations (in regard to re-establishment of French law), and regretting the unavoidable delay in the giving them force.³ January 4, 1769,⁴ he agrees with Carleton's recommendation of the employing in the public service of the French Canadians, but expresses the fear that popular prejudices at home might make it difficult to follow as regarded the military profession; in the following July⁵ he says that there can be no doubt of the justice and propriety of admitting Canadians to the Council. Jan-

¹ See below, chapter V for full report. (Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 327.)

² Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 344.

³ *Ibid.*, Q. 5-2, p. 602.

⁴ *Ibid.*, Q. 6, p. 3.

⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 67.

uary 11, 1772,¹ he transmits to Cramahé the new instructions in regard to the granting of lands, which he hopes will "convince His Majesty's new subjects of the King's gracious intention to adopt and preserve, in every case where it can be legally done, the customs and usages that subsisted in the colony before the reduction of it, and which His Majesty observes they are very desirous to retain." This is more than two years before the Quebec Act.

The attitude of the Imperial administrations toward the new English-speaking element may be conjectured from the opinion generally entertained at home, that the main part of this was of American origin, and was inspired by the same ideas and aims as the turbulent populace in the other provinces. This idea, as is shown above, was probably mainly due to the intemperate attitude of the early spokesmen of the party, and was evidently fostered both by Murray and Carleton. The attitude of the Grand Jury in 1764² was of course severely condemned at home, the secretary transmitting His Majesty's highest disapprobation of their "assuming to themselves authority similar to that of a House of Representatives against the orders and regulations of His Majesty's government established there."³ There are indications that possibly show that at one time there was no desire on the part of the home government for any considerable increase in the number and influence of the old subjects in the province, and we at least have expressions which prove that none such was expected. The change in the land regulations was made to accommodate the French, and apparently without any idea that it would be welcome to the English settler. But yet Hillsborough writes, April 18, 1772, in tones of satisfaction at the apparent betaking of the English to the cultivation of the land.⁴

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 97.

² See above, pp. 311-13.

³ Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 464.

⁴ Ibid., Q. 8, p. 124.

In regard to the movement in 1773 for an assembly the provincial government tried to adopt an amicable and neutral course in order to have the representations of the old subjects forwarded in a regular manner (i. e., through the authorities; which, however, seems not to have been done). Dartmouth writes, April 6th, 1774, approving of this course and stating his conviction "that the proposition has been stirred up to answer factious views; and the proceedings of the committee seem to have had no other object than to embarrass the measures now under consideration."¹ December 10th, 1774, he expresses the hope that the full operation of the Quebec Act, especially in regard to "the plan of judicature" intended, may satisfy all classes of subjects, and recommends to the governor to point out to the British "the attention that has been shown to their interests not only in the adopting of the English laws as far as was consistent with what was due to the just claims and moderate wishes of the Canadians, but in the opening to the British merchant by the extension of the province so many new channels of important commerce."²

On the whole we may sum up the policy of the government, Provincial and Imperial, towards the old subjects in the words of Haldimand, who writes in October, 1779, that he and the Council agree in considering the Canadians the people of the country, to the 60,000 of whom regard was to be paid, rather than to the 2,000 others.³ And the expressions of this disregard of the English-speaking element were the less unrestrained through the prejudices established mainly by the injurious misrepresentations of the Provincial officials.

In noting the Imperial policy in some of its special applications to Provincial affairs I shall leave out of sight for the moment those more important matters which when settled finally by the Quebec Act, became the centre of the

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 10, p. 42.

² Ibid., p. 125.

³ Ibid., B. 54, p. 354.

contention that raged round that measure. These had reference to the boundaries of the province, to the position and possessions of the Roman Catholic Church within it, to the Provincial legislature, and to the civil law; and it appears better to disregard the chronological order to some degree in their case, so that the consideration of them may be brought as a part of the Quebec Act generally. Here, therefore, I have reference to such other parts of the general course of the home administration as throw light upon general policy. And the first and chief impression that is made upon us by the examination of these, in connection with the other less important parts of the progress of events, is that ignorance, neglect, and inconsistency were the prevailing conditions in the colonial office throughout as regarded the province of Quebec. This I have already reverted to; in connection with the Quebec Act it will be necessary to make some short inquiry into the causes of it.

The general character of what may be called constitutional documents calls first for notice. The main early ones have been already noticed in other connections;¹ they certainly give us no reason to suppose that the long line of colonial precedent established in the English administrative mind was departed from in the case of Canada, except in so far as would seem unavoidable in providing for security and order amongst a people totally ignorant of British methods of government and incapacitated by British law from participation in them. We have seen indeed that even the difficulties which thus lay on the surface and which might be expected to attract the notice of the most incapable and harrassed of ministers, *do* seem in these first measures to have been entirely disregarded; for the Proclamation of 1763, which unmistakably contemplates the early establishment of an assembly, seems to have been drawn up in utter ignorance or disregard of the peculiar conditions of the countries to which it gave a constitution. Not only does it show no special mark of regard for the

¹ See especially chapter III, section A.

original inhabitants of these new acquisitions, but it seems oblivious to their existence. So far as it goes, these acquisitions are considered, not as old and settled colonies of another race, but as totally unoccupied regions to which it was the duty of His Majesty's government to draw the speedy attention of His Majesty's loyal emigrants. The preamble to the proclamation states the ground of the measures therein taken to be the desire "that all our loving subjects as well of our Kingdoms as of our colonies in America, may avail themselves with all convenient speed of the great benefits and advantages which must accrue therefrom to their commerce, manufactures, and navigation," and the conviction that these measures "will greatly contribute to the speedy settling our said new governments;" it being further promised that, (*italics are mine*), "all persons *inhabiting in* or resorting to our said *colonies* may confide in our Royal protection for the enjoyment of the benefit of the laws of our realm of England,"— a promise made apparently without a suspicion that there could be any parties concerned who were not pining after the "enjoyment" in question. In view of this document we have little right to look for any great care or discrimination in the applying to the new government of the *min* governmental instruments. Nor on the other hand do we discover any marks of influence exerted upon the Imperial administration by the contemporary difficulties which were attending government under similar instruments in the old colonies. The conviction is forced upon us as we study the history of the first few years (down say till 1768), that the various executives must have been too busy with other matters to have had time to do more with regard to Canada than order the making out for it of new copies of the established forms.

The commission to Gov. Murray under which civil government was established in Canada, August 10th, 1764, is dated November 21, 1763, or about six weeks after the

Proclamation above referred to. What relation it bears to the usual form of the document will best be discovered by direct comparison; and I have selected for this purpose the almost contemporary commissions to Governor Cornwallis of Nova Scotia in 1749, and to Sir Danvers Osborn of New York in 1755.¹ Nova Scotia had, it will be remembered, been ceded to Britain by the Treaty of Utrecht in 1713, and the commission in question was issued in connection with an attempt to hasten British settlement in the country and to bring the civil government more fully into accord with those of the older colonies. I have already quoted from it above in the argument as to the unconstitutionality of government in Quebec without an assembly,² showing that the commissions in that regard (and in regard to the nature of the laws to be passed), were identical. The most of the remainder is also practically identical, the only points of difference being as to land grants and the construction of the Council. In regard to lands the conditions are left to the discretion of Governor Cornwallis, acting with advice of the Council, while Governor Murray is enjoined to follow in such grants the annexed royal instructions. In regard to the control of the governor over the Council and general administration, Cornwallis is given full power of appointment and suspension, while nothing is said whatever on the subject in Murray's commission, the matter being left to his instructions, by which he is given practically the same power. On the whole we may conclude, therefore, that the divergences between these two commissions are not sufficient to weaken what I have said above; the difference in regard to land grants being easily explained by the necessity, (as dwelt upon in the Proclamation of 1763), of special care in regard to Quebec in this direction, owing to the danger of alienating the

¹ For first see Houston, *Can. Const. Doc.*, p. 9; for second, Masères, *Commissions*. All these commissions are signed in the same way and by the same person.

² See pp. 329-30.

Indians and of injuring the fur trade. No hint is given of any alertness on the part of the English government in regard to the internal conditions of Canada, or of any idea of treating it differently from the other English colonies. But as it may perhaps be contended that Nova Scotia and Quebec were in somewhat the same condition owing to the presence in both of a large body of long-settled French, I will continue the comparison further, and will take up what seems to be a typical commission in the older colonies, viz., that granted to Sir Danvers Osborn, 1754, as governor of New York. We find that this commission is practically identical with that of Governor Cornwallis six years earlier; hence differing from Murray's only in the insertion of the provisions in regard to the Council (relegated to Murray's instructions), and in regard to land grants, where the same motive for divergence may be supposed to exist as in the other case.

To sum up, the commission to Murray in 1765 recognizes the peculiar position of Canada to the extent indicated by the following divergences from previous forms:

a. *In regard to the construction of the Assembly.* This in the earlier commissions is expressly directed to conform to the usages already prevalent in the colonies, but in Murray's is left to his discretion or to future instructions.

b. *In regard to the Governor's control over the Council.* This is provided for in the earlier cases by the commission, while in the case of Canada it is relegated to the instructions. The significance, (if there be any), would seem to be that Canada was intended to remain for the time more directly under the control and development of the English executive, a new instruction being a more easily wielded instrument than a new commission.

c. *In regard to Land Grants.* Here the divergence was manifestly suggested by features which were supposed not to exist to any extent worth considering in the case of the other provinces. In the case of Quebec the arrangement

was made entirely provisional, for an elaborate plan in regard to Indian government and land grants which might affect the Indians, was intended at the time, and was actually sent out with the instructions under the Quebec Act.

These divergences are by no means unimportant, but it will be readily conceded that, for the most part merely negative, they would seem entirely inadequate, and by no means in proportion to the changed conditions. They are an indication not of settled policy, but of deferred action. Hence I cannot agree with Masères, who points to the similarity of the commissions to Sir Danvers Osborn and to Murray as *in itself* proving that it had been from the first His Majesty's intention to introduce English laws and methods of government into Quebec, and thus to assimilate it to the other colonies in North America. The only conclusion we have a right to draw in connection with other incomplete and contradictory testimony, is that the attitude of the home government toward Canada at the beginning of the civil rule was a wholly uninformed and undecided one, and that the measures taken then were wholly provisional.

No noteworthy changes are found in either of Carleton's commissions (1766 and 1768); but this is not the case with his instructions. By these the relation between the governor and the Council continued to be (theoretically) regulated; and we find that, instead of being left to nominate his own Council subject to Imperial ratification, as had been the case with Murray and Cornwallis, the names of the councilors are inserted in the new instructions of 1768. Moreover, the home administration now expressly reserves to itself the making of additions, the governor being given power only of temporary appointment in emergency. In regard to general civil service appointments Carleton's power seems further restricted;¹ while as to suspension or

¹ It is worthy of notice that there is to be found in these instructions and commissions a steady decrease of the appointing power of the colonial governor. While Gov. Corn-

removal, though the matter is vaguely worded, he is in all cases obliged to immediately submit the matter to the judgment of the home Administration. These changes are to be considered in connection with the restoration to Carleton, (practically in 1766, and formally in 1771), of that supreme military authority which had been exercised by the governor during the military period, and which I have referred to above as a very material part of the approximation of the position of the English executive to that of the French. The restriction of the governor's civil power may perhaps be considered in the same light. This process of check upon the governor will be seen more plainly in the Quebec Act and its development; it is sufficient now to have drawn attention to what, if we are to credit the Imperial course in these early years with any definite intentions, may reasonably be considered an entering upon the path of later development. The changes in question can

wallis in 1749 is given full power of appointment not only in regard to councillors, but also for "all such other officers and ministers as you shall judge proper and necessary," the powers given to Osborn in New York (1755) and Murray in Quebec (1764), though apparently as full with regard to the Council and to ecclesiastical officers, are less as to the inferior officials. And as between them, we may perhaps see a first stage of restriction in the fact that the whole matter of the Council was relegated to Murray's instructions, and that in these two or three officers are named as *ex-officio* members of it. The next stage is as noted above, the case of Carleton (1768) when, beside the great restriction concerning the Council, it is evident that the main posts in the civil service have become patent offices in regard to which the governor has at most only temporary and provisional powers. Of much interest in this connection are some remarks by Gov. Pownall in the debate on the bill for regulating the government of Massachusetts Bay, 1774. (Parl. Hist., XVII, 1232-6.) He states that even in Massachusetts Bay, where by the charter "the governor is obliged to take with him not simply the advice, but the consent of the Council in the nomination of judges and other civil officers," the ultimate source of authority for all officers is the governor's commission; while "in those governments which are established by the King's patent commissions the whole act of appointment is in the governor. . . . He is the sole efficient; he may advise with the Council, but he is not bound to take their consent; . . . he is not incompetent to the act without their consent. His commission gives him full power to act, . . . ; if he acts without the advice of his Council, he does indeed break through his instructions and may incur His Majesty's displeasure; but yet the appointment is good to all intents and purposes. The first is the act of legal power derived from the commission; the second is a matter prudential with which the mode of the act is properly and wisely accompanied." I am not concerned now with the precise constitutional value of these statements; for my present inquiry is into Imperial *policy*—manifestly to be gathered as well from an instruction as from a commission.

hardly be explained indeed in any other way. Nor does the explanation clash with my general conclusion as to Imperial neglect and inconsistency; such instances of intermittent activity, unassociated with any harmonizing of the various conflicting elements, tend as yet only to make confusion more confounded.

We are not aided very much out of the maze by an examination of the few instances of special interposition on the part of the Imperial government in the conduct of affairs in the Province. These interferences, generally in the nature of disapproval or prohibition, are such as either mark the appearance in the colonial office of new brooms, (and the broom was very frequently changed),¹ or are

¹ It seems desirable to introduce here a statement (necessarily incomplete) as to the official relations of the Home and Provincial authorities. These we find to be somewhat complicated, the colonial governor being at all times obliged to keep up two and frequently three different lines of communication,—with the Secretary of State, the Board of Trade, and the Treasury. The first was the most regular and imperative channel, though partly so it would appear, only because a single and active official, not a Board, had to be dealt with; and on this correspondence, which it is safe to assume omits nothing of importance, this study is mainly based. Readers of Bancroft, however, know that the Board of Trade at this period was no effete institution, but that it had for some time been exerting itself in colonial affairs with unusual activity, and had drawn within its reach all departments of colonial business. (See Fitzmaurice, *Shelbourne*, I, 240-3.) It was apparently in full vigor at the opening of our period, (see its share in regard to the Proclamation of 1763), as Murray shortly discovered; for he writes privately to Halifax, Oct. 29, 1764, with reference to a severe check he had received from the Board for not communicating to it what he had written to the secretary. Murray's instructions of 1763 had rather obscurely directed him "upon all occasions to send to the Board only, a particular account of all your proceedings;" though in any matter requiring the King's immediate direction, he was to correspond with the Secretary of State only: But this vigor of the former seems to have suddenly and mysteriously declined, for Feb. 3, 1766, (*Can. Arch.*, Q. 3, p. 122), Murray (who had since been careful to keep it fully supplied with information), complains of "the total silence to every remonstrance, reasoning and report, which hitherto I have had the honour to make to your Board, (from which I have had no letter that was not circular since the establishment of civil government here)." Shortly after a still more striking proof of the seeming decline of the Board of Trade is given by a letter to it from Shelbourne, Aug. 26, 1766, enclosing "an Order-in-Council of the 8th inst. revoking an order of 11th March, 1752, concerning the correspondence to be carried on between the Commissioners for Trade and Plantations and the governors of His Majesty's colonies, who are to correspond with the Secretary of State, sending duplicates to their Lordships. For the future also all measures relative to commerce and the colonies shall originate and be taken up in the ministerial executive offices of government, their Lordships acting as a Board of Advice upon such, joints only as shall be referred from His Majesty by Order-in-Council, or from the Lords of the Council, or a Committee of the Council, or from His Majesty by one of the principal

drawn forth by complaints which had the good fortune to be backed by special interest. I include here all actions with reference to provincial legislation; for though these would seem to form a part of the regular and necessary supervision, their rare occurrence throughout the period and the utter neglect of Ordinances which were direct oversteppings of the (supposed) Provincial legislative power preclude the idea of system or regularity.

We have seen above that the number of Provincial Ordinances was over 40; of these only six are noticed as repealed, four by an Order-in-Council of November 22, 1765, and two by a similar order of June 26, 1767. No direct statement of the grounds of repeal are to be found in any case, but in some we can discover them by an examination of the measures. We find one in regard to the retail liquor trade vetoed evidently on account of a very objectionable clause, which however, occurs also in another unrepealed

Secretaries of State; and the estimates for colonial service, and the direction and application of money granted thereupon (a business of late years transacted by your Lordships), is to be resumed into its proper channel." (*Calendar Home Office Papers*, 1766-9, No. 256.) This certainly seems to betoken a complete eclipse; an explanation is furnished in a letter from the Earl of Hillsborough to Mr. Geo. Grenville, Aug. 6, 1766, (*Grenville Correspondence*, III, 294.) Hillsborough had been president of the Board under the Grenville ministry, from Sept. 10, 1763, till the accession of Rockingham, July, 1765; he now informs Grenville that had he not been dismissed in 1765 he "could not have continued at the Board of Trade upon the footing I held it;" that he is now invited by Pitt to return to it, and has deliberated, "not whether I should come to the Board as it was constituted while you was minister, for I know I could not carry on the business in that manner; nor whether I should propose, what is certainly most desirable for the public, that it should be made an independent Department upon an extended plan, for I know the disposition of some too well to suppose that would be complied with, by parting with any power or patronage; but whether I could not contract the place so as that I might do the business in an easy manner to myself, and free from that very unpleasant and in some measure unbecoming attendance upon others which is the consequence of unexplained connections of departments in business, and always very disagreeable to that which is considered the inferior situation." Has finally decided to accept, "provided the Board should be altered from a Board of Representation to a Board of Report upon reference only; that the order to the governors in America to correspond with the Board of Trade only be rescinded; and that every executive business that has by degrees crept into the Board should revert to the proper offices, particularly all Treasury business: and that I should not be of the Cabinet (which was also offered to me)." (In corroboration of this see Fitzmaurice, *Shelbourne*, II, 1-3. Also for the earlier position and aspirations of the Board, *Ibid.*, I, 240.) Hillsborough

Ordinance of the same date. One, (on the currency), had been prepared in accordance with direct orders from home. Two others of the six related to the quartering of troops in the province and were repealed in consequence of a general Act of Parliament on the subject. The remaining one was in regard to the better observance of the Lord's day, and was evidently defective in neglecting to provide a penalty for one class of offences. On the whole no general conclusions as to principle or system can be drawn from the examination of the Imperial supervision of the Provincial legislation.

Nor do we get much more light from the examination of special executive interference, though here of course, we are not warranted in drawing the same inference of neglect. The general conduct of the Provincial government was constantly and largely influenced by the regular correspondence of the Secretary of State; but that correspondence was chiefly of a general and non-committal character, and a resolute governor like Carleton had no difficulty (especially in the frequent changes of the secretariat), in securing

resumed the position of president, and in 1768 becoming also Secretary of State for the colonies (now for the first time made a separate department), the two offices were filled by him till 1772. During this period therefore the range of the activity of the Board was a matter of choice with the Secretary and there seems to be only a personal significance in the communication to Carleton, (June 11, 1768), "that the examination of all laws and ordinances enacted in the colonies appertains to the Department of the Board of Trade," and (Sept. 2, 1772), that "the consideration of persons proper to be of His Majesty's Councils in the Plantations is more particularly within" the same Department. (Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 419.) The Instructions to Carleton of 1768 and 1775 direct him to transmit to the Board, "for their information," duplicates of all reports; except (as it is worded in the 80th Article of the Instructions of 1768; in those of 1775 the sending of such reports is referred to only in general words), "in cases of a secret nature."

The third quarter to which the governor was responsible was the Treasury. The new regulations of 1766 referred to above shows that for some time the Board of Trade had had the control of all colonial finances; the proper channel to which they were now to return was the Treasury. In the Minutes of the Quebec Council of Jan. 22, 1767, we find a reference to a letter to Murray from the Secretary of the Treasury, dated Sept. 30, 1766, requiring him to forward the most minute account of the finances of the Province. In accordance with which from this time on regular financial reports seem to have been sent to that department; which had also in the Province thereafter an independent official,—the Receiver-General,—directly responsible to it alone.

I am indebted for valuable assistance in this matter of official conditions to the late article on *Hillsborough* in the *Dictionary of Nat. Biography*.

his position. We have a couple of instances of interference in behalf of officials who had incurred the displeasure of Murray, but only one instance of the direct overturning of Carleton's action.¹ A case of some constitutional interest occurred in 1768, when Conway, the secretary, writes to the governor directing him, in the case of a trial for murder then pending, to grant the accused, if condemned, a free pardon.² The accused was acquitted, and thus there was no occasion for the carrying out of the injunction; but it is of much interest in connection with a query addressed by Hillsborough, March 2d, 1772,³ to the crown lawyers 'as to whether there was any legal objection to the passing such a pardon with the seal of the colony on a warrant to the governor under His Majesty's signet and sign manual, The reply (by Thurlow and Wedderburn), was that as the commission of the governor expressly restrained him in the pardoning of murder they could not recommend it to His Majesty to command that official, by warrant under the signet and sign manual, to do that which by the constitution of his office under the great seal he had no legal power to do.

A very significant interference finally is that of Hillsborough with Lieutenant Governor Cramahé in 1771 in regard to the proposition of New York for a consultation with Quebec and Pennsylvania on Indian trade affairs. Cramahé seems to have returned at first a favorable answer,⁵ but on his reporting the proposal home, he was informed that His Majesty did not approve of Indian congresses, "and the sending commissioners from the different colonies for that purpose," and that therefore Quebec was

¹ In regard to the Indian trade.

² Murray's commission, like all colonial ones, especially excepted from his pardoning power the crimes of treason and murder.

³ It is probable that the greater scrupulosity of the later date is due to the character of the then minister.

⁴ *Calendar of Home Office Papers, 1770-72.* No. 1146.

⁵ He writes Oct. 31st, however, that Hillsborough's disapproval had arrived in time to prevent his sending commissioners. (Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 82.)

to take no further steps in the matter. Not satisfied with this Hillsborough wrote further a few months later that "it is His Majesty's pleasure that you do not for the future consent to any propositions for appointing commissioners to attend a congress on any occasion, unless such congress be authorized by particular directions from His Majesty, and His Majesty's pleasure first signified to you for that purpose." Here again, however, the matter is mainly perhaps of personal interest; for the action of Hillsborough is in perfect accord with his general attitude on American affairs.

CHAPTER VI.

THE QUEBEC ACT,¹—ITS ORIGINS AND AIMS.

The Quebec Act of 1774 is the central point of my inquiry. It was the first intervention of the Imperial parliament in the affairs of the new province and constituted the definite settlement of government there that had been anxiously looked for during a whole decade. That settlement is of exceeding interest from almost every point of view; to the observer of religious development, whether or no he concurs in Lecky's opinion that it "marks an epoch in the history of religious liberty;"² to the investigator of political institutions, as an attempt to reconcile alien principles of government; or to the more practical student of politics, attracted by the effect of the measure both on the American Revolutionary crisis and on the later development of the vast regions which after the Revolution remained to the British crown. It is not necessary therefore to apologize for the somewhat extended discussion that I enter upon here; a discussion in which I shall have regard especially to the third of the above mentioned points of view,—the Act in its relations to the American Revolution.

Let us glance first at the ministerial steps leading up to the enactment, with a word as to the general causes of the delay of the settlement so long and urgently needed. I have throughout endeavored to show that the attitude of the home government towards Canadian affairs was for the earlier years one of the grossest neglect; and that when attention at last began to be given to the subject, and the

¹ See Appendix A for full reprint.

² *History of England*, IV, 299 (ed. 1892).

colonial officials had at length succeeded in impressing the home official mind with the fact that Canada could not be disposed of by the mere making out for it of copies of the forms which had done duty so long in the other colonies, definite action was yet delayed in a manner that must have been inexplicable in the province.¹ The main explanation is no doubt to be found in the shifting state of English politics at the time, and in the instability of administrations. Into these I cannot go as fully as would perhaps be useful. It will be remembered that the downfall of Whig ascendancy at the accession of George III in 1760, was followed by what Lecky calls "ten years of weak governments and party anarchy."² Half a dozen different ministries were formed and fell to pieces. From 1763 to 1772 no less than twelve changes took place in the office of Secretary of State, six different individuals,—the Earls of Egremont, Halifax, Shelbourne, Hillsborough, and Dartmouth, and the Hon. Henry Conway,—being in succession at the head of colonial affairs. At length on the final downfall of the Pitt-Grafton ministry early in 1770, Lord North succeeded in forming a Tory one which every day increased in strength, and which laid the foundation for a Tory ascendancy of fifty years. It was not till this ministry had been firmly established that decided action in Canadian affairs became probable or perhaps possible.³

A glance through the political Memoirs, etc., which exist in such abundance for this troubled period, does not

¹ As early as Feb. 21, 1764, Haldimand writes to Burton that party spirit in England prevents definite arrangements being made for Canada. (Can. Arch., B. 9, p. 43.)

² *Hist. of Eng.*, I. 1.

³ Knox, in his "Justice and Policy of the Quebec Act," (1774), says that from the conquest "the establishment of a proper mode of civil government therein was considered by the then and by every subsequent administration as a matter of so great importance and of so much difficulty that it became the object of almost constant deliberation." (p. 10.) The anti-colonial tract in support of the Act, attributed to Sir John Dalrymple, ("The Rights of Great Britain Asserted Against the Claims of America," 1776), correctly says that the enquiry preliminary to the Act was begun under the Chatham Administration, and adds that in consequence a measure "was considered by the Board of Trade; it was certainly debated, if not adopted by the Cabinet as far back as the year 1767." See below.

reveal many references to Canadian affairs. Almon¹ is authority for the statement that the final blow to the long-tottering Rockingham ministry was administered by the violent opposition of the Chancellor, Lord Northington, to a proposed bill for the settlement of Canada. This was in July, 1766, and that the measure had been under serious contemplation at least six months before is probable from a letter to Burke, (then the Prime Minister's secretary), of the January 9 previous.² On June 2, 1767, we find what is apparently the result of the only interposition of either House of Parliament in Canadian affairs previous to the Quebec Act.³ The order of the day on that date in the House of Lords was the taking into consideration the papers laid before the House⁴ on the previous Wednesday relating to the state of Quebec; and the House having gone into committee, reported the following resolutions: "That it appears to the committee that the Province of Quebec for a considerable time past has wanted, and does now stand in need of, further regulations and provisions relating to its civil government and religious establishment." This looks promising, but we hear nothing further of it, though on the 20th of the same month Shelbourne writes to Carleton that "the improvement of its [Quebec's] civil constitution, is under the most serious and deliberate consideration of His Majesty's servants, and principally of His Majesty's Privy Council."⁵ The following January (1768) one Marsh writes to Haldimand of the impossibility of getting the Ministry to attend to American affairs.⁶ November 4, 1769, Hillsborough informs Carleton that the

† ¹ *Anecdotes of Chatham*, II, 76. See also *Chatham Corresp.*, II, 434, and Albemarle's *Rockingham*, I, 350. Lecky accepts Almon's statement without question, III, 64.

² Dr. Thos. Leland to Burke. (*Burke's Correspondence*, Vol. 1.) It is not impossible that the reference may be merely to the negotiations, not then completed, concerning the making good by France of the old paper money of the province.

³ *Parliamentary History*, Vol. 16.

⁴ At its own request of the previous May 20. (*Cal. Home Office Papers*, 1766-9. No. 492.)

⁵ *Can. Arch.*, Q. 4, p. 129.

⁶ *Can. Arch.*, B. 68, p. 263.

consideration of the affairs of Canada has been delayed by the recess of Parliament, but that he has been assured that it will be immediately taken up again;¹ January 2, 1771, he writes again that a bill for the temporary giving of legislative power to the Council in Canada will be presented on the opening of Parliament,² and the following July 3,³ that Quebec affairs have been submitted to the Privy Council. But December 4, he informs him that the measures are not yet ready, and that the matter being a delicate one will probably be submitted to Parliament.⁴ Lord North's government was firmly established by this time, and the delay for eighteen months longer is probably due to the lingering of the final reports from the Crown lawyers. Finally, May 4, 1774, Dartmouth writes to Lieutenant-Governor Cramahé that on the previous Monday (May 2) he had presented the Quebec Bill to the House of Lords.

This session of Parliament it will be remembered was mainly occupied with the three coercive measures in regard to the Province of Massachusetts Bay. These had been introduced in the Commons almost simultaneously, had met with a vigorous resistance, but had been pushed through by the government with large majorities. It was after they had been disposed of, and after most of the members of both houses, fatigued by their close attendance, had left for the country that the Quebec Bill quietly appeared in the House of Lords.⁵ It was not introduced as

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 6, p. 121.

² Ibid., Q. 8, p. 1. The exact character of the contemplated measure seems also at this time to have been known to the provincial officials; for April 30, Cramahé replies that the prospect of a firm settlement was satisfactory to "all His Majesty's new subjects and the manner of doing it seems perfectly agreeable to their manner of thinking." (Ibid., Q. 8, p. 45.)

³ Ibid., Q. 8, p. 26.

⁴ Ibid., p. 79. This seems to show that for a short time the ministry thought of settling Canadian affairs by executive act merely. According to Lord Mansfield's judgment of 1774 this was not, however, within the competence of the executive; and it was probably from some misgiving on the point that it was decided to submit the matter to Parliament. The Mansfield judgment was not delivered till November 28, six months after the Quebec Bill had become law.

⁵ See *Ann. Reg.*, 1774, p. 74. Also note in *4 American Archives*, I, p. 214.

in any way connected with the previous American measures, and the government evidently anticipated no serious opposition. With very slight notice it passed the Lords on the 17th of May, (apparently without a division), and on the 18th was brought to the Commons. But here it met with an unexpectedly vigorous opposition, its opponents, though few in numbers, stubbornly fighting every clause. Sir Thomas Mills, Receiver-General of the Province of Quebec, writes to Haldimand, June 14, 1774,¹ that "we have had as hard fighting and many more battles to establish government for Canada as there were to conquer it. You would be astonished at the opposition made to the bill; ten nights the House of Commons was kept till one o'clock in the morning successively. Every inch of the ground was argued and every word disputed."

We are fortunate in possessing of the debate on this occasion a fuller report than of any other part of this Parliament.² This is from the shorthand notes of Sir Henry Cavendish, member of Lostwithiel, a supporter, (but not a slavish one), of the government. It will not be necessary to go fully into the discussion, however, as it may easily be imagined what line of battle would be assumed against such a measure by an opposition with Burke and Fox at its head. Though the battle was spirited the opposition seems soon to have become hopeless of effecting anything; and its efforts were more remarkable for fighting every inch than for serious or prolonged struggle at any one point.³ Lord North was on the whole conciliatory, showing no special love for or interest in the measure, but yet evidently determined to push its main provisions through. Very little indication is given that the bill was considered

¹ Can. Arch., B. 27, p. 374.

² Long known as the Unreported Parliament. The earlier part is now supplied to us from the same source as that for the debate on the Quebec Bill. During this session the order for the exclusion of strangers was enforced with unusual vigour.

³ The chief contest was in the latter part of the discussion, on the matter of the jury system.

to have any connection with the direct steps taken to repress America, the ministry taking no notice of the few and obscure hints dropped to that effect. A peculiar feature is the repetition by the Opposition of questions as to the authorship of the measure, the Crown lawyers being persistently taunted, (without drawing from them any vigorous disclaimer), with not being willing to father it, if not at heart opposed to it. In this connection the letter of Mills quoted from already is of great interest.¹ The writer proceeds (from the point quoted above); "Much pain and trouble it has cost me. The Bill was first put in my hands containing ten sheets in folio, in my mind the shorter it was the better. The limits, the religion, the French law, and the Council,² they owe to me. My conscience, however, tells me that I was not only serving justice and country, but also doing justice to the conquered." Of equal interest are his continuing words as to the curious attitude of the ministry. "In the House of Lords I had not much trouble, but great difficulty in keeping Lord North and the Ministry steady and firm in the House of Commons. You would, however, have pitied them, for they were teased and harrassed to death. They were very negligent in studying the subject,³ which of course gave the others the best of the argument, and then they had to combat against all the popular topics, viz., the Popish religion, no juries, no assemblies, etc. Masères

¹ It is noticeable that June 8, 1769, the Secretary of the Board of Trade (Pownall) writes to the Treasury requesting that Receiver-General Mills be allowed to remain some time in England, as he can give useful information to the Lords of Trade respecting Quebec.

² The main points, it will be noticed, over which controversy raged then and after. It will be seen later, however, that the origin of these was by no means so Minerva-like as it appeared to Mr. Mills.

³ Wedderbourne, the Solicitor-General, who had prepared a special report on Canadian affairs and claimed to have thoroughly studied the subject, brought forward in the argument as to the non granting of juries, the conduct of the juries of Quebec in the revenue trials of 1766 and 1769, as proof that the Canadians were not fit for the institution. Whereas the juries on both occasions are expressly stated by Masères to have been entirely English.

and Murray behaved infamously, Carleton and Hey exceedingly proper, steady and well." What degree of credit is to be given to any part of this self-inflated epistle it is impossible to enquire very closely. The animated character of the debate was kept till the close; the final word according to Cavendish being the vigorously expressed opinion of a thoroughly disgusted opponent that the speaker "should throw the Bill over the table, and somebody else should kick it out at the door."

Of considerable importance is it to observe the attenuated character of the House on this occasion. The total number of members at the time was 558, and the main divisions on this Bill were as follows: second reading, 105 to 29, final vote, 50 to 20. These numbers are undoubtedly much higher than during the actual debate, Cavendish noting on two occasions that only about 40 members were in the House. It is to be remembered that under these conditions the government support would belong to the most dependent, corrupt and unrepresentative part of this most corrupt and unrepresentative of Parliaments.¹ We need not follow the fortunes of the Bill through the slight opposition it met with, (from seven peers), on its return to the Lords, nor through the vigorous but unsuccessful attempt to repeal it in the following year. (Division in Commons, 174 to 86.) After a long labor and painful birth it had appeared for good or ill; it will now be necessary to examine its provisions more carefully, with a view to determining the ideas that inspired them and estimating their more immediate results.

B. History of Main Provisions.

The phrase used by Mills above,—"The limits, the religion, the French law, and the Council,"—is a succinct statement of the main subject matters of the new enact-

¹ See statements of Lecky (Vol. III, pp. 171, 173) that in 1770 192 members of the Commons held places under government, and that it was computed in 1774 that fully half of the members for England and Wales represented a total of only 11,500 voters.

ment; and in discussing them I shall adopt the same order both as logical and as the order of the Act itself.

a. *Boundaries.* First, therefore, as to the limits or boundaries of the newly defined Province. This part of the Act, though the most short lived,¹ might probably be contended to be the most noticeable and important with regard to the influence of the measure on the course of the American Revolution. The inclusion of the Western country within the limits of Canada, in connection with other provisions, was taken as indicative of a settled and long-meditated design on the part of the English government to hinder the extension of the self-governing colonies by attaching the vast unsettled regions West and Southwest to the arbitrary government which that Act seemed to establish.² There was the more likelihood of suspicion or irritation upon this point because of the fact that the final disposition of the western country had been in suspense since the peace, and because the first step of the imperial authorities with regard to it, in the Proclamation of 1763, had been by no means satisfactory to the older colonies. Modern writers have contended that the settled purpose of hindering the extension of these colonies by new and arbitrary measures, is clearly shown in that proclamation, and shown thus for the first time; that in

¹ Repealed for the most part by the provisions of the Treaty of Versailles, 1763, the Province of Quebec being then deprived of those parts which now form the states of Ohio, Indiana, Michigan, Illinois, Wisconsin and part of Minnesota.

² The tenacity and attractiveness, (through its inherent probability), of this idea from the colonial standpoint is easily understood. Its general vitality, moreover, is illustrated in the latest and best history of Canada from the native and Imperial standpoint (Kingsford's). The author, while vigorously defending the Quebec Act in the main, and asserting that he can "discover no admissible ground for the acceptance" of the belief that its main measures were due to the condition of things in the other colonies, yet says of the extension to the west (for which otherwise he can find no explanation): "It is possible that the spirit of revolt dominant in the colonies may have led to the desire of preventing the exercise of any pretension over the territory of the Western provinces of Virginia and Pennsylvania [!]; and of opposing by legislation all extension beyond their admitted frontier." (V. 244.) The failure of this writer to find other reasons may probably be explained from his accompanying assertion that west of Montreal "at the period of conquest there was scarcely a white man established," and from his disregard in this connection of the fur trade.

this light it was the first step in a new policy of tyrannical restriction of which the culmination was the Act of Parliament which in 1774 finally annexed the West to the un-free Province of Quebec.¹

This contention is of course incompatible with the more ordinary view that the Quebec Act, in this as in its other provisions, was called out by the critical state of things in the older provinces in or about the years 1773-4; and before I go on to deal with the latter opinion it will be necessary to consider the variation.

It is manifest that if British colonial policy underwent such a decided change in the period 1760-3, we are justified in expecting to find evidence of that change in the confidential communications between the Imperial and the colonial authorities, or in the semi-official utterances of that

¹The chief expression of this view will be found in Hinsdale, *Old Northwest*, c. 8. The writer considers that with the treaty of Paris, England, abandoning the old sea-to-sea colonial claims, made a decided change in her land policy; that while the Ohio grant of 1743 showed that "she had then no thought of preventing over-mountain settlements, or of limiting the expansion of the colonies in that direction," (p. 120), now, alarmed at their rapid growth, she took measures to permanently sever them from the western lands. This it is intimated was one of the main motives of the Proclamation of 1763. The writer, however, does not seem very decided upon the point, and concludes with the admission that on the whole, "in the years following the French war the Western policy of the British was not steady or consistent, but fitful and capricious; prompted by a solicitude for the Indian that was partly feigned and partly by a growing jealousy of the shore colonies." (p. 141.) Yet immediately after the half-abandoned position is resumed in the statement that "this policy of restriction culminated in 1774 in the Quebec Act," one of the main objects of which was "permanently to sever the West from the shore colonies and put it in train for being cut up, when the time should come, into independent governments that should have affiliations with the St. Lawrence basin rather than with the Atlantic slope." The irritated colonies, we are told, looked upon the new boundaries given to Quebec by the Act "as a final effort to wrest the West from them forever." Roosevelt (*Winning of the West*, I, c. 2), expresses the same ideas in a somewhat different form. Far-reaching as are the above views they do not attain that breadth of assertion which we find in an even more recent opinion, that from its conquest in 1760 Canada was regarded by the British government as a *point d'appui* "for the support of the ministerial policy in asserting British parliamentary supremacy over the colonies." (Review of *Life of John Patterson*, N. Y. Nation, July 19, 1894.) These opinions are illustrative of the latest phase of revolutionary study, that which centers round the comparatively fresh field of Western interests and advance. They are the result of hasty generalization from one-sided investigation, stimulated by the suspicious that contemporary events and the heated assertions of the revolutionary age itself tend naturally to engender. It is all the more necessary that they should be promptly confronted with the facts; which must be my justification for the detail with which I have considered the subject.

time or of the years intervening between it and the Revolution. It is to be presumed that the exponents of the idea of change have made search for such evidence, and fair to assume that they have brought forward all the evidence found. But what is presented as such practically amounts only to Hillsborough's representation in 1772 with regard to the intentions of those who drew up the Proclamation of 1763. It is not shown, or attempted to be shown, that Hillsborough's apparent interpretation of that document as containing a declaration of new policy, has more than the weight of his individual opinion; it is not shown that even Hillsborough ascribes any peculiar influence to the acquisition of Canada. Yet herein is the whole matter. For it will be found on closer examination that the aim of the Board of Trade in that measure was precisely the same as had actuated it for years before; that the only change produced by the acquisition of Canada was the new and extensive field in which the old policy was to be applied.

It is assumed that the acquisition of Canada was the starting point or confirmation of the new policy. If this were so some trace of that view of the acquisition must surely appear in the state papers or political discussions with regard to it. Before going into the State correspondence let us glance for a moment at the circumstances attendant on the treaty of peace in 1763. From the day of the conquest of Canada in 1760 to that of its final cession, the question as to whether or not it should be retained by Great Britain, and what place, in the event of retention, it should occupy in the American system, was before the public, and keenly and thoroughly debated in the pamphlet and periodical literature. In this, if anywhere, we should expect to find traces of any new aspect that the possession of Canada might be supposed to give to American affairs; it is hardly possible that a new line of action based on that possession could be contemplated without foreshadowing or reflection of it in this quarter. An exhaustive ex-

amination of this material has not been possible; but the close scrutiny of a very considerable portion¹ has failed to furnish any evidence that Canada at any part of this period appeared to the English public mind in the slightest degree in the light of a weapon or base of hostile action against the other colonies; nothing has been discovered to support the belief that either the terms of peace or the following dispositions concerning the new Province, were influenced by any but friendly and comparatively generous feelings toward those colonies. The only evidences of illiberal feeling that can be produced are in the writings of those who argue against the retention of Canada.² The main points of the very energetic argument for West Indian in preference to Canadian acquisition, were the alleged greater commercial value of the former, and the danger that if the older colonies were relieved of the menace of the French, they would speedily become independent, troublesome, and perhaps rebellious. This was answered almost wholly by the statement that the war had been undertaken and carried on for the relief of the colonies through the expulsion or crippling of the French; that the colonists had helped materially toward success, and that England therefore must in justice or generosity see that the French should never again be a danger and hindrance. It need not be supposed of course that there was any losing sight of the more domestic interests of Great Britain in this matter; still less, however, can it be assumed that the in-

¹ That afforded by the Sparks Collection of Colonial Tracts in the Cornell University Library, and by the similar collections in the Wisconsin State Historical Library, and in the Canadian Archives.

² See especially, "Remarks on the Letter addressed to two Great Men. In a Letter to the Author of that Piece." (London, 1760. Attributed to Edmund or William Burke.) The vigorous reply to this: "The Interest of Great Britain considered, with regard to her Colonies, and the acquisition of Canada and Guadaloupe,"—(London, 1760),—is attributed to Franklin, and was one of the most influential of the pamphlets; the Ministry which took the course it contends for can scarcely be charged with hostile views. A later pamphlet, ("An Examination of the Commercial Principles of the late Negotiation," etc., 1762), attributed to Edmund Burke, refers to the author of the foregoing one as the chief advocate of the system which was proceeded upon in the negotiations for peace, negotiations which had for their main object the possession of Canada.

terests of the colonies were neglected, or that underneath an apparent solicitude lay sinister designs. A striking feature of the contention is the readiness with which nearly all admit the greater commercial value of the West Indies, and the comparative worthlessness and lack of promise of Canada. The notable pamphlet entitled, "A Letter addressed to Two Great Men,"¹ declares that though "The possession of Canada is no view of Ambition," yet the ministry should make it "the *sine qua non* of the Peace, as the only method of guarding our invaluable possessions there from usurpations and encroachments" by the French. In a pamphlet presumably by Edmund Burke² it is shown with seeming conclusiveness that West Indian trade was far more important than North American. The writer complains further that the argument, (considered by him futile), for the retention of Canada on account of being necessary to the safety and prosperity of the colonies, had been so enforced upon the public mind "that Canada came at last to take an entire Possession of our Hearts and Understandings; and we were taught to believe that no cession was too great to purchase this inestimable security, this immoveable Barrier of all our Colonies." A pamphlet of 1762 in defence of the proposed treaty which bears strong marks of being inspired, rests the defence of the acquisition of Canada instead of Gaudaloupe wholly on the security of the old colonies; which, even if the defence be not an authorized one, shows that this was known to be the argument which would appeal most strongly to the constituency addressed.³ Three years later a more elaborate

¹ "A Letter addressed to Two Great Men, on the prospects of Peace; and on the terms necessary to be insisted upon in the Negotiation," (London, 1760, 2nd edition. Jared Sparks collection. Attributed by Sparks to the Earl of Bath). Said by Lecky to have had "a very wide influence and circulation." (III, 291.)

² "An Examination of the Commercial Principles," etc.

³ "A letter to the Earl of Bute on the Preliminaries of Peace. From neither a noble Lord; a candid member of Parliament; an impartial Briton, but an Englishman." (London, 1762.)

writer,¹ summing up in a judicial way the war and the peace, appeals to all parties to support him in the assertion that the chief sentiment of the nation throughout the period was, "That our colonies in North America merited the first and chief attention and care of their mother country," and that as they were in great danger from French encroachment, it was considered that, "nothing too great, nothing too expensive, nothing too hazardous could be undertaken for their relief."

This brief survey of the public expressions of the party writers with regard to the acquisition and use of Canada shows at least that whatever may have been the private motives of the Administration, the general political mind had at this time become impressed mainly with considerations as to the safety and advance of the colonies. An examination of the Parliamentary Debates on the preliminary Treaty in 1762 brings us a step further. No full report is to be found, but the abstract of the Parliamentary History gives the following resumé of "the principle arguments which were offered in favor of the Treaty in the Commons." "That the original object of the war was the security of our colonies upon the continent," and that therefore danger to them must once for all be guarded against; that such danger being afforded by the continued presence of France, to remove or contract her power was "the most capital advantage we can obtain, and is worth purchasing by almost any concessions;" that this moreover would have the advantage of "permitting our colonies on the continent to extend themselves without danger or molestation," thus increasing the range of British trade; that, however, such a colonial extension ought not to be regarded on commercial principles alone, for "extent of territory and a number of subjects are matters of as much

¹"A full and free Inquiry into the Merits of the Peace; with some Strictures on the Spirit of Party." (London, 1765.)

consideration to a State attentive to the sources of real grandeur, as the mere advantage of traffic."¹ These were the motives and objects of the peace as set forth in a House which could not to any degree have been influenced in its expression by the fear or desire of the publicity given by the reporter; and they were endorsed by a vote in favor of the Treaty of 319 to 65. In the whole series of Parliamentary debates from 1760 to 1774 I have met nothing any more fitted to support the idea that the retention of Canada should or could be regarded as an occasion or basis for an illiberal and restrictive policy toward the older colonies. Finally on this point of the general public spirit with regard to the retention of French Canada it should be noticed that this part of the British policy has escaped the suspicion of earlier prominent American writers, even of those of a marked bias.² Bancroft has traced carefully the genesis of the new applications of the colonial system, and has shown that they were evident some time before the conquest of Canada. With regard, however, to the retention of that country, he says that England "proudly accepted the counsels of magnanimity. . . . Promising herself wealth from colonial trade, she was occupied by the thought of filling the wilderness, instructing it with the products of her intelligence, and blessing it with free institutions."³ Yet, he adds, at this very time the Board of Trade was intent on applying those new measures which for many years it had looked forward to.

¹ *Parliamentary History*, XV, 1271.

² The most candid and impressive of recent English historians of this period is doubtless Mr. Lecky. His conclusion on this matter is that, "The nation had learned to look with pride and sympathy upon the greater England which was growing up beyond the Atlantic, and there was a desire which was not ungenerous or ignoble to remove at any rate the one obstacle to its future happiness;" that it was felt "that the expulsion of the French from Canada was essential, not only to the political and commercial prosperity of the Northern colonies, but also to the security of their homes." (III, 294.) Nowhere in his lengthy discussion of the whole colonial difficulty does this historian give any indication of such a connection between the acquisition of Canada and the West and general colonial affairs as might be expressed in the idea that designs against the liberties of the colonies were in any degree based on the possession of these regions.

³ *History of the United States*, Epoch I, c. 16.

Such is the degree of light thrown upon change of policy or the probability of it, by an examination of the circumstances attendant on the securing of the new acquisition to which the asserted change has been attributed. Let us now examine the early measures taken with regard to that acquisition. These are embraced in the Royal Proclamation of 1763, over which so much controversy has raged, and which, as before shown, was considered by many at the time, and has been held up since, as due, not to the motives which it expresses, but to those special anti-colonial ends to which the new policy was supposed to be addressing itself. In this document the preliminary, "Whereas we have taken into our Royal Consideration the extensive and valuable acquisitions in America; . . . and being desirous that all our loving subjects, as well of our Kingdoms, as of our colonies in America, may avail themselves with all convenient speed of the great benefits and advantages which must accrue therefrom to their commerce, manufactures and navigation," is followed by provisions for the establishment and delimitation of the four new governments of Quebec, East Florida, West Florida and Grenada, the general direction of their civil government, the bestowal of free lands upon those who had served in the war, and the disposition of the vast regions between the Mississippi and the bounds of the old colonies. It is decreed that, "whereas it is just and reasonable, and essential to our interests and the security of our colonies, that the several nations or tribes of Indians with which we are connected, and who live under our protection, should not be molested or disturbed in the possession of such parts of our dominions or territories, as, not having been ceded to us, are reserved to them, or any of them, as their hunting-grounds," these regions are to be kept, "for the present and until our further pleasure be known," free from white encroachments of any kind, all persons already settled therein being enjoined to remove themselves. Further, "whereas

great frauds and abuses have been committed in the purchasing lands of the Indians, to the great prejudice of our interests and the great dissatisfaction of the said Indians; in order therefore to prevent such irregularities for the future, and to the end that the Indians may be convinced of our justice and determined resolution to remove all reasonable causes of discontent," all future purchases from the Indians are to be made through the Colonial governments alone. Trade with the savages is, under colonial license, to be free "to all our subjects whatever."¹ It will be noticed that if this document is to be regarded as specially hostile to the other colonies, it must be concluded that not only are its real reasons not avowed, but that the asserted motives of advantage to "all our loving subjects, as well of our Kingdoms as of our colonies in America," and of "the security of our colonies," as necessitating more consideration for the Indian, are directly and intentionally misleading. Even the most confirmed supporter of this view, however, would hardly expect to have the pretence kept up behind the scenes, and would probably be ready to maintain that the preliminary and accompanying secret discussions and correspondence would reveal evidence of the duplicity. It will be striking at the root of the matter to proceed to the application of this test.

But first a word with regard to that professed solicitude for the Indian which has seemed so absurdly inadequate a reason that it could be considered only the cloak of sinister design. Without attempting to go into the history of British treatment of the savages, (an honorable one, it is usually admitted), it will be well to note the general attitude of the immediately preceding years and the relations with the Indians which existed at the moment. It is not necessary to rest the British case here wholly or mainly on

¹ This Proclamation has been several times printed. See Houston, *Canadian Constitutional Documents*, pp. 67-73; Franklin, *Works*, V. 75 (Bigelow ed.); Kingsford, *Hist. of Can.*, V, 142-5; *Wis. Hist. Coll.*, XI, 46.

philanthropic grounds; the student of the period knows well that with the word "Indian" must be read the additional term "Indian trade," and that with this addition the Indian question assumed an important place in the general colonial trade system. The fur trade had long been one of the chief bones of contention between the English and the French; it had been the mainstay of the French government in Canada, and it was natural that now, when French rivalry had just been removed and Canada had become a British province, it should assume a much greater and indeed disproportionate place in the official and public mind. It should be noticed that this trade was regarded as peculiarly a British one, (in contradistinction to colonial), and as one of the most important elements in the manufacturing monopoly of the mother country.¹ No attempt is being made here to defend the general commercial or colonial system of Great Britain at this time; I simply wish to show that the action of the British government in regard to the Indians and the West was only, in the main, an application of that system, and does not require the assumption of any special change of policy or any new lines of hostility with regard to the colonies. The slightest examination will show the vast importance attached to this matter throughout the period by the Imperial authorities, and the amount of care that was given to its regulation.² But

¹ See Sir William Johnson to Lords of Trade, May 17, 1759, (N. Y. Col. Documents, VII, 375); he lays emphasis on the importance of the trade and on the fact that it was carried on wholly by the manufactures of Great Britain, all the produce being exported there. In 1766 Franklin pointed out that the trade was wholly British, not colonial. (*Works*, III, 429, Bigelow ed.)

² When in 1766 Shelbourne, Secretary of State, issued general directions as to the policy of the Imperial government in American affairs and the points to which American officials were to give special attention, the first of the three divisions laid down was the management of the Indians and of the commerce with them. (*Cal. Home Office Papers* 1766-9, No. 348.) And in 1775 the same statesman used in the House of Lords the following language: "The peltry or skin trade is a matter which I presume to affirm is of the last importance to the trade and commerce of the colonies and this country. The regulation of this business has cost His Majesty's ministers more time and trouble than any one matter I know of." (*Parl. Hist.*, XVIII, 671). For important aspects of the trade see also, Turner, *Indian Trade in Wisconsin*, and Moore, in *Mag. Am. History*, Sept., 1892.

apart from this there was another side to the matter, of special colonial importance,—the necessity in regard to the security of the colonies of the maintenance of general amicable relations with the Indians. The two aspects are indeed not to be separated in actual fact; for it will be readily seen that the general relations with the Indians were closely and inextricably bound up with the trade, and that anything which affected either one was likely to have the most essential bearing on the other.

The rivalry between English and French for the alliance of the Indians was not over with the peace; throughout the whole period down to the Revolution the home government was justly apprehensive of tampering with the Indians on the part of the French and Spanish traders from Louisiana.¹ To considerations as to dangers to the older colonies from this quarter was added the natural apprehension that French intrigues among the savages would be directed toward the recovery of Canada. Those best acquainted with the tribes had given warning even before the end of the war of the deep dissatisfaction and unrest even among the allied ones; the warning was justified and all the fears of the government confirmed by the great Pontiac outbreak in the spring of 1763. This was at its height in June of that year, exposing the colonies to ravage and danger such as they had never before experienced; it is evident that it might well have had a decided influence with regard to the Proclamation of the following October. All the professions of concern for the interests and contentment of the Indians which that document contains have therefore every probability of sincerity; there is no reasonable ground for surprise at the stress laid on this matter.

But that the measures of the Proclamation with regard to the Western country had long been in contemplation,

¹ See Hillsborough to Carleton, Nov. 4, 1769. (Can. Arch., Q. 6, p. 121.) This danger would of course increase with any lessening of or impediment to the trade from the British side.

and that the treatment of the Indian and his alleged grievances in it can be ascribed neither to the Pontiac outbreak nor to any general change of policy in connection with the acquisition of Canada, is conclusively shown by the fact that steps of this kind had been contemplated, or seriously debated, from at least the very beginning of the war. March 15, 1756, the Board of Trade had enjoined on the New York government to take measures for granting full satisfaction to the Indians for the white encroachment of which they complained, and which was one of the principal causes of the decline of British interest among them.¹ During the war the French made effectual use of these encroachments in arousing the fears of the Indians, and the British government was obliged to strain every nerve to pacify them. Such efforts were, however, largely thwarted through the interested action of the Colonial authorities, and there seems every reason to believe that the alleged land sales by the Indians were frequently obtained by fraud. This certainly was the firm conviction both of the home government and its colonial representatives, and it was this conviction that led to the measure of 1763 for making such sales a public and not private matter. In 1759 Sir William Johnson strongly represents to the Board the discontent of the Indians, and the damage thereby done to the Indian trade; declaring that "The Indians ought to be redressed and satisfied in all their reasonable and well-founded complaints of enormous and unrighteously obtained patents of their lands."² In 1761 the legislature of New York undertook to make new grants in the neighbourhood of Lake George; the Board of Trade, having considered the matter, reported adversely thereon to the gov-

¹ N. Y. Col. Documents, VII. 77. For this and most of the other references down to 1761 I am indebted to Mr. Kingsford, who has clearly represented the conditions of this matter during these years. (*History of Canada*, V., 135-8.) It is to be noted that the letter of the Board to Chief-Justice DeLancy of N. Y., in 1756, refers to the policy the Board was then urging as one that had been put in action in 1699.

² N. Y. Col. Documents, VII., 375.

ernment (Nov. 11, 1761). This report represented that the proposed grants were dangerous to the security of the colonies, the chief cause of the former hostility of the Indians having been "the cruelty and injustice with which they had been treated with respect to their hunting-grounds, in open violation of those solemn compacts by which they had yielded to us the Dominion but not the property of those Lands;" that as they had since been made allies by partial relief, and now, having acted faithfully, "impatiently wait for full redress and reformation," "under these circumstances and in this situation the granting of lands hitherto unsettled and establishing colonies upon the Frontiers before the claims of the Indians are ascertained appears to be a measure of the most dangerous tendency." It was accordingly recommended that an immediate stop should be made to the proposed settlements "until the event of the war is determined and such measures taken thereupon with respect to our Indian allies as shall be thought expedient."¹ This report was approved by the King-in-Council (Nov. 23, 1761), and instructions for colonial officers in accordance therewith were ordered to be prepared. These, drawn up by the Board of Trade, appear the following Dec. 2.² On the ground that the "peace and security of Our Colonies and Plantations upon the Continent of North America does greatly depend upon the amity and alliance" with the contiguous Indians, and that this amity and alliance are endangered through the alleged unjust treatment of the Indians in regard to their lands, the Imperial government, resolved to protect the Indians in "their just Rights and Possessions and to keep inviolable the Treaties and Compacts which have been entered into with them," ordains practically the same measures as were taken two years later in the Proclamation of 1763.

¹ N. Y. Col. Documents, VII. 472.

² *Ibid.*, VII. 477. "Draft of an Instruction for the Governors of Nova Scotia, New Hampshire, Virginia, New York, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia, forbidding them to grant lands or make settlements which may interfere with the Indians bordering on those Colonies." Apparently sent out at once.

We see therefore that the action in 1763 with regard to the Western lands, instead of being indicative of a change of policy occasioned by the acquisition of Canada, was merely the re-enunciation in a more general and important form of the principles which had been acted upon at a time when it was still hotly debated whether Canada should be retained at all or not; that it was indeed merely the logical following up of opinions which are evidently the controlling ones at least as early as 1756. Instead of their being evidence, or ground for reasonable suspicion, that the solicitude with regard to the Indians was in whole or part assumed and the cloak of other motives, we find that this solicitude, (the selfish commercial meaning of which is shown above), had been a predominant motive from the beginning of the war, and that it is unmixed, in the most secret and confidential transactions of the government, with any indication of ulterior designs.

The above inquiry has been into the origins of that part of the Proclamation which deals generally with the disposition of the West. With regard to the limits of Canada a somewhat different question is presented. For in this respect the Proclamation differed essentially from the Quebec Act; the former confining the Province to a very narrow area, and the latter including within it the whole sweep of the West between the Ohio and the Mississippi. The idea of a continuity of policy between the two measures, on the part of those who regard both as parts of the same new hostility which had been acted on since the conquest of Canada, rests on the assumption that the prohibition of settlement and the confirmation of Indian possession were only preliminary either to the erection of new governments exclusive of the other colonies, or to that incorporation with Quebec which was accomplished in 1774. I take the same view as to continuity of policy; with the difference that I regard both measures simply as parts of the old colonial system that had been applied practically

throughout the century. It will be necessary therefore to trace carefully this side of the matter, with the purpose of opposing both the view noted above, and that older one which sees no connection on this point between the measures, but regards the Quebec Act as especially called forth by the difficulties with the older colonies at and just before the time of its appearance.

And first it should be noted that Canada, as ceded to England by France in 1763, was assigned no definite limits. The term used in the treaty of Paris¹ is "Canada with all its dependencies," and the boundary fixed between British and French territory in North America was, so far as Canada could be affected, simply the Mississippi River. Nor does any further indication of limits seem to have been given in any way by the French; for in a letter published shortly after the conquest² the Marquis de Vaudreuil, (the French governor who had signed the capitulation), states that he had "traced out no limits whatever" for the surrendered territory. General Murray in his official report of 1762, says that it is "impossible to ascertain exactly what part of North America the French styled Canada, no chart or map whatever having fallen into our hands, or public record of any kind to show what they understood by it." Hence the British Government might consider itself to have a comparatively free hand in the defining of the new Province, having regard to the fixed boundaries and well-established claims of the adjacent Colonies,³ to the Mississippi

¹ Articles IV, V, VII. (Chalmer's *Treaties*, London, 1790).

² Annual Register, 1761, p. 267.

³ The degree to which these latter were likely to be considered as restrictive may be inferred from the following statement of a recent American text-book with regard to early charter claims in the West. "Those charters had all lapsed, and the only colonies in 1750 of which the charter limits reached beyond the Appalachian mountains were Connecticut and Pennsylvania." (Hart, *Formation of the Union*, p. 3.) Roosevelt (*Winning of the West*, I, 37), after stating that the claims of the colonies in the West were heeded by the British no more than by the French, adds in regards to these claims, "The mere statement of the facts is enough to show the intrinsic worthlessness of the titles." Winsor (*The Mississippi Basin*, p. 447), has pointed out that the drawing by the treaty of 1763 of the Mississippi as a line of demarcation between the English and the

as the Eastern boundary of Louisiana, and to the somewhat indefinite regions granted to the Hudson Bay Company.¹ But how this freedom might be affected by popular opinion as to the legitimate limits of the new Province, will be seen from the fact that Canada had always been claimed by the French to extend over almost the whole extent of the vast territory through which her traders had carried on the fur-trade,² and that the non-inclusion of these regions down till the Quebec Act was a prominent subject of complaint among all classes of the inhabitants.³

Very soon after the treaty the British Government proceeded to consider the difficult question of the disposition of the outlying regions in America. The Board of Trade having recommended (in a renewal of the considerations of 1761, pointed out above), that the Western territory outside

French, meant "a distinct abandonment upon the part of the British government of the old sea-to-sea claims of the early English charters." Yet these had been the only basis of the Western claims of the colonies; it could hardly be expected that Great Britain would feel bound to pay any further attention to them. And not with any more reason can it be contended that the disregard of them in later measures showed any special hostility or injustice. I am concerned here however only with the degree to which the home government might consider its action in the settlement of the new acquisitions to be impeded by the old grants. That the view as to the entire lapse of the charter rights was consistently maintained by the Imperial authorities, will be seen from an examination of the negotiations for the treaty of peace in 1783. (*Dip. Corr. of the Revolution*; Hinsdale, *Old Northwest*, pp. 178-9). There is no record apparently of any objection made by Virginia to the proposed Walpole or Vandalia cession (1768-75) on the ground of her charter claims. (Monograph by Mr. Alden, elsewhere referred to).

¹ These latter were not definitely ascertained till the Imperial Act of 1889, which settled the northern boundary of the Province of Ontario.—Houston, *Canadian Constitutional Documents*, p. 6.

² The address of thanks for the Quebec Act from the French Canadians of Montreal, 1774, refers to it as having restored the Province to "ses anciennes limites."

³ See especially French and English petitions and memorials of 1773 and 1774. (Can. Arch., Q. 9, 10.) Also in *Masères*. Also Carleton to Shelbourne January 3, 1767, (Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 50) and Dartmouth to Carleton December 10, 1774. (*Ibid.*, Q. 10, p. 125). Garneau echoes these complaints in the assertion that "D'abord l'Angleterre voulut repudier tout ce qui était Français et enlever même aux habitants les avantages naturels qu'offrait à leurs enfants l'étendue du pays." (*Hist. Can.*, II, 289.) With regard to the narrowing of the Province in 1763, it may perhaps be supposed that the Government was influenced by some idea of consistency in regard to its own past attitude in the disputes with the French over boundaries in North America. When the great extension of the Quebec Act was under debate the Opposition taunted the administration with the change of base on this point, asking what would be the result should the French ever be in a position to reclaim Canada.

of Canada (a term they use in a restricted but indefinite sense), and the other colonies should not be subject to grants of land or to settlement, the King communicates his approbation of this suggestion, but adds that it would be necessary to put the region under some civil government, in order that it might not seem to be abandoned or become a refuge for malefactors ;¹ and that it would probably be best to attach it to the Government of Quebec. In reply August 5, 1763,² the Board agrees that a government is necessary, but objects to its being that of any one existing province, especially of Quebec, for three reasons:—(1) that if included within the limits of Canada the Indians might thereby conclude that the English title to the country came only from the late French cession, (2) that the annexing of it to any one province would give that province an undue advantage in the Indian trade, and (3) that as government in that region could probably be carried on only with the aid of the greater part of the military forces in America, its annexation to Quebec would require, to prevent constant disputes between the civil and military authorities, that the Governor of Canada should be virtually Commander-in-Chief.³ Accordingly the Board suggests instead that the region should be governed by the Commander-in-Chief under his military commission, and that pending the receipt of information necessary to the drawing up of his instructions, a Proclamation should be issued declaring the territory reserved for trade and the Indians. These recommendations were adopted, and with the others noted above formed the basis of the Proclamation of Oct. 7, following. This, so far as it relates to Quebec under this head, begins by clearly defining the limits of the new

¹ See last clause of the Proclamation.

² Can. Arch., Q. 1, p. 110.

³ This last objection should perhaps be especially noted, in considering whether aims hostile to the civil rights of the other colonies were being entertained on the basis of the acquisition of Canada. If so, it could hardly seem objectionable that the Governor of Canada should be Commander-in-Chief.

"Government of Quebec," reducing it to a rectangular district of not more than 100,000 square miles extending along both sides of the middle St. Lawrence from the mouth of the river St. John to the point where the St. Lawrence was intersected by the 45th degree of N. Latitude. As thus fixed the boundaries remained till the Quebec Act, the Province so constituted forming but a small part of the region over which the French Government in Canada had claimed sovereignty. The eastern portion cut off was placed under the Government of Newfoundland.

There seems to be no reason for doubting that on this point as on the others the Proclamation is what it appears to be, and that the motives which dictated it are to be fully gathered from the foregoing representations of the Board of Trade. That the measures referring directly to Quebec can scarcely be regarded as unfriendly to the colonies is shown by the fact that they arose partly from a desire to prevent Quebec from having an undue advantage in the Indian fur-trade. It was not regarded as a complete settlement, and was intended to be supplemented by steps which should properly provide for the temporary government of the region. But as it proved, neither time nor energy was available till 1774 for further arrangement, and even the instructions to the Commander-in-Chief, spoken of by the Board of Trade, seem never to have been issued.¹ On the eve of the passing of the Quebec Act, (long after its main features had been decided upon), Dartmouth, then Secretary of State, writes to Lt. Gov. Cramahé that "there is no longer any hope of perfecting that plan of policy in respect to the interior country which was in contemplation when the Proclamation of 1763

¹ Knox (*Justice & Policy of the Quebec Act*, Lond. 1774), states in an authoritative manner that it had been intended to defray the expense of the system contemplated by a tax on the Indian trade, and that the plan was abandoned because it was not judged expedient to lay this tax, while the American budget was already sufficiently burdened. See also Franklin, *Works*, V. 33.

was issued."¹ The details of the plan, (referred to as drawn up by the Board of Trade in 1764), we learn from the instructions to Carleton of 1775,² it being incorporated therein as some guide in his future dealings with the Indian trade. The main feature is the institution of a semi-military government, (i. e. by civil officials relying on the military for constant support), administered in a summary manner by a superintendent and deputies; government having almost for its sole object the regulation of the fur-trade, and no consciousness being shown of the existence in the region of any permanent white settlers. The Superintendent was indeed appointed; but being left without sufficient power the result was unsatisfactory, and he was superseded by 1768, each province then having authority to frame regulations for its own traders.³ The fur-trade, subject from the want of effective government to a variety of injurious impediments, became every year more and more disorganized and unproductive, and complaints as to the insecurity of life and property throughout the trading grounds increased every day in volume and vehemence. It was soon seen that some more effective measures must be taken for the control of the region. Dartmouth in the letter just quoted, after speaking of the difficulty of carrying out the plan of policy at first intended, proceeds:—"Many circumstances with regard to the inhabitancy of parts of that country were then unknown, and there are a variety of other considerations that do, at least in my judgment, induce a doubt both of the justice and propriety of restraining the colony to the narrow limits prescribed in that Proclamation."⁴ The main "circumstance" here spoken of was probably the discovery that white settlers had spread themselves too widely and fixed

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 9, p. 157.

² Can. Arch., *Instructions, 1763-87.*

³ Hillsborough to Carleton, June 11, 1768 (Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 419). Franklin's letters show the expense of the system as one of the chief reasons for change.

⁴ See also same to Carleton Dec. 10, 1774. (Can. Arch., Q. 10, p. 125.)

themselves too firmly throughout the region to make it possible to eject them (as was ordered by the Proclamation of 1763), or to prevent their further increase.¹ Every year only multiplied the evidence that the Western country was fast and irretrievably losing its character as a mere Indian hunting-ground, and that settled civil government could not long be delayed.²

As to the dangerous and almost anarchial state of things throughout the West during the whole of this period we have abundant evidence. The official reports are full of complaints of the unsettled and inadequate state of government and of the impossibility of carrying on the fur-trade without constant friction and disorder.³ I cannot better state the situation than by quoting from the well-expressed report of a committee of the Quebec Council, April 24, 1769,⁴ drawn up as the result of an investigation called forth by complaints of the traders.⁵ This was after all pretence of control through a general superintendent had been withdrawn and each Province had been given power to frame regulations for its own traders. It begins by representing the great inconvenience and injury of the "situation and present condition of the places where this trade is carried on, and in which all regulations, whether made by this or any other Province, must of consequence have their operative influence. They are at present, as we understand, the subject of no civil jurisdiction whatever, without any internal principles of government within them-

¹ See Murray to Halifax March 9, 1764, where he speaks of these settlements as "certainly noble ones." (Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 73.) See also Houston, *Can. Const. Doc.*, p. 108, note 2.

² See petition for such a government, from inhabitants of the Illinois, June 27, 1773. *Cal. Hald. Coll.*, p. 203. Also Dartmouth to Gage concerning same. *Ibid.*, p. 232. This was an old French settlement; it was not to be expected that English settlers would be less forward in opposition to military government.

³ Advocate-General Marriott asserted in 1774 that for want of a good government since the Conquest, the trade was then only one-third of what it had been under the French. *Code of Laws*.

⁴ Can. Arch., Q. 6, p. 83.

⁵ For these complains see *Minutes* of the Quebec Council, Jan. 15 and March 2, 1768. They were directed mainly against the Provincial regulations then in being.

selves, nor annexed for the purposes of civil government to any Province which has; so that we are at a loss to conceive how any province in particular or all the separate jurisdictions in America combined, can form a system. . . . and give it binding effect upon persons casually residing in a country not liable to receive a law from them, or enforce obedience to it when formed." The inevitable result of the situation here outlined is briefly referred to by Dartmouth in a letter to Gen. Gage, of March 3, 1773, in which the latter is ordered to bring to England every thing required to explain "as well the causes as the effects of those abuses and disorders which in some of your former dispatches you say had prevailed to a great degree of enormity in that country."¹ The report of the Quebec Council proceeds to maintain that matters could not be remedied without Imperial action in the annexing of the whole of the trade region to some one of the existing civil governments, and contends that no plan of concerted colonial action, (such as New York shortly after proposed), could be satisfactory. There were the usual difficulties of the time in regard to such co-operation; but over and above these, it was made almost impossible by the fact that Quebec, the province most concerned, was in a radically different governmental and industrial position from its neighbors. In 1771 New York proposed a scheme of joint action by Pennsylvania, Quebec, and itself, which Quebec refused to accede to; Lt. Gov. Cramahé writing home on the subject, Oct. 31, 1771, that "the interest of the two Provinces [Quebec and New York] differ too widely to expect they will ever perfectly agree upon regulations."²

¹ *Cal. Hald. Coll.*, p. 232.

² *Can. Arch.*, Q. 8, p. 82. This is the occasion of the significant interference of Hillsborough against American Congresses which have I spoken of above (p. 339.) Cramahé, though recognizing earlier the peculiar interests of Quebec, seems to have been willing at first, through despair of other remedies, to join in discussing common measures. January, 1772, we find the Quebec Council in receipt of a more definite proposal for joint action from New York, and rejecting the same on the grounds, (1), that the Quebec government had no authority to take the financial measures involved, and (2), that the steps

It will then be seen that it might well appear to the home administration that no other step was open than the annexing of the territory to some existing civil government. To have kept it separate would have meant merely the continuance of a military or semi-military control, sure to be productive of even greater friction with the other Provinces and their traders, of increasing damage to the trade, and of more serious discontent on the part of the various small settled communities. And having reached this conclusion it was almost inevitable that the Imperial authorities should choose for this purpose the Province with which the region had been earliest and most closely associated, and to which it was believed by so many to belong,—that of Quebec.¹ The report of the Quebec Council quoted above, had been transmitted home; its main conclusion was the setting forth with considerable force the pre-eminent claims of Quebec to this acquisition. Whatever influence the state of affairs in the other Provinces exerted in this regard, we meet no trace of such influence in the confidential communications between the British and Canadian authorities. We have no reason to suspect the candour of Dartmouth in the letter above quoted, addressed as it was in the regular course of private correspondence

proposed would be detrimental to the Provincial trade. We have here mainly no doubt jealousy of the more powerful neighbor and apprehension at the inroads she was making in a branch of trade which had so long been Quebec's chief stay. Apart from the prohibition of the Minister, (which it is noteworthy, is not referred to), the Quebec Government had probably confidence that the old advantages would soon be restored to the Province by Imperial action. No further intercourse with the other colonies appears on the subject before the Quebec Act. How far the bearing on this matter of the provisions of the Quebec Act was instrumental in affecting the Revolutionary attitude of New York and Pennsylvania, as rousing their commercial anger and jealousy, would probably be worth a closer investigation. At least we have here no inconsiderable element in the general and profound dislike of the measure among the older Northern colonies. See the commercial aspect of the *Remonstrance* of the N. Y. Legislature, March 25, 1775. (Parl. Hist., XVIII, 650.)

¹ To attach it to any one other Province would be objectionable (we may reasonably assume the authorities to have felt), because of the various conflicting colonial claims in the West, sure to be aroused to the greatest activity by such a measure. Whereas the Government could, consistently with the Treaty, disregard all, and put the matter on another basis by giving it to Quebec. This would be at least a plausible line of argument.

to an official of long standing and known discretion. If other matters had been of weight in the Imperial councils there would seem to have been no reason for the careful concealment, and no possibility of the unintentional neglect, of them in this quarter.

On the other hand, although it is true that before the actual appearance of the Quebec Act we have no indication that the extension of the Province made by it had any connection whatever with the contemporary difficulties of government in the other colonies, and although it must be conceded that apart from such reference the Imperial authorities seem to have ample justification for that extension, yet it is undeniable that the considerations which excited the fears of the Continental Congress were put forward by supporters (as well as by opponents), of the measure, both in Parliament and outside. But this was not prominently done, at least at first; so incidentally indeed that in the whole of the spirited debates in both the Commons and Lords on the Quebec Bill in May and June, 1774, such references appear in the mouths of only two supporters of the Bill, and their utterances are apparently not specifically noticed by the opposition. One of these more candid or incautious speakers was Solicitor-General Wedderburne, who stated in the Commons that one of the objects of the measure was to deter Englishmen from settling in Canada, and that one of the great advantages of the extension of territory would be that the other inhabitants of North America "will have little temptation to stretch themselves northwards."¹ He added moreover, "I think this limitation of the boundary (i. e. of the older colonies) will be a better mode than any restriction laid upon govern-

¹Cavendish, *Report*, p. 53. Wedderburne was at this time one of the pillars of the Government in the Commons. But he was not responsible for the present Bill, and though in his official capacity supporting it as a whole, he plainly intimated that it had not his entire approval. The statement had been immediately preceded by the remark that he did not think that any temptation should be held out to natives of England to emigrate.

ment. In the grant of lands we ought to confine the inhabitants to keep them according to the ancient policy of the country along the line of the sea and river."

This statement as I have said seems to have excited no comment from either side of the House;¹ an oversight on the part of the opposition which is the more remarkable from the fact that several of their speakers hint darkly at "the secret designs" of the Bill, and taunt the Ministry with concealing their real motives,²—hints and taunts which elicited no reply. Lord North, the leader of the House, upheld the extension as made simply in the interests of the fisheries in the East and of security to life and trade in the West; though it will be seen that the preamble of the Act refers only for the Western territory to the need of civil government for the "several colonies and settlements." The enacting clause pays special attention to the northern and western boundaries of Pennsylvania as "granted by the Charter," beside making the provision "that nothing herein contained . . . shall in any wise affect the boundaries of any other colony;" but there is no reference to the Western claims of any of the Provinces. As first introduced the clause read very differently,— "all the said territories, islands and countries, extending southward to the banks of the river Ohio, Westward to the banks of the Mississippi . . . not within the limits of any other British colony, as allowed and confirmed by the Crown." A petition against this indefiniteness was presented by the Pennsylvania proprietaries, and Burke also objected in behalf of New York. Lord North professed every readiness to pay regard to both settled and unsettled boundaries, while declaring that the original intent had been to leave the fixing of more precise southern bounds to later local agreement; and on Burke's motion, representing that otherwise

¹ The chance reporters from whom the Parliamentary History of the period was compiled, seem also not to have heard it or to have not thought it worth while noting.

² *Cavendish*, pp. 1, 37, 85, 214 — pagings which refer to the beginnings of the speeches in which the references occur.

the Colonies would in this matter be left at the mercy of the executive, the established clause was substituted for the above.

When with this and other Amendments the bill went back to the Lords it was received by a small but spirited opposition, headed by Chatham. Its principal defender was Lord Lyttleton, who referred to the idea put forward by Chatham that Canada would at a future day be used as a proper instrument to quell British America, with the remark that he was not apprehensive of this, but that if the Americans were determined to persist in their rebellious course he saw no reason why Canada, with the rest of the Empire, should not be so employed; and that in such an event he regarded it as happy that the local situation of the Canadians was such that they might form some check to the "fierce fanatic spirits" of the other Provinces.¹ This however illiberal, does not apparently refer to this situation as one resulting from the provisions of the Quebec Act. Whatever the inference, this and the statement of Wedderburne quoted above are the strongest suggestions of hidden motives on this point, that, so far as I have discovered, appear at this time in the mouths of supporters of the Government. In the close tracing of the preliminary steps through the ten years preceding the Act I have met with no other evidence fitted in any degree to support the belief that the extension by it of the boundaries of Quebec was dictated by hostility to the growth and liberties of the other colonies other than that which may perhaps be said to mark every part of the colonial system. And whether these statements are fitted to support that belief will appear very doubtful to those who have entered into the spirit of that colonial system. Even if it should be established that they were not merely private and incidental utterances, but were really expressive of definite ideas and motives on the part of the originators of the Quebec Act, it will yet remain to be

¹ *Parliamentary History*, Vol. 17, p. 1402 *et seq.*

shown that they betoken a different standpoint than that occupied by the Board of Trade for some time back. Closely connected with that view of the interests of Great Britain which for a long time had inspired the hostility to colonial manufactures, for example, was a strongly rooted preference of shore to inland colonies; a preference based on the belief that the farther the colonists removed themselves from the ocean and the mother country, the more inevitably would they be led to manufacturing enterprises and the less easy would it be for Great Britain to restrain this activity. It was simply another aspect of the trade considerations which led to such emphasis being placed upon the conciliation of the savages; it cannot be shown to imply any new development of anti-colonial policy, or any insidious scheme of building up in the West new communities of alien social and governmental constitution, with the aim of being later used as instruments against the growth and liberties of the older colonies. By the ordinary colonial views of the older illiberal school the attitude of Wedderbourne and Lyttelton can I think be sufficiently explained.

And not their views alone; but also such parts of the Imperial policy in regard to the West as cannot be attributed to real solicitude for the Indian and for the safety of the colonies. For if I have been successful in presenting my point of view in the above, it will be already evident what position I take with regard to continuity of policy throughout this period in respect to the Western lands. I see no reason to agree with Hinsdale even in the more moderate assertion that "the Western policy of the British was not steady or consistent, but fitful and capricious;"¹ it seems to me that no inconsistency is to be detected between the policy that dictated the Proclamation of 1763,—a policy that was manifest as early at least as 1756,—and that which was expressed in the Quebec Act of 1774. It has been one

¹ *Old Northwest*, p. 141.

of my objects throughout this investigation to show the long course of weakness, ignorance, and procrastination that stretches between the acquisition of Canada and the final settlement of its constitution. These qualities are not entirely absent in the treatment of the matter under discussion; but that treatment nevertheless presents more consistency and firmness than we find in almost any other part of the dealing with the situation. The frequent changes of Ministry and Secretary seem to have affected the peculiar sphere of the Board of Trade less than any other part of the administration; simply, it is to be contended, because that Board was now acting on long established principles, applied to the new conditions as a matter of course, and only slowly giving way to the inevitable western changes. These are the principles of the old colonial-commercial policy; and no better expression of them can perhaps be found than in the words of the Board of Trade itself in 1768, in its adverse report with regard to the proposed new settlements at Detroit and in the Illinois country.¹ The significant part of this is as follows:

"The proposition of forming inland colonies in America is, we humbly conceive, entirely new. It adopts principles in respect to American settlements different from what has hitherto been the policy of this kingdom, and leads to a system which, if pursued through all its consequences, is, in the present state of that country, of the greatest importance.

The great object of colonizing upon the continent of

¹ Franklin's answer to Hillsborough, 1772 (*Works*, V. 55, Bigelow edition, 1887). For the report itself see its quotation by Hillsborough (*Ibid.* V. 5-12). For very interesting record of the progress of the scheme to which this was the death-blow, see letters of Franklin to his son, Sept. 27, 1766—March 13, 1768 (*Ibid.*, 138-45). This reference I owe to the unpublished monograph on western settlements of Mr. G. H. Alden of the University of Wisconsin. It exhibits Shelbourne, Secretary of State for the Southern Department when the scheme was first advanced (by Franklin and others), as decidedly favorable to it, together perhaps with some other officials. But Shelbourne was evidently in this as in some other matters, in advance of his time (see Fitzmaurice, *Shelbourne*, II, 31); the Board of Trade seems not to have wavered in its position, and Shelbourne's retirement in January 1768 in favor of Hillsborough, the chief representative of the opposite view, may perhaps not unreasonably be regarded as helped on by his heterodox liberalism. It is apparently the first vigorous shaking of the older policy; but that policy is still triumphant.

North America has been to improve and extend the commerce, navigation, and manufactures of this kingdom, upon which its strength and security depend.

1. By promoting the advantageous fishery carried on upon the northern coast.

2. By encouraging the growth and culture of naval stores and of raw materials, to be transported hither in exchange for perfect manufactures and other merchandise.

3. By securing a supply of lumber, provisions, and other necessaries, for the support of our establishments in the American islands.

In order to answer these salutary purposes, it has been the policy of this kingdom to confine her settlements as much as possible to the sea-coast, and not to extend them to places inaccessible to shipping, and consequently more out of the reach of commerce; a plan which at the same time that it secured the attainment of these commercial objects, had the further political advantage of guarding against all interfering of foreign powers, and of enabling this kingdom to keep up a superior naval force in those seas, by the actual possession of such rivers and harbours as were proper stations for fleets in time of war.

Such, may it please your Majesty, have been the considerations inducing that plan of policy hitherto pursued in the settlement of your Majesty's American colonies, with which the private interest and sagacity of the settlers cooperated from the first establishments formed upon that continent. It was upon these principles, and with these views, that government undertook the settlement of Nova Scotia in 1749; and it was from a view of the advantages represented to arise from it in these different articles that it was so liberally supported by the aid of Parliament.

The same motives, though operating in a less degree, and applying to fewer subjects, did as we humbly conceive, induce the forming the colonies of Georgia, East Florida, and West Florida, to the south, and the making those provincial arrangements in the proclamation of 1763, by which the interior country was left to the possession of the Indians."

Here we have, it will be seen, not only the constant reference throughout to a policy which is considered as of long standing, but the definite statement that this policy was directly acted upon by the government on an important occasion as early as 1749, and that it was operative in the arrangements of 1763. It is true that Hillsborough,

while quoting this statement with the fullest approbation, has just before spoken of "that principle which was adopted by this Board and approved and confirmed by his Majesty, immediately after the treaty of Paris, viz.: the confining the western extent of settlements to such a distance from the sea-coast as that, etc.;" but it is evident either that this is due to a confusion and heedlessness quite characteristic of the writer, or that it is a mere misuse of language, by the "principle" affirmed there being really meant only the new application of an old principle to conditions which had now for the first time fully presented themselves. In Franklin's reply to Hillsborough he accepts without question the definition of policy, and in proceeding to refer to the grant on the Ohio which had been approved in 1748, brings this forward, not to show that that policy was not then in operation, but on the contrary, going on the assumption that it *was* then in force, to show that the region in question did not come within its operation, because not in fact and not considered "without the reach of the trade and commerce of this kingdom."¹ It is clear that Franklin's argument on this matter is entirely without point unless it proceeds on such a basis. If the Board of Trade were not to be supposed to be animated by the principle in question as a general one, their action could show nothing with regard to the application of it to the region included within the grant of 1748.

But we have, it is said, evidence of inconsistency or different policy in the treatment of the more southern portion of the West in 1772 through the approval of the establishment of a new colony south of the Ohio, to be known as Vandalia. The inner history of this matter will show, however, that it cannot properly be so regarded. For whether or not this region was, as Franklin contends in the argument noted above, regarded as on a different basis

¹ *Works*, V. 32.

as early as 1748, it is very clear that it had so established itself by 1772. As early as 1764, Franklin tells us,¹ government contemplated the placing of it in a different position, as a part of the plan then under consideration for the regulation of the Indian trade; aiming by its purchase from the Indians to "establish with their consent, a respectable boundary line, beyond which his Majesty's subjects should not be permitted to settle." The negotiations then entered upon with the Indians were however delayed, and meanwhile, between 1765 and 1768 large numbers of settlers came into the region and brought about a critical state of things with the Indians. This hastened the action of the authorities, and the purchase was finally completed by the treaty of Fort Stanwix in November, 1768. That the home government had reconciled itself fully to settlement here and had made the purchase with such settlement in view, is shown (as was pointed out by Franklin),² by the reference in the Board of Trade Report quoted above to "the liberty that the inhabitants of the middle colonies will have (in consequence of the proposed boundary line with the Indians) of gradually establishing themselves backwards." ³ And yet it is this same Report, it will be remembered, which is drawn up for the purpose of making that strong re-statement of general colonial policy which has been quoted from above. So that for the Fort Stanwix region there would seem to be no question that Franklin is correct in stating⁴ that "the true reason for purchasing the lands comprised within that boundary were to avoid an Indian rupture, and give an opportunity to the king's subjects quietly and lawfully to settle thereon." Or, as he strongly puts it, that the proclamation which had reserved lands for the use of the Indians had lost its force with re-

¹ *Works*, V. 38.

² *Ibid.*, V. 55-6.

³ *Ibid.*, V. 10.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 43.

gard to that portion of these lands which the Indians by selling had shown they had no use for.¹

In 1768 therefore, government, while strongly re-enuciating the general Western policy, had just as clearly acknowledged that this policy was not to be applied to the region south of the Ohio.² This latter territory was now definitely deprived of that character which, in the ministerial mind, still remained attached to the more northern country, viz.: appropriation to the Indian as a hunting ground. Between 1768 and 1772 settlement continued to pour into the Ohio country to such an extent as to show beyond doubt that this character had departed for all time.³ So that in 1772, when the Walpole matter came up for final determination, it was not difficult for Franklin to make a triumphant case against the belated views of Hillsborough. The commercial policy had here yielded finally to the force

¹A hasty reading of this part of Franklin's paper might possibly give the impression that he minimizes or loses sight of the general principles of policy which inspired the Proclamation of 1763, and that he regards it as mainly intended to pacify and protect the Indians. Such a view I should regard either as an error, or as the misleading emphasis of a partizan brief. But I do not think Franklin is chargeable in either respect; for in a previous part of his paper (V. 32) he plainly declares that the definition of the policy of the Board in 1763 as laid down by Hillsborough, he will not "presume to controvert." And as I have shown above, his later argument is evidently based on the acceptance of the principles of the Report of 1763. In what he says as to the cessation of the force of the Proclamation through purchase from the Indians he has reference of course only to the lands south of the Ohio,—a region to which, he labors throughout to show, the principles of the established policy did not properly extend. Franklin was too good a debater to prejudice his case by going out of his way unnecessarily. And hence the reference to Mr. Grenville (V. 37) as having, with regard to the Proclamation, "always admitted that the design of it was totally accomplished as soon as the country was purchased from the natives," I can regard as quoted purely with reference to the country that had been purchased in 1768, and as not giving, or purporting to give, Grenville's views with regard to the policy or intent of the Proclamation as a whole. When the "admission" was made does not appear; the language would seem to show that it was subsequent to the purchase. But it will be remembered that the Grenville government had entered into negotiations for such a purchase (with regard only to the region south of the Ohio), as early as 1764. (*Franklin*, V. 38).

²It is probable that the unimportance of this latter territory with regard to the fur trade was of strong influence in bringing about this attitude. Franklin says that the Indians were willing to sell because they had no use for the lands "either for residence or hunting." (V. 37).

³Franklin asserted in 1772 that it was certain that at least 30,000 settlers were then there. (*Works*, V. 74.)

of circumstances, and the words in which the grant (Vandalia) was finally recommended by the Committee of Council must be looked upon as intended to show the reasons for this departure from what was still however the established policy. As stated by Franklin¹ these reasons were as follows:

"1. That the lands in question had been for some time past and were then in an actual state of settling, numbers of families to a very considerable amount removing thither from his said Majesty's other colonies.

"2. That the lands in question did not lie beyond all advantageous intercourse with the kingdom of Great Britain."

It is evident therefore that the grant of 1772 is neither a mark of inconsistency nor a sign of the overthrow of the old commercial-colonial policy with regard to the West. If circumstances had forced this step south of the Ohio, the Quebec Act two years later showed that there had been no such change with regard to the rest of the country. Though even this latter it would seem could not be regarded as purely as before as a mere fur region; it has been shown above that the modifying of the first ideas with regard to its disposition was doubtless partly due to the discovery that a degree of settlement had gone on even within it which could not be entirely disregarded.² It was not disregarded, but it was regarded as slightly as possible by the attachment of the whole region to Quebec.

A very notable pamphleteer of the year 1774³ forcibly sums up this matter. After stating that the Proclamation of 1763 was intended to be followed up a general plan of regulation for the Indian trade, he affirms, (as noted above),

¹ *Works*, X. 355.

² The preamble of the Quebec Act speaks of the several French colonies and settlements which by the Proclamation were left without civil government; (a petition for it had been received from at least one of them). Nothing is said of new settlement; but Dartmouth's letters show that it must have been known that it had steadily proceeded.

³ "The Justice and Policy of the late Act of Parliament for making some effectual provision for the Government of the Province of Quebec asserted and proved; and the conduct of Administration respecting that Province stated and vindicated." By Wm. Knox. Lond. 1774. Though unable to prove it, I believe this to have been inspired.

that the events of the year following proved fatal to the doing of this, as it was not thought expedient to lay that tax upon the trade by which the expense was to be deferred. "This was the reason that so large a part of the ceded territory in America was left without government, and that the new province of Quebec contained so small a portion of ancient Canada." The small French settlements in the region, he continues, were left under the military government of the posts, "as most likely to prevent an increase of inhabitants." But in the parts contiguous to the old colonies immigrants flocked in and forced the Indians to fall back; and as these new settlements were without civil jurisdiction and were every day increasing, "the case was judged to be without other remedy than that of following the emigrants with government and erecting a new Province between the Alleghany mountains and the river Ohio for that purpose." But to prevent a recurrence of the necessity it was resolved, (and done by the Quebec Act), to put the whole remaining region under the jurisdiction of the Government of Quebec, "with the avowed purpose of excluding all further settlement therein, and for the establishment of uniform regulation for the Indian trade." The Province of Quebec was preferred, "because the access by water is much easier from Quebec to such parts of this country as are the most likely to be intruded upon than from any other colony." Only under one uniform government could the Indian be protected, and thus be prevented "the quarrels and murders which are every day happening and which are the certain consequence of a fraudulent commerce." There seems no reason to doubt the substantial correctness of these assertions; especially when we find the Government despatching to Carleton with his new commission in 1775, as a guide in his dealings with the Indians and the Western trade, the identical regulations which had been drawn up by the Board of Trade in 1764.¹

¹ Can. Arch., *Instructions to Governors*. Appendix to Carleton's Instructions, 1775.

The writer is evidently speaking from the standpoint of the illiberal commercial-colonial policy; but it will be seen that he is apparently ignorant of any but trade motives for this part of the recent measure, and that he regards it as dictated by precisely the same policy as that which had produced the Proclamation of 1763. And this policy, I repeat in conclusion, was caused neither by the acquisition of Canada nor by the colonial troubles of the seventies. It was only a new application of that principle of commercial monopoly which, as Burke says, runs through twenty-nine Acts "from the year 1660 to the unfortunate period of 1764;" there is no ground whatever for connecting it, in origin or maintenance, with the special troubles in the other colonies, or with any sinister designs against these latter. A connection which, I need scarcely again observe, certainly cannot be made if the continuity of policy as between 1763 and 1774 be conceded.

But while defending the originators of the Quebec Act from the heavier reproach brought against them on this point, I do not wish to be understood as in the least defending the Western policy of the measure in itself. Disastrous as the Quebec Act proved, no part of it I think was more shortsighted or more disastrous than this treatment of the Western lands. Following up the Proclamation of 1763, it seemed an attempt to indefinitely maintain in the great heart of the continent, when apparently thrown open for Anglo-American expansion, the policy of monopoly and restriction against which the colonies on the coast were chafing so sorely. It was natural that the latter should imagine themselves threatened and impeded more malignly and seriously than could have proven to be the case; it was on this side, I have little doubt, that the Quebec Act figured most prominently amongst the colonial grievances. Great Britain might well seem to have become "the most active foe of the English race in Amer-

¹ Roosevelt, *Winning of the West*, I. 36. Though I have quoted this expression, I by no means agree fully with the way in which it is used by this writer. He attributes to

ica."¹ In this light I am inclined to emphasize strongly the importance of the Act in alarming and embittering the colonists.¹ They were not likely to stop and reflect that though the policy of the mother country apparently remained the same, that policy had already broken down in one important section of the new territory before the inrush of the pioneers, and that there was no probability that it would be any more permanent with regard to the remaining portions.

b. *Religion.* The second important provision of the Quebec Act was that noted one by which it was enacted that the professors of the Catholic faith within the Province "may have, hold, and enjoy the free exercise of the religion of the Church of Rome, subject to the King's supremacy, . . . and that the clergy of the established Church may hold, receive, and enjoy their accustomed dues and rights," in regard to such professors. At the same time the adherents of that Church were relieved from the oath of Supremacy established by Elizabeth on condition of taking a simple oath of allegiance. These are the provisions which move Lecky to describe the Act as marking an "epoch in the history of religious liberty," and which at the time moved the Continental Congress to express its astonishment that a British Parliament "should ever consent to establish in that country a religion that has deluged your island in blood, and dispersed impiety, bigotry, persecution, murder, and rebellion through every part of the world." We must examine these provisions in the light of the attitude of the Home and Provincial governments to the church throughout the period;

England a too conscious and special hostility, and dates it from the close of the war. His error seems mainly due to the apparent deficiency in grasp of the subject and consistency of view which is shown in the assertion elsewhere that the interests of Quebec, "did not conflict with those of our people or touch them in any way, and she had little to do with our national history and nothing whatever to do with the history of the West." (I. 28.)

¹ See in regard to this the *Remonstrance* of the N. Y. Legislature, Mar. 25, 1775, to the British Parliament on the subject of the Quebec Act. It is taken up almost wholly with this side of the measure. (*Parl. Hist.* XVIII, 650.)

and we shall find that on the one hand the framers of the Act had no purpose of "establishing" the Roman Catholic Church, and that on the other, the measure is by no means so notable from the standpoint of religious liberty as it has appeared.

The prominence of the religious element in Canada, and the position the Roman Catholic Church had so long occupied in secular matters as well, made the treatment of that church, and its future position, one of the most important and pressing of the problems that confronted the new Government. The conquerors were pledged by the Capitulation to full toleration of the Roman Catholic worship; though that instrument, promising to all religious communities the continued enjoyment of their property, had distinctly refused to assure the tithes or other dues of the secular clergy.¹ The pledge of toleration was incorporated in the IV. Art. of the treaty of Paris in 1763 by the following clause: "His Britannic Majesty on his side agrees to grant the liberty of the Catholic religion to the inhabitants of Canada; he will consequently give the most precise and effectual orders, that his new Roman Catholic subjects may profess the worship of their religion, according to the rites of the Roman Catholic Church, as far as the laws of Great Britain permit." This is identically the same stipulation, (in slightly different words), as that in the Treaty of Utrecht fifty years before;² but it will be noticed that strictly interpreted it does not seem at first sight to be the same concession as that made in the Articles of Capitulation. It is impossible to delay on the questions as to how far the strict interpretation of the then existing laws would have interfered with "the liberty of the Catholic religion," or how far those laws were at that time enforced at home or were

¹ Capitulation of Montreal, Art. 27, 34. Houston, *Can. Const. Documents*, pp. 45, 47.

² See Lecky, *History of England in the 18th Century*, I, as to the general resemblance of these treaties. See also Marriot, *Code of Laws*. It is rather curious that, though directly comparing the treaties, Mr. Lecky fails to see that the earlier one contains precisely the provision which he refers to as marking, fifty years later, an epoch of religious liberty.

valid in America.¹ Of rigid construction there was no real question in the case of Canada, and it will appear later that there is no evidence of the slightest attempt on the part of the British government throughout the period to interfere with full religious liberty, or with the establishments necessary for its effective maintenance. But that the above phrase, "as far as the laws of Great Britain permit," was by no means an unconsidered one, but was intended at least at first to have a very definite significance, is clearly shown by a very important communication from the Earl of Egremont, Secretary of State, to Murray, on the occasion of the latter's appointment to the new civil Government in Quebec (Aug. 13th, 1763).² The new governor is instructed in this that information has been received which causes a suspicion that the French have hopes of using the religious liberty promised the Canadians for the retaining through the clergy of their hold upon the people, and that he is therefore to be on his guard against any such attempts. The King, (the Minister continues), has no intention of restraining the Canadians in the free exercise of their religion, but the condition *as far as the laws of Great Britain permit* must always be remembered; these laws prohibiting absolutely "all Popish Hierarchy in any of the dominions belonging to the Crown of Great Britain." "This matter was clearly understood in the negotiations of the Definitive Treaty. The French Minister proposed to insert the words *comme ci devant*, in order that the Romish religion should continue to be exercised in the same manner as under their Government; and they did not give up the point until they were plainly told that it would only be deceiving them to admit these words, for the King had no power to tolerate

¹ It is perhaps worth noting that among the list of convicted criminals in Great Britain in 1771 is found the name of one John Baptist Maloney, who was sentenced to perpetual imprisonment for the crime of exercising the office of a Popish priest. He was afterwards pardoned on condition of leaving the country. *Calendar of Home Office Papers* 1770-2, No. 376.

² Can. Arch., Q. I. p. 117.

that religion in any other manner than *as far as the laws of Great Britain permit*. These laws must be your guide in any disputes that may arise on the subject." It is clear from this that the French Government desired the words *comme ci devant* to be inserted instead of the phrase in question, and that the object of that phrase was merely to deprive the Catholic religion of any legal status or hierarchy in the Province. Taken in this connection it will be seen that the Treaty was really intended to grant all that had been promised in the Capitulation.¹ And the principles thus clearly stated at the start, we find adhered to throughout the period with more vigor and consistency than can be discovered in any other part of the Canadian policy.

In the above letter Egremont goes on to advise Murray to give public notice that no new foreign priests would be allowed to remain in the country without Governmental permission, and also to require all ecclesiastics to take the oath of allegiance. The following October 25, Murray writes as to the general subject of religious policy, on the occasion of the transmission home of religious petitions,² which he reports as due to anxiety on the part of the Canadians as to the continuance of the priesthood. If this, he says, be provided for, they would part with the hierarchy without much reluctance; and he suggests a plan for having priests educated in Provincial seminaries as heretofore, and ordained abroad at the public expense,—a plan which

¹As to the opinion that the laws did not prohibit the free exercise of the Roman Catholic religion, and that it was at the discretion of the crown whether Catholics in the newly acquired colonies should be admitted to office and honors, see Att.-General Yorke's opinion concerning the position in regard to office of the Catholics in Grenada. (*Cal. Home Office Papers*, 1776-9, No. 403.) This opinion is further of great interest in view of the question as to the formation of an Assembly in Canada, and the admission of Roman Catholics to it. It states clearly that the statute requiring the transubstantiation test oath does not apply to the new possessions, and that his Majesty is the only judge in regard to the use of such. This should be considered in connection with the opinion of Lecky as to the importance of the Quebec Act in religious history. On the general question as to the position of Catholics see further, opinion of Thurlow and Wedderburne, (*Cal. Home Office Papers*, 1770-2, Nos. 659, 713); Report of Wedderburne, 1772 (*Christie, History of Lower Canada*, I. c. 2); Marriott, *Code of Laws*.

²See above, p. 234.

he thinks "the most feasible means of procuring a national clergy, without continuing a Bishop," and likely to give "universal satisfaction and make the Canadians in time forget their former connexions." To these suggestions Halifax (Jan. 14, 1764)² makes the guarded reply that he hopes soon to transmit definite directions on "that very important and difficult matter." We meet nothing further directly on this point, but that Murray's suggestions were not taken is shown by the fact that a Bishop for the province was allowed to be ordained in France in 1766, (the permission seems to have been given as early as 1764), and to proceed to Quebec in the same year; continuing there at the head of the church for the remainder of the period. There is some mystery about this transaction, and Masères asserts that the Bishop had only a verbal permission to assume authority, and that he was supposed to have promised to confine himself to the necessary and inoffensive duties of the office, (which promise, he adds, was not kept). The English government, according to Masères, was brought thus to "connive" at this evasion of the laws under the opinion that the step was necessary to secure to the Canadians the enjoyment of their religion without giving loopholes for the creeping in of foreign influences. But that this was regarded as only a temporary step is shown by a Board of Trade report on the state of Quebec, May 16, 1766, in which the "unsettled state of ecclesiastical affairs" is designated as the first of the matters requiring attention.³ In Oct., 1767, Carleton recommends the appointment of a coadjutor in order to obviate the necessity of having the Bishop consecrated abroad; a recommendation which the Secretary approved (March 6, 1768),⁴ but which was referred with others to the shortly expected regulations about religious matters in general. In 1772 however, the matter came

¹ Can. Arch., Q.1, p. 251.

² Ibid., Q. 2, p. 5.

³ Ibid., Q. 3, p. 53.

⁴ Ibid., Q. 5-1, p. 344.

up again in the absence of Carleton, and, like the appointment of the Bishop, seems to have been temporarily settled by another connivance, (in this case only of the Provincial government), at an evasion of the laws; the Lt. Governor writing (July 25, 1772), that as the Bishop had lately obtained "the requisite power for consecrating the coadjutor whom Gov. Carleton had pitched upon, I agreed to his performing the ceremony, but in a private way, because it was not the act of government, and to avoid giving a handle to busy and troublesome people."¹ To which Hillsborough replied, Sept. 2, 1772: "Your having permitted the person styling himself Bishop of Quebec to consecrate a coadjutor in consequence of power which you say he had received for that purpose, and which I presume must therefore mean from some foreign ecclesiastical authority, appears to me to be a matter of the highest importance, and the more so as I do not find upon the fullest examination that any authority whatever has at any time been given by His Majesty for the exercise within the colony of any powers of Episcopacy in matters relative to the religion of the Church of Rome."² Hillsborough was shortly after replaced by Dartmouth, and the latter writes Dec. 9, 1772 in a similar strain, declining to give any countenance to the late consecration of the coadjutor, and making the matter depend on the deliberations of the Privy Council then pending; though he adds that he will not undertake to say that the exercise of some Episcopal authority may not be necessary to *the toleration* granted.³

During the whole of the period the power of appointment to benefices resided in the Governor alone, having been first granted to Murray, in 1763. The instructions to Carleton in 1768 direct him "not to admit of any ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the See of Rome or any other ecclesias-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 160.

² Ibid., Q. 8, p. 166.

³ Ibid., p. 220.

tical jurisdiction whatever,"—an instruction which would seem to be in direct opposition to the continuance of the functions of a French ordained Bishop. Another article ordered him to provide for the gradual settlement of Protestant clergymen; and it was no doubt as a following up of this that in July 1768 a mandate was issued to him to appoint under commission two such to the parishes of Quebec and Three Rivers, to enjoy the same during life, "with all rights, dues, profits and privileges thereunto belonging in as full and ample manner as the ministers of churches in any of our colonies in America."¹ But Carleton, viewing this as a "stile of office" due to carelessness, remonstrated against it as extending, in the opinion of the Provincial lawyers, "to dispossess the people of their private churches and their clergy of their tithes and all parochial dues," and gave the clergymen simply licenses to preach, with a right to such dues only as should arise from Protestants under the laws relating to the Church of England.² This action was apparently approved of by the home Government, the Secretary writing that there had been no intention of authorizing the general demand of tithes,³ as had been shown by the attachment of a stipend out of the general revenue.

On the verge of the Quebec Act, Dec. 1st, 1773, Dartmouth writes that the coming settlement will give all satisfaction to the new subjects on the head of religion, but on such a basis that all foreign jurisdiction shall be abolished and the Province itself made equal to the supplying of all the essentials to free worship in the true spirit of the treaty.⁴ The settlement thus foreshadowed—that of the Quebec Act,—viewed in the light of the policy thus clearly maintained down to its enactment, cannot be said to depart from it, the Article (5th) which provides for "the free

¹ Masères, *Commissions*, p. 148-52.

² Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, p. 726-730.

³ *Ibid.*, Q. 5-2, p. 756.

⁴ *Ibid.*, Q. 9, p., 157.

exercise of the religion of the Church of Rome," expressly adding, "subject to the King's supremacy declared and established by an Act made in the first year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth." Nor can it be regarded as "establishing" the Roman Catholic Church in any sense in which the Church of England was not also established. For the only new privilege bestowed on the Roman Catholic clergy is comprised in the phrase, "the clergy of the said Church may hold, receive, and enjoy their accustomed dues and rights in respect to such persons only as shall profess the said religion,"—a phrase which has always been interpreted as implying the re-establishment of compulsory tithes; while the next article goes on to make provision for the applying "of the rest of the said accustomed dues and rights" (i. e. the tithes of Protestants), to the support and encouragement of the Protestant religion. And that the intent of the framers of the Act did not reach even to thus equalizing the two Churches is clearly shown by the ensuing instructions to Carleton 1775. The 20th Article enjoins him to remember "that it is a toleration of the free exercise of the religion of the Church of Rome only to which they [the new subjects] are entitled, but not to the powers and privileges of it as an established Church, which belongs only to the Protestant Church of England." The 21st Article further forbids all appeals to or correspondence with any foreign ecclesiastical jurisdiction, makes government license essential in every case to the exercise of Episcopal or parochial functions, and conditions the holding of all benefices on good behavior. I cannot here enter fully into the legal question of the peculiar relative positions thus apparently granted the two churches; it must be left with the remark that it is the very evident intention of the Administration, as shown in the Governor's instructions and elsewhere, to make the Church of England *theoretically* the Established Church for the whole Province, and effectually so wherever the field was not already in

possession of or could be gradually secured from, the Church of Rome. Thus provision is made that a Protestant minister should be appointed to any parish in which the majority of the inhabitants should solicit it, and that the appointee should receive "all tithes payable in such parish;" as also that all rents and profits of vacant benefices should be applied to the support of a Protestant clergy.¹ Any introduction of, or correspondence with, foreign ecclesiastical jurisdictions, was strictly prohibited, no Episcopal or Vicarial powers being allowed to be exercised by Roman Catholics except such as were indispensably necessary to the free exercise of religion. And even these were to be exercised only by Governmental license "during our will and pleasure," in correspondence with "the spirit and provisions of the Quebec Act;" such license being made essential to all ordination or holding of benefices. Benefices were to be conferred only on Canadians born, and the Governor and Council had power of suspension in case of criminal offenses or of treason.

These provisions show in brief that the determination to allow none but strictly *religious* privileges to the Church of Rome in the Province, which had been insisted upon in the Treaty of Paris, was not less strongly incorporated in the Quebec Act and its accompaniments; and therefore, that instead of that Act being the complete surrender to the Church of Rome it appeared to Protestant contemporaries and has often been represented since, that Church was granted no new privileges beyond the *securing* to it of support *from its own adherents*. It was a change that affected only these adherents, changing for them a voluntary into a compulsory burden; a change the political results of which will be elsewhere discussed.² Briefly it seems prac-

¹ It will be seen that both of these provisions discriminate in favor of the Church of England against the Church of Rome; the latter not being allowed under any circumstances to take tithes from Protestants or to receive anything from vacant benefices, which remained wholly at the disposal of the Protestant executive.

² See below, Chapter VI. A.

tically accurate to put the matter thus: The tithe was by the Act attached to all land as a state exaction, that portion of it paid by adherents of the Roman Catholic Church being applied to the support of the Roman Catholic clergy, the remainder, at the discretion of the Government, to the support of a Protestant clergy. But the ensuing instructions to the Governor, (apparently without authorization in the Act),¹ further divert to the benefit of the Protestant Church *all* the profits of vacant benefices, and *all* the tithes of parishes where the majority of the inhabitants were or should become Protestant.

What light do the debates on the Act throw on these arrangements? On the whole they lead to no conclusion opposed to those drawn from the examination of the earlier policy. But they do not increase our estimation of the care or the clear-sightedness of the framers of the bill. As first introduced the religious enactment embraced only the 5th Art. of the final Act, no mention thus being made of the Protestant Church, and no limitation being placed on the clause "subject to the King's supremacy." Considerable battle raged around the question as to whether or no the Roman Catholic Church was really established. Lord North maintained that no more was done than was required by the Treaty with regard to the free exercise of the faith, and that Papal authority in the Province would certainly not be permitted;² the Solicitor General stated that he could see no more in the bill than a toleration, with the clergy made dependent on the State rather than on the people.³ In answer to the charge that nothing had been done for the Protestant Church Lord North brought into the committee the amendment in favor of that Church which forms Art. VI of the Act, characterizing this as an establishment. Some further debate took place as to the

¹ It would seem as if Wedderbourne the Solicitor General was responsible for at least the latter clause. See Cavendish, *Report*, p. 218.

² *Cavendish*, p. 10.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 54.

royal supremacy¹ and at the next sitting the Government brought in the amendment which forms Art. VII, and which apparently goes far to nullify the "supremacy" clause of Art. V. This however was undoubtedly considered as necessary to full toleration and as not diminishing the hold of government over the Church,² and was agreed to without a division.³ It is probable that the conciliatory and hazy attitude of the Government on this part of the bill was due to a consciousness of the strong position of the opposition from a popular standpoint. This aspect of the situation was wittily referred to by Barré in a passing reference⁴ to the rumored impending dissolution of Parliament. "People may say" he remarked, "upon its dissolution as they did after the death of King Charles, that by some papers found after its decease, there is great reason to suspect that it died in the profession of the Roman Catholic religion." A privy councillor retorted that the parallel at least held good in the circumstance that the dying Parliament, like the dying Catholic, was "attended by a number of troublesome people, disposed to put many troublesome questions."

The above examination will cause it to appear very doubtful if the position of the Church was really much improved by the enactment, supposing the latter to be rigidly applied. Apart from the effects with regard to the attitude of the people referred to above, there were new elements indeed of positive disadvantage. The

¹ In which occurred one of the most violent attacks on the "secret designs" of the bill that we meet with. The assailant was Barré, who pointed to the indulgences given the Roman Catholics as confirming his suspicions, and warned the Government that "if you are about to raise a Popish army to serve in the colonies,—from this time all hope of peace in America will be destroyed. . . . I smelt out this business from the beginning." Thurlow, who followed the irate Colonel, took no notice whatever of the insinuation. *Cavendish*, p. 228.

² As shown above by the later instructions to the Governor.

³ *Cavendish*, pp. 250-1. When the Bill went back to the Lords this last amendment however received the especially hostile notice of Lord Chatham, who declared it offensive as an attack on the Great Charter or the Bill of Rights. Lord Lyttleton replied forcibly that full toleration could not exist without the clause.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 239.

clergy were now legally assured of support; but that support, we are frequently told,¹ had been, since the conquest, quite as assured by the voluntary contributions of a pious people, over the recalcitrant of whom might still be exercised, in the generally hazy state of the ecclesiastical powers, a great share of the many-sided authority so abundantly wielded under the old régime. Now however the Quebec Act had strictly and narrowly defined the real position and power of the Church; it had stripped it of nearly every vestige of its old temporal prestige, and of every right of pretension to any but a strictly religious status. Further, this Act had in all probability actually diminished the revenues of the Church; for it had deprived it entirely not only of all right to dues from benefices unfilled, (and the filling of vacancies was in the hands of a Government ordered to lose no opportunity of securing the advancement of the Protestant religion,² to whose benefit the receipts from such vacancies were to be appropriated), but also of all right to dues from any parish in which a majority of Protestants might become settled. It must therefore appear that the apprehensions of the Continental Congress as to the establishment of the Popish worship were unfounded; that the position and prospects of the Church through the new legislation, especially when viewed in that connection with the previous policy and the accompanying instructions which shows its intent and the spirit in which it would be administered, were not such as to give evidence of an exceptional liberality which could be explained only by sinister designs against the other colonies.³

¹ Expressly and frequently asserted in Quebec Act debate. These statements must be considered very cautiously it is true; but yet there seems no reason to believe that the Church had not been sufficiently supported through the period.

² For the intent of the Government on this point see *Cavendish*, p. 219.

³ The above examination of the intentions and early measures of the British Government with regard to the Roman Catholic Church in Canada should be considered in connection with the later position assumed by that Church. This later position has no sufficient support in the Quebec Act, but has been acquired since, in direct opposition to some of its most important provisions, as a very important part of that long course of

Further light will be thrown on this matter by considering the parallel course of the Imperial authorities in the Island of Granada. This, with some neighboring islands, conquered in 1762, had been ceded to Great Britain in 1763 "in full right . . . with the same stipulations in favor of the inhabitants . . . inserted in the IV. Art. for those of Canada."¹ The Royal Proclamation of October, 1763, had named the Government of Granada as the fourth of the new Governments to which that Proclamation was intended to apply; and civil commissions were made out for it similar to those in the case of Quebec. But its later fortunes had diverged markedly from those of the latter Province, in that the Assembly promised by the proclamation and directed by the commissions was actually called together and constituted in 1765, at which time "none of the French Roman Catholic inhabitants claimed a right or even expressed a desire of becoming members, either of the Council or Assembly."² This body, evidently entirely English-speaking in composition, acting on the same assumptions as to the introduction of English law as the same party in Quebec,³ proceeded at once to pass "an Act for regulating

revived French development of which the Quebec Act was the basis. In other words the assumptions from which that measure proceeded, and the position in which it placed the Province with reference to the new English element, were made by the Church the starting-point of a brilliant course of aggrandizement; that Church becoming therein identified with the revived national feelings and forces whose growth bore it in turn triumphantly forward. A full comment on this is of course impossible; but it will be instructive to notice the words of the most authoritative of modern French Canadian constitutional writers. "La réserve de la suprématie spirituelle du roi d'Angleterre semble avoir été mise dans le statut de 1774 et les instructions royales qui suivirent pour la forme. Elle resta lettre morte. Les représentants du pouvoir comprirent que toute tentative pour l'imposer à la colonie resterait sans succès. L'acte constitutionnel [in 1791], n'en parle pas." (Lareau, *Hist. Droit Canadien*, II, 140). It was at the period of the war of 1812 that the preponderating position of the Church was finally and firmly secured. By that time it had again in reality taken possession of the once almost emancipated French Canadian, and could make its own terms with the government which seemed so dependent upon his loyalty.

¹ Treaty of Paris, Art. IX.

² Edwards, *History of the British Colonies in the West Indies*, I, p. 62 (Phila., 1806).

³ See the almost contemporary action of the Grand Jury in Quebec, especially with regard to the protest against the privileges granted to Roman Catholics. The "old subject" element in the Provinces is identical in spirit and aims, with the difference

the elections of the general Assembly of Grenada and the Grenadines, and for the better ascertaining of the electors and elected," which required all members of the Assembly to subscribe the Declaration against Transubstantiation,¹ (no such restriction being placed on the franchise evidently). On the protest of the French inhabitants,² the Board of Trade intervened against this and other Acts of the same body, by a Report made March 4, 1768, in which they condemn the above Act as tending "to give disgust and dissatisfaction to your Majesty's new subjects," and state that the test there required "is not (as we conceive) extended to the colonies by any Act of Parliament, and is a qualification the enforcing of which is entirely left to your Majesty's discretion." This recommendation is evidently based on the opinion of Attorney-General Yorke, to whom the case had been referred,³ and as the result the following year the Governor of the Island received royal instructions to admit Roman Catholics into both Council and Assembly as well as into the commission of the peace, without the taking of the test oath against transubstantiation.⁴ This, through the unbending attitude of the Protestant party, gave rise to such bitter political contests that

that in Grenada it proved more uncompromising and intolerant. This distinction is doubtless due to the facts, (1) that representative Government had been put in force in Grenada and thereby the direct control of the executive greatly lessened, (2) that in Grenada the British were relatively a much stronger element. In 1771 the white population of the Island was about 1,600, (the slave population being nearly 40,000), of which, considering the analogy of Quebec, a very considerable section must in 1775 have been English speaking. (*Edwards*, I. 74).

¹ See an anonymous Pamphlet entitled "Observations upon the Report made by the Board of Trade against the Grenada Laws." (W. Flexney, London, 1770). This is ably written, from the standpoint of the British party in the Province, and contains the Board of Trade Report almost in full apparently. I have not been able to find it elsewhere.

² *Cal. Home Office Papers*, 1766-9, No. 403.

³ *Ibid.* It is uncertain from this entry whether the date assigned, (Jan. 12, 1767), is that of the reference or that of the advice. The form of the statement of the case would seem to show that the referrers were decidedly leaning to the opinions maintained in Mr. Yorke's answer. The reference is endorsed, "your opinion on this case is much wanted." See note above on this opinion, p. 435.

⁴ *Edwards*, *West Indies*, I. 62. Southey, *West Indies*, II. 335.

representative government remained practically suspended throughout the rest of the century. Yet the Crown persistently refused to revoke the objectionable instructions, notwithstanding the strong constitutional arguments brought against them.¹ As to the general treatment of the Roman Catholic Church in Grenada, we find as in Canada, that the treaty engagement of full toleration was liberally carried out; and it would seem moreover that it was not till 1783 that any step was taken to interfere with the established interests of the Church of Rome or to further those of the Church of England, the act of that date still providing "some allowance . . . for the benefit of the tolerated Romish clergy."² It is thus evident that the liberal attitude of the Imperial government with regard to the Roman Catholic Church was not peculiar to Quebec, but that it had been initiated earlier and extended further in a non-continental Province,—one which could not be supposed as ever likely to be in a position to affect political conditions among the older colonies,—than in that one where the policy was regarded as inspired by deep hostility to those English-American political institutions with which the Protestant church was supposed to be especially identified.

The only conclusion we can draw therefore on this point, is the one to which we have been led by our examination of the earlier policy; namely that in the measures of 1774 with regard to the Roman Catholic Church in Canada the home government was influenced mainly or solely by the

¹ For these see the pamphlet of 1770 referred to above. There would seem to be no doubt, notwithstanding the opinion of Mr. Yorke, that the action of the Crown in this matter was, constitutionally, altogether indefensible, and indirectly so declared by the Mansfield judgment of 1774. And it is well to note here what I shall probably refer to again, that the consciousness of this may in all likelihood be discerned behind the refusal to take similar action, even through Parliament, in the case of Quebec before or at the time of the Quebec Act. It is rather curious that no pertinent reference to the Granada case is found in the Quebec Act debates; though that the action of the Government was carefully observed in Quebec itself is to be seen from the petition of the English-speaking party there in 1773.

² Edwards, *West Indies*, I, 72.

necessity of maintaining its treaty obligations, and by the desire to protect a conquered and docile people from the intolerance of a political party which it believed to be identified in spirit and aim with the objectionable elements in the older colonies. That this latter was a subsidiary and minor motive, and that, on the other hand, there was no general spirit of religious liberality in action, is shown by the fact that the general liberal attitude and the particular measures alike, were confined to those provinces with regard to which treaty obligations existed. The "case" submitted to Yorke in 1767 begins with a distinct statement that "in the Leeward Island, Barbadoes and Jamaicas, they do not admit a person to be of the Council, Assembly, or a justice of the Peace" except on subscription to the declaration against transubstantiation; yet nothing in the way of alleviation was done or hinted at in regard to these cases. I can therefore see no sufficient ground for Lecky's reference to the Quebec Act as marking "an epoch in the history of religious liberty." It is true that by that Act, as in the Grenada instructions, more was given than was called for by the Treaty obligations; but these additional privileges were far more political than religious in their origin and intent. In the case of Quebec, full political privileges were denied expressly on religious grounds.

As to the measure of toleration accorded throughout the period to the Roman Catholic worship, there can be no doubt that it was complete. The faithful and even generous observance of the Treaty on this point is frequently acknowledged in the native petitions and calls forth the censure of the Protestant element. Further, whatever may have been the suggestions of individuals, no encroachments were made on the property or privileges of the Church during the period. Masères expressly asserts that the churches and chapels were left entirely in the hands of the Catholics (town Protestants borrowing them on

Sunday for an hour), their priests in possession of the glebe lands and parsonages, and all old ceremonies and even processions continued without molestation.¹ And though the assertions of the same writer as to the pomp and importance gradually assumed by the Bishop and the use by him of excommunication, etc., seem² undoubtedly an exaggeration, it is evident that the confidence of the clergy and people in the good faith of the conquerors and in their liberal interpretation of the privileges promised, steadily increased. The genuineness of religious toleration is sufficiently proved by the fact that the only complaints in regard to the matter that we meet with are the protests of the noblesse against their own exclusion from public employments through the oaths required of all officials. The requirement of these subsisted unaltered through the whole period, they being given a prominent place in Carleton's instructions of 1768. But considerable latitude must have been allowed with regard to them in the case of minor officials, for we find several of the smaller offices in the possession of French Canadian Catholics. We have also seen above that Catholics were admitted throughout the period on juries and to the practise of the law,— an indulgence violently condemned by the English grand jurors of 1764, as contrary to the constitution. Outside of these few exceptions however, the religious oaths excluded the French Canadians from all civil and military employments, including the Council and the possible Assembly. The real importance of this exclusion is with regard to its influence (elsewhere discussed), upon the establishment of representative institutions.

¹ Carleton distinctly confirms this by saying that the Bishop had of his own will lessened the number. (Can. Arch., Q. 6, p. 54). Some interesting testimony on this matter will be found in the introductory memor to the *Life of John Carroll*, (Md. Hist. Soc., 1876, pp. 30-34). It is there asserted that Carroll's mission in 1776 to the Canadian clergy failed because of their entire satisfaction with the treatment of the Church by the British authorities; a conspicuous instance of the latter's attitude being afforded by the statement of the Canadian clergy that the "government actually furnished a military escort to accompany the grand procession on the festival of Corpus Christi."

² See letter of Carleton just referred to.

Though not of much interest to us now, a prominent part of the problem connected with the treatment of the Church of Rome in the Province had reference to the communities of regular clergy, and especially the Jesuits. These communities however were not an essential part of the religious organization, and had not the hold upon the people which would make their fate a matter of national concern.¹ Nor was Great Britain's attitude toward the Jesuits different than that of contemporary powers, Catholic and Protestant. Their great power under the old régime has been graphically described by Parkman; but it had been declining for some time previous to the conquest, and at this time the vigor and possessions of the Society were much inferior to those of the Sulpitians or Recollets at Montreal,—an order which was much more favourably looked upon by the government from the first. The 34th Art. of the capitulation of Montreal would seem indeed (unless it is to be construed in connection with the preceding one), to promise the possession of their property to all the communities; but, though the Order was not suppressed till 1773, it is evident that the home Government from the first looked upon the possessions of the Jesuits as its own. At the beginning of the civil government Murray was directed to prevent further additions to it or to the other orders,—a direction which was repeated more positively later and strictly followed through the whole period. In the instructions to the Receiver-General in 1766 he is ordered, "whereas the lands of several religious societies in the said Province, particularly those of the Society of Jesus, are, or will become, part of His Majesty's revenue," to endeavour by peaceful agreement to get these into his present charge in order to prevent any losses thereto. In 1767 Shelbourne writes² that the property of the Jesuits, (which has been represented as producing £4,000 per annum), "must become on their demise a very considerable

¹ See Murray's Report, 1762.

² To Carleton, November 14. (Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 298.)

revenue to the Province, in case His Majesty should be pleased to cede it for that purpose." To which Carleton replies¹ that the order he is convinced is in reality poor, their lands yielding very little and their total income being given by themselves as 22,658 livres, from which they have 19 persons to support. All the legal opinions of the time supported the view that the property held by the Jesuits had become legally vested in the Crown; and in the instructions to Carleton of 1775 it is declared that the Society is "suppressed and dissolved and no longer continued as a body corporate and politic, and all their rights, possessions and property shall be vested in us for such purposes as we may hereafter think fit to direct and appoint." But the remaining members of the order in Canada were to be supported out of this property for the rest of their lives, and it was not till the death of the last one in 1800, that the lands actually came into full use as part of the state revenue.

c. *Civil Law.* The third feature of the Quebec Act which requires our consideration is that one which is described in the Declaration of Independence as the "abolishing the free system of English law." It is expressed in that clause of Art. VIII which directs that "in all matters of controversy relative to property and civil rights resort shall be had to the laws [and customs] of Canada as the rule for the decision of the same, . . . until they shall be varied or altered by any Ordinance that shall from time to time be passed in the said Province." This provision was modified by Art. IX, directing that all royal land grants, past or future, in free and common soccage, should be exempt from its operation, and by the provision of Art. X, that the execution and administration of wills should proceed, at discretion, according to either English or French law

A reference to the former discussion as to the adminis-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, p. 590; Q. 6, p. 109.

tration of justice in the Province throughout the period¹ will be sufficient to show the inaccuracy of the word "abolishing" in regard to the effect of this clause; further on I shall examine the above modifying provisions in the light of later instructions and enactments, with a view to determining how far English law was now abandoned or excluded. My object at present is to scrutinize this provision in the light of previous policy, with regard especially to that origin in and reference to the momentary relations with the other colonies so freely asserted by the revolutionary leaders. It is evident that these leaders held the same views concerning the intent and legal effect of the Proclamation of 1763 and the accompanying documents as did the English-speaking party in Canada. In the general treatment of the matter above there was quoted that remarkable statement from Hillsborough of the absence of any intention of the overturning of French law on the part of the framers of these documents. This emphatic testimony is supported from other sources, and must be taken at least to show that, even at the beginning, there was no deliberate, intelligent purpose of suddenly substituting English for French law. The acts of omission or commission from which such an inference was drawn may be much more reasonably explained as evidences only of ignorance, neglect, and indecision. But this state of affairs cannot be held to have continued longer than the first two years of civil government (1764-6). The administration in the province had soon become convinced that any violent assimilation of the laws and customs of Canada to those of the other provinces was radically unjust and impolitic, if not also impossible. This conviction we find expressed in protests to the home government, and in increasingly liberal interpretations of the documents by which the Provincial officials felt themselves trammelled. Murray writes March 3, 1765, to the Board of Trade concerning the great

¹ See above, Chapter III, Section C.

difficulties which occur "in establishing the English laws in this colony," and proceeds to a general description of the state of the colony "where the English laws are to be established," in which he displays a marked sympathy with the French and a strong distaste for the task which he thinks has been laid upon him.¹ This representation does not seem to have been effectual in eliciting any definite or different explanation of the Proclamation of 1763, or any general statement of policy which would have let the provincial government feel at liberty to change its aims; but it was probably taken into account in the new instruction in the spring of 1766 by which the slight indulgences granted the Canadians in the Judiciary Ordinance of Sept., 1764, were approved and extended. Doubtless also it had a strong influence in stirring up the home authorities to the beginning of the first serious investigation into the problems of civil government in Canada,—an investigation which as I have elsewhere shown came to a definite head in 1767, but which did not bear full fruit till 1774. For the present, however, the provincial government seems to have been still left in the dark, and it is evident indeed that down to the new administration in September, 1766, there had been received in the Province no definite intimation of any radical change in the views and aims of the home executive.²

But that before this date such a change had to a large extent occurred we learn from other sources. Or rather we should say that the home authorities had before this time, whether by the representations of the Colonial officials, by the introduction of new blood, or by other causes, been awakened out of the ignorance and neglect which had allowed the main documents relating to the Province to be couched in the most vague and misleading language, and the mi-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 2, p. 377.

² See Can. Arch., Q. 3, p. 249. Also the Commission of Chief-Justice Hey, Sept., 1766. (Masères, *Commissions*, pp. 124-8). The failure to fully inform the Provincial Government is probably to be explained in part by the fact that it had been resolved to recall Murray.

nor documents to be made out mainly on the lines of official routine established through dealings with the other colonies. The letter from Murray which I have quoted above is dated March 3, 1765, and on the September 2 following we find the first indication of attention to the subjects there suggested in the shape of a Board of Trade report to the Privy Council, signed by four names, the first being that of the Lord Dartmouth who as Colonial Secretary engineered the Quebec Bill nine years later. Unfortunately we have not any full copy or satisfactory abstract of this, and are obliged to depend for our somewhat vague information as to its recommendations on a supplementary Report of the Crown lawyers (Yorke and De Gray), of April 14, 1766. This latter¹ states as one of the main sources of disorder in the Province, the alarm taken at the construction put upon the Proclamation of 1763, "as if it were the Royal intention, by the judges and officers in that country, at once to abolish all the usages and customs of Canada with the rough hand of a conqueror rather than in the true spirit of a lawful sovereign,"² and refers to the Report of the Board as ably applying itself to the remedying of this grievance. Then, after discussing the subject of the constitution of the courts, they proceed to consider the proposal in the report, "that in all cases where rights or claims are founded on events prior to the conquest of Canada, the several courts shall be governed in their proceedings by the French usages and customs which have hitherto prevailed in respect to such property;" approving of it as far as it goes, but proceeding to maintain that in *all* matters affecting the possession or transfer of real property, "it would be oppressive to disturb, without much and wise deliberation, and the aid of laws hereafter to be enacted in the Province, the local customs and usages now prevailing

¹ Smith, *History of Canada*, II., 27-38 (Quebec, 1815).

² A reference which it will be noticed does not go so far as to deny that abolition in some degree or manner was intended by the Proclamation, or that the terms of it would not admit of such an interpretation.

there.¹" This it will be seen, is a very decided advance on the Board of Trade's first plan, which, though of a very indefinite scope, manifestly had still lingering behind it the idea which lay at the base of the earlier documents, viz.: that Canada was eventually to become thoroughly an English province ruled by English law. That the advance was not unfavorably received by the Board may be inferred from a communication from it to the Privy Council June 24, 1766, transmitting a "draught of particular instructions for the Governor of His Majesty's Province of Quebec, for the establishing of courts of judicature in that Province," which they state to be drawn up according to their previous report, *supplemented by the suggestion of the Crown lawyers.*² These instructions do not immediately appear, nor do we find anything further as to the Quebec judicature or laws till June 20, 1767, when Shelbourne writes to Carleton that the improvement of the Quebec civil constitution "is under the most serious and deliberate consideration," especially of the Privy Council; the main problem being, "how far it is practicable and convenient to blend the English with the French laws in order to form such a system as shall at once be equitable and convenient both for His Majesty's old and new subjects, in order to the whole being confirmed and finally established by authority of Parliament."³ The *deliberate* character at least of the course taken is fully established by the next document we meet. This is a Privy Council resolution of August 28, 1767, adopting the report of the Committee appointed to consider the draught of instructions submitted by the Board of Trade June 24th, 1766.⁴ The report was to the effect that the doc-

¹ It will be remembered that in their use of the term "customs and usages" the English lawyers have no doubt in mind in great part what occupied a position corresponding to that of the common law of England. The word *now* should be noticed here also, in connection with the argument above as to the practical maintenance of the French law. This was in 1766, and certainly no disturbance of that law occurred later.

² Can. Arch., Q. 3, p. 171.

³ Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 129.

⁴ Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 327.

ument submitted by the Board of Trade was too general and too unsupported by specific proofs of grievances to be approved without further information; especially as no explicit complaint had of late been received from the Colonial officials; and that therefore full reports and recommendations as to the alleged judicial defects should first be obtained from these officials, "it being unwise and dangerous to the Province to frame or reform laws in the dark." In accordance with these proceedings Shelburne in the following December directed Carleton to institute a specific investigation, and an Under-Secretary was at the same time commissioned to go out and join in the same.¹ And having thus decently shelved the subject, the Home Government, busy with other matters, awaited with great equanimity the appearance of the reports.

But before the news of this step had been received by Carleton, he had with characteristic energy and decision made up his mind as to the solution of the matter, and December 24, 1767 had sent to Shelburne an abridgement of the civil laws of Canada in use at the conquest, with recommendation that for the present they should be continued almost entire, to be altered by future Ordinances as might seem fit. As a beginning or model he submitted for approval a draft of a proposed Ordinance, for "continuing and confirming the laws and customs that prevailed in the Province in the time of the French Judicature, concerning the tenure, inheritance, and alienation of land."² The answer to this was the letter from Hillsborough of March 6, 1768, quoted from above,³ which states that the proposed Ordinance has been approved by the King, though it is to be held in reserve pending a general settlement, and which therefore shows conclusively that more than six years before the Quebec Act, the Home Government, uninfluenced,

¹ For his instructions, see *Can. Arch.*, Q 4, p. 331.

² *Can. Arch.*, Q. 5-1, pp. 316-313.

³ P. 387.

so far as we can discover, by anything except the representations made as to the state of the Province, had resolved to go at least as far as that Act went. But there were still the reports ordered to wait for,¹ and meanwhile the stationary condition of affairs² is shown in the Instructions of Carleton, August, 1768, which, though going into minute directions as to forms of legislation, make no reference to the all-important question as to how far that legislation should be based on English or on French codes.

The investigation ordered was entered upon vigorously by the provincial Government. It is significant to note the anticipation of that government as to the result, (even before the receipt of the letter of March 6th from Hillsborough), as shown by a Minute of Council of March 28, 1768, to the effect that a committee was appointed on that day to take from the old French laws such extracts "as may appear to them necessary to make a part of the future regulations of the Province."³ The reports were transmitted in September, 1769, the main one embodying Carleton's views, and minor ones giving the dissenting opinions of the Chief-Justice and Attorney General. Though the original documents are not to be found, we have other means⁴ of arriving pretty accurately at the contents. Carleton recommended that the whole body of the French civil law as it had existed before the Conquest should be restored, to be changed explicitly by fresh Ordinances as might seem necessary; consequently that no English civil law should be in force except such as might later be expressly introduced in this manner. Masères and Hey on the contrary thought that the Cana-

¹ Thought the more necessary probably in order to be able to make a good case for a measure which was likely to be vigorously opposed.

² Possibly, however, only the old neglect.

³ Can. Arch., Q. 5-1, p. 435.

⁴ Evidence before Commons in the Quebec Act Debate; Correspondence of Carleton; writings of Masères. There is very strong reason for believing that the paper in the *Lower Canada Jurist*, Vol. I., attributed to Chief-Justice Hey, is his report on this occasion. His views are, however, very clearly stated by him in the evidence referred to above. See especially *Cavendish*, pp 156-7.

dians would be contented and the best interests of the Province secured, by the continuance or adoption of the English law and procedure as a general basis, and the special revival of the French law in regard to landed property and inheritance; the general aim being the gradual assimilation of the Province to the other English possessions in America.¹

The home authorities did not allow themselves to be hurried. The next step, almost two years later, is an Order-in-Council of June 14, 1771, transmitting the Provincial reports and all other papers concerning Quebec to the crown lawyers,² and ordering them to return separate and detailed reports as a basis for legislation. Meanwhile, however, as if to palliate the delay of the full settlement, there was issued (July 2d, 1771), a new instruction in regard to land grants, by which a very noteworthy step was taken toward the return to French law. The Proclamation of October, 1763, had conferred on the governor and Council "full power and authority" to grant lands, "upon such terms . . . as have been appointed and settled in other colonies," and in accordance with such special instructions as might thereafter be given. These special instructions were issued to Murray when appointed Governor in 1764, and directed the grants to be made in free and common soccage, according to English forms, to be held by an oath of fealty and a quit-rent of two shillings sterling per 100 acres; the grants to be in restricted quantities and on the usual conditions of cultivation, and a special caution being added against following the example of some of the other colonies in making excessive allotments to individuals unable to fully cultivate. Under these regulations the amount actually granted was very small, not exceeding 14,000 acres

¹Special attention is directed to these recommendations by Masères and Hey, which will be found in detail in their evidence in 1774 before the Commons. They represent, in my opinion, by far the better settlement.

²Attorney-General Thurlow, Solicitor-General Wedderburne, and Advocate-General Marriott.

in all, according to the statements of Carleton and Masères;¹ which is apparently accounted for by the fact that the terms were deemed severe and unprofitable, especially in comparison with those of the French grants.² The Minutes of Council show that the lands which had been awarded on much easier terms to discharged soldiers, had been but little availed of.³ The expense of the necessary registration was a considerable obstacle, and in the later years the government seems to have delayed completing grants from the anticipation of new instructions.⁴ Such a change had been urged by Carleton two years before, in a communication in which he had described the old French form of grant, and had strongly presented the advisability of reverting to it thereafter except at the eastern extremity of the province, where he considered it advisable that old subjects only should be encouraged to settle.⁵ His reasons for this advice are not very clearly given, and would seem to have been largely military (in the advantage of renewing in some way the obligation of military service as a condition of tenure), but we are safe in concluding that among them was a conviction that the English forms were not conducive to the settlement of the country. The action is on a line with the constant tendency shown by Carleton to revert wherever possible, to the French forms. Though the proposal was looked upon favorably by the home government,⁶ no effective action was taken thereon till July 2d, 1771, on which date the "additional instruction" spoken of above was issued, by which it was ordered that for the future lands should be granted "in fief or seigneurie, as hath been practiced heretofore, antecedent to the Conquest," according to the old French forms, but with the omission of the judi-

¹ The former in official correspondence April 15, 1767 (Can. Arch., Q. 4, p. 152); the latter in *Quebec Commissions*, p. 182.

² See Cramahé to Hillsborough, Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 142.

³ *Ibid.*, Q. 4, p. 230; Q. 8, p. 116.

⁴ Minutes of Council, April 18, 1770. *Ibid.*, Q. 7, p. 129.

⁵ To Shelbourne, April 12, 1768. Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, p. 477.

⁶ Hillsborough to Carleton July 9, 1768. Can. Arch., Q. 5-2, p. 602.

cial powers thereto anciently belonging. The ground of the change is stated in the preamble to be representations that the former terms "have been found to be inconvenient and inadequate; and that it is more for our advantage and for the benefit of our subjects . . . if the ancient mode of granting lands . . . was to be adopted." This radical and deliberate change of policy bears very striking testimony to the genuineness of the decision as to the full restoration in the Province of French law and custom. In this light it was regarded in Quebec, Cramahé informing Hillsborough¹ that the French Canadians looked on the change "as a fresh proof of his Majesty's gracious intention to continue to them, so far as it can be done, their ancient usages and customs."²

But though such a decisive step had been taken, nothing further was attempted until the reception of the final reports from the Crown lawyers. These need not be considered in detail, their main provisions, following the rec-

¹ May 5, 1772. Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 142.

² He continues: "His old subjects are no less pleased with this method of granting lands, for upon the terms at first required, they could never have settled them to advantage." The effects of the change on land occupation were certainly immediate and striking. Before the end of 1771 we find before the Quebec Council petitions for land under the new forms amounting to an aggregate of 60,000 acres (Can. Arch., Q. 8, p. 116), and in little more than a year from the publication of the new instructions no less than 56 petitions had been received for immense tracts (averaging probably not less than 100 square miles in extent), most of which are expressly asked for *en seigneurie* and all of which are undoubtedly so meant. Most of the petitioners, it is to be noted, were of the English speaking element. Apart from the questions of the intrinsic merit and suitability of the English and French tenures it will be seen that two reasons must have existed for this preference of the English investors for the French form. The first was the fact that the aristocracy of the Province was founded on the feudal possession of the land; the second, that it must have been at this time very clear that, whatever should be the ultimate form of government, the French laws and customs were bound to prevail in regard to landed property. It will be seen on the other hand, that this great success of the first step in the return to French institutions must have largely tended to confirm the intentions of the Home Government in that regard. Though it is to be noted that the Quebec Act of 1774 seems to attempt to regain in this matter some of the ground lost in 1771; for while the instruction of the latter date make no provision whatever for the further use of the English form of grant or tenure, the IXth Art. of the Act is especially inserted for the legalization and protection of "free and common soccage." In connection with the later history of this matter of feudal tenures see Houston, *Can. Const. Doc.*, p. 109, note 12.

ommendations of Carleton, being embodied in the Quebec Act. They were elaborate and able documents, marked by an enlightened spirit of justice and generosity toward the French Canadians. That the Act of which they were the basis was not the best settlement of the question is to be attributed rather to the misleading prejudices and short-sightedness of those to whom the Crown lawyers looked for information than to the integrity and ability of the latter.

Having now reached the Act itself, it is necessary to note briefly what light is thrown upon this part of our enquiry by the circumstances attending its passage. We find on the general point so little discussion that it is evident the opposition felt that the fundamental position of the government was too strong to be assailed. But later, after letting the provisions through the Committee with only an incoherent protest, their energies revived on the favorable subject of trial by jury, and an amendment providing for optional juries formed the rallying point for the most vigorous effort of the whole debate. The position of the government seems on the whole even here the stronger and more consistent; though it is difficult to escape a suspicion, (not upheld however by any specific evidence), that it was animated somewhat by the remembrance of the obstacle the jury system had proved to government in the revenue cases of 1766 and 1769.¹ It was contended that the system was incompatible with the French law and custom now granted;² that the bill as only fixing the laws and customs, did not exclude juries, the whole constitution of the judiciary and the procedure being reserved to His Majesty;³ and that the

¹ See above, p. 396, note 3, for the misconception on this point.

² To which the fiery and significant retort was made: "In God's name, what can be the views and what the operations of that bill with which juries are incompatible? What can be the purposes and designs to be answered by this bill? I have no pleasure in thinking of them; I have too much decency to name them." (*Cavendish*, p. 26.)

³ In which connection it is very noteworthy that the words *as the rule* in the clause, 'in all matter of controversy relative to property and civil rights, resort shall be had to the laws of Canada, as the rule for the decision of the same,' are asserted by one speaker, (*Cavendish*, p. 282. The statement or the inference from it, was not contro-

present arrangement was intended only as a basis or starting point for future Provincial legislation, it being unwise for the Imperial legislature to attempt such particular changes as could properly be made only as they were called for and by those upon the spot. This is evidently a strong position, and if at all upheld by later actions should go far toward freeing the government even from the suspicion I have referred to above.¹

That the profession of an intent of bringing in English law through Provincial enactment was sincere was shown by the action supplementary to the Quebec Act. In the Instructions to Carleton in 1775 for his guidance, especially

verted), not to have formed a part of the original bill, but to have been inserted after its presentation to the Commons. This change was characterized by him as a "concession," which, as not binding procedure to the French forms, left the way open for the later institution of the jury system. As a curious and somewhat perplexing offset to this however, it is to be noticed that the original bill is asserted by another opposition speaker, (*Cavendish*, p. 19), not to have said whether the laws of Canada or of England were to be resorted to. This must mean that the clause in question had been entirely omitted, which would be incompatible with the above statement as to the absence of a part of it. In the lack of the original draft no light can be thrown on this. It will be remembered that the clause in question must have been considered by many what it can reasonably be contended to be, in large degree superfluous, so far as the establishment of the French civil law was concerned. That is, the revoking in the previous clause of all the acts of government by which the English law was contended to have been introduced, would alone, under the operation of the Capitulation and Treaty, leave the field in most respects fully in possession of the former code.

¹ It seems worth while to note here more fully a rather remarkable incident in the history of the jury system in the Province during the previous period. March 9, 1765, a Provincial ordinance was passed directing that for the future all juries should be summoned from the Province at large without regard to the vicinage of the action or crime. This remarkable abrogation of one of the fundamental principles of the system seems to have been occasioned by temporary circumstances; and that it was sanctioned by the Home administration is shown by the fact that in the following November a Royal order was issued providing for an exception to it. No later direct reference to it can be found; but that some instruction must have been sent in connection with the excepting Ordinance is shown by the appearance on Jan. 27, 1766, of a Provincial ordinance repealing that of 1765. This is stated in the Council Minutes to be in accordance with the precedent of the exception taken. The repealing ordinance takes occasion to speak expressly of the general advisability of the facts being ascertained "by the oathes of good and lawful men of the neighborhood of the places where they had happened, according to the ancient and wholesome rules of the common law of England." The dates here should be compared with those of the English administrations and the whole matter considered in connection with the latter more flagrant overriding of the same principle in the case of the other colonies.

in future legislation, he is enjoined by the 12th Art. that while, in accordance with the spirit and intention of the Quebec Act, the Canadians "should have the benefit and use of their own laws, usages, and customs, in all controversies respecting titles of land and the tenure, descent, alienation, incumbrance, and settlement of real estate, and the distribution of the personal property of persons dying intestate," on the other hand the council should consider, in adopting regulations to this end, "whether the laws of England may not be, if not altogether, at least in part, the rule for the decision in all cases of personal actions grounded upon debts, promises, contracts, and agreements, whether of a mercantile or other nature, and also of wrongs proper to be compensated in damages," especially where old subjects are concerned. Viewed in connection with the 13th Art., which recommends the taking of measures to secure to the Province the benefits of the principle of Habeas Corpus,¹ this shows that the administration cannot be justly accused of being willing that the Government should revert entirely to the old principles and forms. It is apparently intended rather that only so much of the old law should be retained as could in any way be contended for as essentially bound up with the securing to the French Canadians that full enjoyment of their property which had been promised in the Capitulation and Treaty. That this limit was not adhered to was due in part to a necessary development of what was now done; in part to the confirming and extending of the main policy of the Quebec Act during and after the revolutionary war.

d. *Legislative Assembly.* We have now reached the last

¹ The address of Congress to the people of England, Sept. 5, 1775, especially complains that the English in Canada were "deprived of trial by jury and when imprisoned cannot claim the benefit of the habeas corpus act." The recommendation made by the Home government as to the Habeas Corpus was acted on in 1785 by a Provincial Ordinance modelled on the Act of Charles II. The jury system had been extended to civil cases to some extent by an ordinance of the previous year (Smith, *Hist. Can.* II, 169, 176). The delay in the case of both was owing probably in main part to the intervening American war.

important feature of the Quebec Act,— that withholding of a representative legislative assembly which was evidently considered by the revolutionary fathers as the main feature of the "arbitrary government" they viewed with such apprehension. That such an apprehension on this ground was most natural and reasonable cannot be denied; on the other hand it will appear from our examination that the skirts of the legislators can on this point be even more effectually cleared of guilt than on the others. I have already shown that the fundamental proclamation of 1763 and the later documents by which the civil government was established, promise and presuppose the early institution of a representative body, no notice being taken of the religious difficulties that lay in the way. The whole of the matter at this early stage is one of the strongest proofs of the unconsidered and hasty character of the first steps taken with regard to Canada. In considering the latter phases of it our chief interest lies in the gradual development of English governmental opinion on the point, and in the tracing of the causes which led to the determination of 1774 against representative institutions.

The matter seems to have been first seriously taken up by the Board of Trade in that report of September 2, 1765,¹ which I have noticed above as recommending a faint degree of return to the old laws. In regard to an assembly we find in it, as is to be expected,² a decidedly favorable tone. It states that "the situation and circumstances of the colony have not hitherto been thought to admit of a House of Representatives." but that the only objection they can find is the difficulty in regard to admitting Catholics as members; a difficulty however which they think might be obviated by such a division of electoral districts as would enable the Catholic electors to choose resident Protestants, there be-

¹ Can. Arch., B. 8, p. 12.

² For it is to be remarked that the more the English system was abandoned and the French reverted to, the more remote and unfitted would the idea of an Assembly becom

ing no law denying the franchise to Roman Catholics.¹ Such a settlement they think would "give great satisfaction to your Majesty's new, as well as natural-born subjects; every object of civil government which the limited powers of the governor and Council cannot extend would be fully answered, and above all that essential and important one of establishing by an equal taxation a permanent and constitutional revenue." This does not seem to us a very liberal provision, but probably in the then state of the laws and of public feeling in England and the colonies, it was thought the extreme limit that could be granted. The statement as to revenue brings to our notice a strong and constant ground for the establishment of representative institutions,—the relief that could thereby be most easily afforded to the English taxpayer.

The general course of events subsequent to this report I have considered elsewhere, and it would seem that the recommendations concerning an Assembly were regarded as of subordinate interest, no reference whatever being apparently made to them. The language of the later instructions to Murray and Carleton, and the narrow legislative power to which the Government and Council continued to be restricted, show however that the idea of settled Government without an Assembly had not yet seriously entered the mind of the home authorities. Indeed the careful directions concerning legislation with an Assembly at a time when it was recognized that the future constitution of the Province must be settled soon by Parliamentary enactment would indicate that the calling of an Assembly before that settlement was considered not improbable. The instructions issued to Carleton in 1768 give minute directions for the framing of legislation "when an Assembly shall be summoned and met in such manner as you in your discretion shall think most proper, or as shall be hereafter di-

¹ Note that this is the idea finally adopted by the British party in Canada.

rected and appointed." They go on however to make more general provisions of such a character as to show that, while there was apparently no thought of withholding an Assembly, the relations with such bodies in the other colonies had inspired the determination to take special precautions in regard to new establishments. A significant article directs that in all enactments, "for the levying of money or imposing fines, forfeiture or penalties, express mention be made that the same is granted or reserved to us . . . for the public uses of the Province and the support of the Government thereof, . . . and that a clause be inserted declaring that the money arising by the operation of the said law or Ordinances shall be accounted for unto us in this Kingdom and to our Commission of the Treasury or our High Treasurer for the time being, and audited by our Auditor General." ⁴ The 11th Article puts restrictions on legislation of an unusual nature or affecting British commerce, such laws not to go into operation till approved by the Home Government. The 12th, stated in the preamble to be occasioned by the practices of some of the other Provinces, makes provision against the evading, through temporary laws, etc., of the control of the home authorities. The 14th is concerned with the prevention of the assumption of too great privileges by members of the Assembly or Council, (said also to be occasioned by experiences with the other Provinces), and the prevention of self-adjournment of the Assembly, together with a very noticeable clause granting the Council "the like power of framing money bills as the Assembly."

The special import of these provisions will be noticed later. Following up the main inquiry, we find in the Canada Report of Solicitor-General Wedderburn, December, 1772, the next important reference to the subject, and the one which

⁴ It is to be noted that a clause of the same tenor as this though not in quite the same language is in the instructions of 1765 to Sir H. Moore, of New York (Colonial Office Records, London).

sets forth most clearly the main ostensible grounds on which the Assembly was finally withheld. His conclusion is that it is at present wholly inexpedient to establish the institution in Quebec; for, although admitting that legislation could be properly attended to only by such a body, he considers the difficulties in its formation too great to be overcome. Into such an Assembly the Roman Catholic French Canadians, in the capacity both of electors and of members, must or must not be admitted. To admit them as members would be a dangerous and unconstitutional experiment, and would lead to inexhaustible dissensions between them and the old subjects;¹ while to exclude them would cause a feeling of inequality, and a fear of being exposed to injustice. On the other hand the question of the franchise was involved in equal difficulties; for the denial of it to the Canadians would leave the Assembly no more representative than a Council, while to extend it to them indiscriminately as landholders would be offensive to the upper class among them, and not beneficial to the lower.²

¹ It will of course at once occur to the reader that in Granada, seven years before, the experiment had been tried. But, as is shown above (pp. 444-7), the results had not been of a kind to encourage a repetition of it; for government there had been from that date involved thereby in the greatest difficulties, through just such "inexhaustible dissensions" as Wedderbourne must now have had in mind. The conditions further of Canada and Grenada were very different, the difference being of a kind to cause even greater difficulties to be apprehended in the former. The temper of the English party had already been shown. They were however but a very small factor as compared with the mass of the French Canadians; and the British government had therefore to bear in mind not only inevitable dissensions between the two races, but also the imperilling of the safety of the new Province with a discontented English element and a popular House almost entirely French. In Grenada there could be very little danger, and if trouble did arise it would be confined to the Island and could scarcely have dangerous connections outside. The use of the word *unconstitutional* by Wedderbourne shows also perhaps that he had in mind the vigorous attacks made, (it is true on somewhat different grounds), on the Administration for the step in Grenada.

² In this latter sentence we see the weak point of an otherwise cogent statement. But it is to be remembered that Wedderbourne was preparing his report on information furnished by Carleton, one of the main features of whose policy was to represent the great importance of attaching the noblesse and maintaining them in their imagined influence over the lower classes. The idea as to the privilege of the suffrage not benefiting the people was based on representations as to the ignorance and political incapacity of the latter, and the probability that under representative institutions they would only fall into the hands of demagogues or of English creditors.

On these grounds Wedderbourne advises that instead of an assembly, the legislative power should be granted with important restraints to a Council considerably enlarged and made more independent of the Governor.

For these opinions the provincial officials were no doubt mainly responsible. Carleton was strongly set against an Assembly, as not adapted to the province and as not desired by the Canadians. Masères also seems to consider a very liberally framed Council the best plan, (a purely Protestant Assembly being manifestly impossible), for some years to come. The latter's advice on this matter to the British party in Quebec is of much interest. Just before the Quebec Bill was introduced he writes to the representatives of the party, (whose agent he was), that he is not yet sure of the sentiments of the Ministry on the point, but conjectures that they are of opinion that the province is not yet ripe for an assembly and are therefore inclined to establish instead a nominated Council with larger powers; that his own opinion is that such a Council would be better for the Province for several years to come than an assembly into which "Papists" should be admitted; that the only objection he sees to a Protestant Assembly is the danger of offending the more numerous Catholics; but that if this difficulty be got over by some compromise, (as by granting the suffrage to the French Canadians), he would be very glad to see an assembly granted, "as indeed I suppose it would in that case be." He proceeds then to advise, as in his opinion likely to be more helpful in the procuring of their object than any other step, that the petitioners should declare that they "conceive the British Parliament to have a complete legislative authority over the Province of Quebec, and that such authority will continue after the establishment of an assembly," and that they are willing "that every member of such future assemblies should be required to recognize the said supreme authority in every article whatsoever both of legislation

and taxation in the plainest and strongest terms before he is permitted to take his seat." Such a declaration he thinks, "would greatly tend to remove the prejudices now subsisting in the minds of many people in England against the erection of new houses of assembly in America, arising from the conduct of the assembly in Boston and in other of the American Provinces in totally denying the supreme authority of Parliament."¹ Masères it will be remembered was at this time on the English Exchequer Bench, and probably in a position to know as accurately as any outsider could the attitude of the authorities on a subject in which he was so much interested. His was by all odds the keenest intellect prominently concerned in Canadian affairs at the time, and though occasionally his writings show signs of haste and want of balance as well as some intolerance and narrow legal habits of thought, a close study of the period will I think lead to the conclusion that he possessed a more accurate knowledge of Canadian conditions, and clearer and more far-sighted views as to the policy that should be adopted in regard to them, than any of his contemporaries. Though, as we see above, upholding the supreme authority of the British Parliament, (his legal training made any other view almost impossible to him), he belonged in many respects to the more liberal and advanced school of thinkers on colonial Government.² Certainly his writings prove that he would have been one of the last to have countenanced any plan of aiming to restrict colonial liberty through the instrumentality of a despotism in Canada. The advice here given to the Quebec leaders shows indeed that he was of opinion that the Ministry was strongly prejudiced against Colonial legislatures. That this was correct there can be no thought of denying. But it is further shown here, as by many other references, that the Ministry was also of opinion that the unquestioned suprem-

¹ *Proceedings, etc.*, pp. 35-8.

² See his *Freeholder*.

acy of the British Parliament could be secured in the Act of settlement. In this advice Masères, as the counsel of a political party, is merely recommending the further reassuring of the Ministry by docile professions. In none of his writings, even in those of much later date than the Quebec Act, is there any reference to the possibility of that Act, (of which he was one of the most determined opponents), being dictated as regarded the withholding of an assembly, by the motives which had been attributed by the colonists. On the very eve of the new settlement we find him of the opinion that the only serious objections to such a body in the mind of the authorities, were on the one hand the danger of allowing full weight to the overwhelming French Catholic majority, and on the other the difficulty of making a Protestant Assembly palatable to that majority.

Our most important source of information on this point, however, outside the Ministerial correspondence, is the debate on the Act itself in the House of Commons. And the main impression which its study leaves with us is that the opposition was very careful *not* to press for an immediate Assembly, and that the Ministry was very careful to base the withholding of it purely on the ground, (1) that it would be unjust to exclude the French Roman Catholics from it, and (2) that it would be unsafe to admit them. Att. Gen. Thurlow asserted without contradiction that no one had claimed that it was at present fit to give an Assembly to Canada; and later in the debate, Fox admitted that he would not explicitly assert that it was expedient at that time to call one. Lord Beauchamp, a Government supporter, affirmed that no member had advocated the appointment of a Council because of the conduct of the popular assemblies in America, or had ventured to say that it would always be inexpedient to give the latter. Almost the last word on the subject was the following from Lord North: "That it is desirable to give the Canadians a con-

stitution in every respect like the constitution of Great Britain, I will not say; but I earnestly hope that they will, in the course of time, enjoy as much of our laws and as much of our constitution, as may be beneficial for that country, and safe for this. But that time is not yet come." It is evident on the whole that the opposition could not offer a solution of the difficulties that seemed to lie in the road, and that the Government, whatever secret motives may have influenced it, was quite able to defend its position by pointing to these difficulties. The hints of the opposition as to the Bill giving evidence of secret hostility to liberty, were rather in reference to other features than to the more complicated and less assailable point of the withholding of representative institutions.

It would be more correct to say that the Quebec Act *deferred* than that it *denied* an Assembly; for the wording used is, "whereas it is at present inexpedient;" as Lord North stated it, "That this establishment is not to be considered perpetual, is admitted in the bill itself." There was not at any time any serious question of the permanent refusal to the Canadians of representative institutions; and the references to the period of tutelage and probation that should elapse before the granting of such institutions seem to presuppose a short one. It is indeed impossible to conceive that any administration could have expected that the country would long be satisfactorily governed by a Legislature which had no money powers whatever, beyond levying and applying of municipal rates, and which was expressly prohibited from making effective, even for a day, any enactment which imposed a greater punishment than fine or imprisonment for three months. In fact the action taken in this particular must simply be looked upon as the shelving of a difficult subject,—as a continuation of the policy of delay and compromise which had marked all previous dealings with Canada. The Government had the positive assurances of Carleton, to whom it looked mainly for information, that

the Canadians did not want an Assembly, would indeed prefer not to have it; and the small English party was thought as yet to have a weight in the country too small to require much attention. The period during which an Assembly was to be delayed was of course not clear to the mind of anyone; but it is possible that the Ministry wished first to have settled the difficulties to which the Assemblies in the other provinces were giving rise. In so far then it is probably true that the framers of the new constitution were affected as to this point by the general situation of things in America; but there seems to be no ground for going any further. The Ministry was encouraged to delay representative institutions because it had assured itself that the great body of the French Canadian people had no desire for these institutions, and could be safely and perhaps beneficially left without them for a few years to come; but there is no reason to suppose that this delay was intended as the first step of a system of oppression which was ultimately to extend to the other colonies through the instrumentality of the docile slaves that had been secured in Canada. It is undeniable indeed that as early as 1768 the Imperial authorities, while of the opinion that an Assembly should be constituted as soon as possible, had resolved to take stringent measures for the restricting of the money power of the same, and the keeping of it in unquestioned subordination to the British Parliament. But this is a phase of the subject which does not concern us here. It was simply the application to Canada, in a strictly constitutional way, of the general claims which gave rise to the American Revolution. I am not interested here to enquire whether the Imperial government went as far in Canada as it attempted to go elsewhere; the question is rather, did it go farther? Did it attempt to take advantage of the political ignorance and docility of a long enslaved people for the purpose of upholding, in direct opposition to all the free principles of English govern-

ment, a set of conditions which might continue to be or might become, a menace and check to the other colonies?

With regard then to the origins of the Quebec Act it need only be added that the above examination must at least show that if that Act were in any important degree due to the causes assigned it by colonial suspicion, the government which originated and pushed it through must have taken unusual pains to keep its reasons and its purposes hidden. But why should such concealment have been thought necessary with regard to the whole or any part of the enactment? This same government had just carried through three Bills³ of the most stringent and repressive nature, striking, to the popular view, heavier blows at American freedom and growth than anything contained in the Quebec Act, and had found itself in these measures backed by a consistent and overwhelming support, both in Parliament and throughout the country. Why should it now have scrupled to say that it was also taking measures of precaution in Canada? The government of that day was not an enlightened one, and would have been content to secure popular support, without looking to the future; it might well have concluded, for example, that the preserving of the vast regions of the West from the encroachments of the rebellious colonies would prove a popular measure. Rather than concealed indeed, we might expect to see this motive, if occupying a prominent position in the Government mind, put forward with prominence. We might expect to find it used to explain and defend the more doubtful parts of the measure, and especially that apparent establishing of the Roman Catholic Church which so aroused the horror of the Continental Congress, and which was almost as unpopular in England as in America. On the other hand, if the *secret* design hinted at by the opposition and believed in by the colonists

³ With regard to Massachusetts.

had existed, it is not to be supposed that it would have been alluded to by such able and prominent members of the party as Wedderbourne and Lyttleton. As to the more decided utterances in the Debates for the repeal of the act in 1775, both of the Opposition and of the Government,¹ they must be regarded as after thoughts. The Opposition was undoubtedly inspired by the objections with which the Act had been met in America, and the Government was alarmed and exasperated by the increasing menaces there to Imperial control, and ready to use or threaten to use, any instrument that lay ready to its hand.

C. *Application of the Act.*

In connection with the Act should be noted the instructions that accompanied the new commissions under it, and some later official developments. The new instructions with regard to legislation had now a more definite basis in the elimination of the confusing element of a possible Assembly, and we find the following changes: (1) A restriction of the legislative period to the months of January, February, March and April; apparently for reasons connected with the climate and the communication with England. (2) Suspension till royal approval of some classes of ordinances, with a prohibition of any commercial ordinance by which the inhabitants should be put on a more advantageous footing than any other of His Majesty's subjects, "either of this Kingdom or of the Plantations."² Prohibition of all religious legislation.

A clause with regard to the procedure of the new Council³ had consequences of some interest which lead us a little beyond our period. It was the first part of the 2nd Article of the above instructions, and read: "It is further our will

¹ Lord North here openly avowed his intention of arming the Canadians if necessary, for the purpose of reducing the refractory colonies to obedience.—*Parliamentary History*, Vol. 18, p. 680.

² This is perhaps worth noticing with regard to the question of the hostility of the measure toward the other colonies.

³ This consisted of 23 members, 8 being French Canadians.

and pleasure that any five of the said Council shall constitute a board of Council for transacting all business in which their advice and consent may be requisite, Acts of Legislation only excepted, (in which case you are not to act without a majority of the whole)." No clear statement is made anywhere as to a quorum.¹ This very indefinite provision Carleton promptly availed himself of as might have been expected from his action in 1766,² and June 27, 1778, he sends home the Minutes of the Board of Council³ for the preceding eight months. These minutes do not appear in the State Papers, but we have the similar ones from Haldimand, October 24, 1779, for the period from November 1, 1778, to September 25, 1779.⁴ An examination of these latter shows that this "Board of Council" consisted of five members beside the Governor and Lieut.-Governor, all of whom were also members of the Legislative Council; that it refers to itself as a "Board," and holds meetings in 1778 on the 7th, 9th, and 30th November, and in 1779 on the 10th, 11th, and 17th May, the 7th and 12th June, and the 15th July,⁵ the Governor being present at all but two meetings.

We have here evidently a *quasi* Cabinet, without Parliamentary responsibility, invested apparently with all the executive powers of the Council though meeting so infrequently as to be but a slight check on the Governor.⁶ But though the wording of the instruction under which it

¹ In the debate in the Commons the Quebec Bill had been attacked for the absence of any such provision; which was replied to by Lord North by an assertion (*Cavendish*, p. 241), that it was intended, as shown by the words "the major part," that the quorum should be a majority of the smallest number (17) of which the Council should consist. But this clause had reference only to legislation, and the answer looks like an astute evasion of the point at issue.

² In regard to his then treatment of the Council, see p. 338, note 2.

³ Referred to by the Council Clerk as the "Privy Council."

⁴ These are referred to simply as the "Minutes of His Majesty's Council," the "Journal of the Legislative Council" for the corresponding session being sent at the same time.

⁵ The corresponding "Journal of the Legislative Council" is for the session 11th-16th January, 1779.

⁶ Who had the choice of the members. It looks as if, under Haldimand at least, this "Board" was used only as a pretense of complying with the constitutional requirements as to the "advice and consent" of the Council.

was instituted would seem fully to admit of this interpretation, (indeed it is difficult to avoid the conclusion that it was so intended, and had been procured to that end by the direct efforts of Carleton), it did not go unquestioned in the Colony. Early in the spring of 1778 we find Chief Justice Livius, (a somewhat hot-headed personage, who persisted in raising other disagreeable questions and was a couple of months later suspended from his office by Carleton), disputing the constitutionality of the new institution, and demanding, (April 12, 1778), definite written information as to Carleton's order "selecting and appointing five members of His Majesty's Council to act as a Council to the exclusion of every other member." The information desired was refused, as was also permission to read the minutes of the Privy Council. Nothing further on the head appears in the Colonial correspondence; but that Livius successfully presented his point to the home authorities is shown by an additional and very definite instruction issued to Haldimand, (who had without new instructions succeeded Carleton in the Chief Governorship), on the 29th of the following March. This, after citing the portion of the 2nd Art. of Carleton's instructions above quoted, proceeds as follows:—"And whereas it is highly fitting and expedient that no misrepresentation of our Royal will and pleasure in this instance should continue or obtain, we do hereby direct and require that this article shall not be understood to delegate authority to you our Governor to select or appoint any such persons by name as you shall think fit to make such Quorum, terming the same a Privy Council, or to excuse you from summoning to Council all such thereunto belonging as are within a convenient distance. On the contrary that you do take especial care to preserve the constitution of your said Province free from innovation in this respect;" to which end the Governor is to communicate this additional instruction to the said Council. And by a second

additional direction of the same date, evidently intended to reinforce the effect of the first, he is commanded not to fail¹ in promptly communicating to the Council, "to the end that they may jointly with you . . . carry our intentions effectually into execution," all instructions on subjects concerning which their advice and consent were made requisite. The tone and import of these orders are unmistakable; but the inner history is by no means clear, nor can the home administration escape from some suspicion of inconsistency or at least obscurity of policy. The representation of the original instruction as intended only to give directions concerning a quorum seems a hardly tenable position; as said already the entirely new forms and terms used, taken in connection with previous events, might well lead to the conviction that the new terms and forms were intentional and intended to provide for new things. Though on the other hand it is hardly conceivable that there was a fully formed intention of allowing an institution to become established which would practically have the effect of taking away all executive voice from the Council and reducing it to a purely legislative capacity. Whatever the inner history, the effect is clear; the Council as a whole was restored to its old executive sphere with effective intimation that that sphere was not to be monopolized (at least openly), by the governor. And it must be acknowledged that this final action of the home executive does not support the charge that it was aiming to assimilate the Provincial government as much as possible to the old French absolute form. Members of Council had to be residents of the colony,—a provision which seems a distinct intervention in the interests of self-government. The same conclusion seems fairly to be drawn from the repetition in the Governor's instruction of 1775

¹ A less emphatic injunction to the same effect had always been a part of the instructions, but Haldimand had disregarded it.

of the 35th Article of those of 1768, ordering that "every orthodox minister within your government be one of the vestry in his respective parish;" a direction which must be construed in connection with a consideration of the contemporaneous position of vestries in England.

The immediate results of the Quebec Act with regard to the official abuses which had been so complained of, were not very gratifying. The vacating of all commissions by it was intended, Carleton says, "to put a stop to all deputations, and to compel all who had offices here to reside and do their duty in person;" but August 10th, 1776, he complains that the same abuse had been introduced again in a great measure by royal mandamuses, (one person being thus granted five offices), and that into these "still slide . . . a string of terms, authorities, fees, perquisites and all that dirty train."¹ And in regard to the accompanying and still greater evil of excessive fees he writes later, (June, 1778), that although "the King had been pleased bountifully to augment the salaries of his servants in this Province that they might live comfortably in their respective stations without oppressing his people," yet the matter has become worse than ever, there existing in the Province "no rule or regulation for fees of offices, but each man for himself as guided by his own desire of gain, which of late has broken out with greater keenness than ever before."² These minor developments are possibly worth more attention than I can here give to them. For they bear strongly on the general conclusion as to the Quebec Act to which my investigation has led me, viz.: that the return to the old institutions in the degree thus accomplished, was a step neither warranted by the necessities of the moment nor by any principles of sound policy; but that the French Canadians would have been satisfied with a part of what the Act gave, accompanied with a full

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 12, p. 119.

² Ibid., B. 37, p. 192.

remedy of the really pressing evils in the uncertainty of the law and the abuses of its administration. The remedy for these abuses did not depend on the return to the old institutions; on the contrary we have seen that that return was not accompanied by it. Still less do we find it followed by the expected improvement with regard to the confusion and uncertainty of the law. The immediate and continued result was in accordance with the mixture of aim and motive. To show this it is necessary only to refer to any respectable history of the period. It was not till 1777 that the civil courts were re-established in Quebec; we are informed by a writer who is almost contemporary, and who had had exceptional means of knowing the exact legal conditions, that an official investigation in 1787 disclosed "such a scene of anarchy and confusion in the laws and in the administration of them by the courts as no English province ever before laboured under; English judges followed English law; French judges followed French law; some of them followed no particular law, but decided according to what appeared to be the equity of the case."¹ Christie writes of the year 1790, that it was complained that although the Quebec Act had been sixteen years in force, "the courts had not yet decided whether the whole of the French laws or what part of them composed the custom of Canada, as they sometimes admitted and sometimes rejected whole codes of French law."² Garneau³ groups together the whole period from 1760 to 1786 as marked by the same "excès de tyrannie et de désordres," and states that the investigation into the judiciary by Dorchester in 1786 showed the utmost uncertainty and confusion. More modern writers⁴ accept this condition of affairs

¹ Smith, *History of Canada*, II. 175.

² *History of Lower Canada*, I, 67.

³ *Hist. du Canada*, III. 57. The statement is apparently endorsed by Lareau, *Hist. Droit Canadian*, II., 133.

⁴ See for example Kingsford and Bourinot.

without dispute. It is only intended here to point out that the Quebec Act has thus no defence, in at least this first stage of its life, from the standpoint of good government in the Province. This should be kept in mind as we pass to the special consideration of some of its more immediate disastrous effects, and as we reflect more generally upon its remoter results in the history of British North America.

CHAPTER VI.

THE QUEBEC ACT AND THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

A. The Revolution in the Province of Quebec.

In the frequent extolling by British and Canadian writers of the *policy* of the Quebec Act, the reference is of course to the supposed effect of that Act in confirming the loyalty of the French Canadians at the revolutionary crisis, and thus in preserving the newly-acquired territories from the grasp of the revolutionary movement. If the conclusions of the last chapter be well taken, it will be seen that, whatever the outcome of the measure, the inference as to policy is largely mistaken; that in other words, if the results were as stated, it would seem a rare and happy instance of immediate temporal reward for disinterested well-doing. It is not meant to deny that in the generally threatening conditions in America the firm attachment of the new subjects must have appeared to the home government as a very desirable thing; nor that the conviction of this desirability was probably a considerable factor in confirming the final conclusions as to their treatment. Such a motive would be of necessity strongly present in the case of such an unknown quantity as the new acquisition of a segment of another nationality; I have simply tried to show that it was not accentuated by the contemporary existence of other colonial problems to the extent of appreciably affecting the policy adopted toward the new subjects.

But further, I am obliged to take exception to the position of the upholders of the Act for other and stronger reasons. The credit for political sagacity assigned to the authors of that measure must be impugned not only on the ground that their work had little if any reference to the circumstances on which the credit is given, but also for the conclusive reason that the immediate results of the Act were

precisely the opposite of what had been anticipated and have ever since been assumed. It is the object of this chapter to show that not only was the Quebec Act not effectual in keeping the mass of the Canadians loyal, but that what effect it did have was in exactly the opposite direction. And before proceeding to this it should be noticed that in anticipating or extolling the results of the new settlement on the French Canadians there is curiously left out of sight by the upholders of the Act, any consideration of its effects either on the British in Canada or on the older colonies. Yet it is evident that for the true estimate of its policy, wisdom, or results there must be an accurate balancing. In view of the accompanying measures of the Government of the day in regard to the other colonies directly it is not surprising to find any thought of this entirely absent at the time. We however have no excuse for now neglecting it.

The question of the influence, direct or indirect, in general or in particular parts of the country, of the new settlement of Quebec affairs on revolutionary development in the other colonies, is one of an interest so great and so closely connected with my work that I can only express my regret at being unable at present to investigate it thoroughly. It must be left with a reference to the general classing of the Act with those of the same session in regard to Massachusetts Bay,² and to the emphasis so placed upon the measure in the early steps of the Continental Congress. One remarkable bit of private testimony in connection therewith might also be mentioned. In the Dartmouth Papers we find a letter from one Joseph Reed to the Earl of Dartmouth, Secretary of State, dated Philadelphia, Sept. 25, 1774, and giving an account of the alarming proceedings of the Congress then sitting there. The writer proceeds:—"But what shall I say to your

² This has been universal among American writers. See Roosevelt, *Winning of the West*, I., for a more emphatic and recent position; and in connection the treatment above of Quebec boundaries, Chapter V, section B, a.

Lordship of the appearances in this country; what seemed a little time since to be a spark which with prudence and wisdom might have been extinguished, is now a flame that threatens ruin both to parent and child. The spirit of the people gradually rose when it might have been expected to decline, till the Quebec Act added fuel to the fire; then all those deliberate measures of petitioning previous to any opposition was laid aside as inadequate to the apprehended danger and mischief, and now the people are generally ripe for the execution of any plan the Congress advises, should it be war itself.¹ Without delaying further on the direct influence in the revolting colonies of the general feeling with regard to the Quebec settlement, it may be pointed out that the attitude of that section of the British party in the Province itself which I have above distinguished as closely in sympathy with what became the revolutionary element, is a fairly correct index to the general feeling. That element in Quebec had, in the circumstances of the province, no legitimate or immediate share in the general colonial quarrel; its grievance was the Quebec Act purely; yet we find this a grievance of strength sufficient to drive it almost immediately into secret and as soon as possible into open revolt.

In noting these consequences of the new settlement with regard to the English-speaking party in Quebec, we have first to observe its efficacy in openly separating the more advanced and more moderate section.² The first step of

¹ Hist. MSS. Commission, Report XI. Appendix, V. p. 362. I am indebted for the reference to the *Report* for 1890 of the Canadian Archivist, p. XXI. It will be noticed that the writer selects from the various obnoxious measures of the late Parliamentary session, the Act in regard to Quebec, without any mention apparently of the more directly threatening ones concerning Massachusetts Bay. His thought may probably be more distinctly seen in a later horrified reference to "The idea of bringing down the Canadians and savages upon the English Colonies." Of the writer I know nothing surely; but he is possibly the same person to whom the Congressional *Diary* of Richard Smith makes reference March 1, 1776, as the "Secretary to Gen. Washington," and as having his salary then raised by Congress on account of important naval duties. (See *Amer. Hist. Review*, April, 1896, p. 507.)

² See above c. 3, for analysis of the English party.

the party was the drawing up of protests against the Act; in which mild proceeding however all apparently did not take part. For Carleton writes Nov. 11, 1774 to Dartmouth, that the more respectable part of the English at Quebec, "notwithstanding many letters received from home advising them to pursue a different course," had presented a dutiful and submissive address; but that in Montreal, "whether the minds of the latter are of a more turbulent turn, or that they caught the fire from some colonists settled among them, or in reality letters were received from the General Congress, as reported, I know not, certain it is however that shortly after the said Congress had published in all the American papers their approbation of the Suffolk Co. resolves in the Massachusetts, a report was spread at Montreal that letters of importance had been received from the General Congress," and public meetings were held by the British there for the consideration of grievances. Thence the infection had spread to Quebec where the same course was pursued, though "several discrete persons" at both places had declined taking part. Since then there had been several "town-meetings as they are pleased to style them;" though he speaks doubtfully, "as they have taken uncommon pains to keep their whole proceedings from my knowledge." He describes these town-meetings and reports as all "breathing that same spirit, so plentifully gone forth through the neighbouring Provinces," and speaks of the necessity of government guarding zealously "against the consequences of an infection, imported daily, warmly recommended, and spread abroad by the Colonists here, and indeed by some from Europe, not less violent than the Americans." ¹

The immediate outcome of these proceedings were numerous signed petitions against the Act, addressed to the King and to both Houses of Parliament. There can be no

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 11.

doubt that the leaders here and from this time on were constantly in more or less direct communication with the American Revolutionists and were aiming to keep as closely in touch with their efforts as possible. The letters spoken of above by Carleton undoubtedly did represent some such connection, and a few days later (Nov. 18, 1774)¹ Carleton transmits a copy of one which had fallen into his hands, and which probably was the communication referred to. And as it speaks of itself as being "our first public correspondence with the town of Quebec,"² it will be worth while to refer more fully to it. It is dated Boston, Oct. 10, 1774, and is a moderate and dignified letter of thanks by one David Jeffries, on behalf of the "Committee of Donations" of Boston, for a contribution (apparently of wheat)³ "to relieve the distressed poor of this oppressed town," and is addressed to "the Gentlemen of Quebec" through a trading firm named Minot, originally from Massachusetts. It speaks of the necessity of the union of all parts of the continent against oppression, and of the satisfaction afforded by the sympathy of the town of Quebec; refers to the policy of Great Britain in "creating divisions amongst them and using them as engines to beat down and destroy the liberties of each other, that so all may be an easy prey to tyranny and despotic power,"—a policy to which "the eyes of the colonists are opened;" and expresses the hope of the continued support of "our friends in Canada," with whom the writers will think themselves "happy in keeping up a brotherly correspondence." This letter is anterior to any action of Congress in regard to Canada, and the communication now opened was constantly kept up.⁴ The Amer-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 103.

² Ibid., Q. 11, p. 105. This expression does not by any means exclude, (rather indeed implies) previous correspondence with individuals.

³ Sent the previous 6th September. Congress had met for the first time at Philadelphia the day before.

⁴ In the following November we find the Massachusetts Provincial Congress appointing a committee (of which John Hancock and Samuel Adams are members), for the devising of means of keeping up a correspondence with Montreal and Quebec. John Brown was later appointed the agent of this committee.

ican portion of the party together with a few of European birth, (nearly all apparently at Montreal), undoubtedly from this time became active partizans of the Revolutionary cause, which they publicly embraced on the appearance of the American invading force. January 12, 1775, Carleton writes that the British subjects are "still exerting their utmost endeavors to kindle in the Canadians the spirit that reigns in the Province of the Massachusetts,"¹ and the following March 13,² that some of them "continue suggesting into the minds of the Canadians an abhorrence for the form of government intended by the Act of last session," and that they have translated the letter of Congress and actually imported 200 or 300 copies of it.

I need not go into details of the intrigues carried on and of the various methods of communication employed. The point of main interest here is that the final split in the party becomes now very evident. An attempt was made at Montreal to have delegates elected to the Congress of 1775, and notwithstanding Mr. John Brown's explanation of the cause of its failure,³ there can be no doubt that the great body of the English were decidedly opposed to the step on general grounds, and that the leading American element found itself at this point finally separated from its former constituency. We find in short that the main body of the "old subjects" remained, in spite of the Quebec Act, heartily loyal to English rule during this crisis; that their attitude was the same as that of the Tories, (the later United Empire Loyalists), in the other Provinces. They were probably willing to go farther in opposition to the government than their brethren in some of the other Prov-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 110. See also anonymous letter from Montreal, Jan. 18, 1775. [*Amer. Arch.*, I, 1164].

² Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 129.

³ This was to the effect that the English in Quebec could not join the non-importation agreement, as in that case the French would immediately monopolize the Indian fur trade. (John Brown to Boston Com. of Correspondence, March 29, 1775, *Amer. Arch.*, II. 243.)

inces, for they were under more irritating conditions;¹ but they were not willing to go to the length of taking up arms.² As to Quebec city we have very decisive evidence. I have above estimated the total male adult British population as hardly 600 in number and it will be a liberal allowance to grant the town of Quebec at this juncture half of these.³ But the official returns of the number of the defending force includes, November 16, 1775, "200 British militia,"⁴ and May 1st, 1776, "277 British militia."⁵ And that the efforts of these were not luke-warm is abundantly shown by letters of the officers engaged.⁶ Carleton himself testifies that their conduct was such as could hardly have been expected from men unused to arms.⁷ It is, on the whole, safe to say that after the Spring of 1776 the British party in Canada was seemingly united in upholding the British cause. Almost the entire American element had departed with their retreating countrymen,⁸ and the remainder of the party had apparently become reconciled to government and had been taken for a time into its full confidence. We find

¹ And hence did go to the verge of sedition, and at first probably were somewhat luke-warm in the defense of the Province.

² Their attitude at Montreal is probably accurately represented by a paper in the *Hald. Coll.*, (*Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, p. 918,) which purports to be a proposal of terms of capitulation to Montgomery, and which is signed by English and French names. It stipulates for the free possession and enjoyment of rights and religion, non-interference of soldiers with the inhabitants, and *that they should not be obliged to take up arms against the mother country*. Accompanying this is another document, unsigned, which protests against the terms of the capitulation as a treaty between two enemies, (whereas it ought to be a fraternal union), and expresses a desire for such a union with the other colonies. There can be no doubt that this latter is the voice of the few revolutionary sympathizers. Carleton writes Oct. 23, 1775, that on the attack on Montreal by the rebels a few of the inhabitants, "mostly colonists," had refused to take part in the defence. From which we are justified in concluding that the most of the English element had taken part.

³ Montreal was the chief trading centre.

⁴ *Can. Arch.*, Q. 1, p. 344.

⁵ *Ibid.*, Q. 12, p. 25.

⁶ See of Col. Caldwell in *Transactions Lit. and Hist. Soc. of Quebec. New Series*, Part 8; and of Col. McLean, in *Can. Arch.*, Q. 12, p. 39.

⁷ *Can. Arch.*, Q. 12, p. 7. To Germaine May 14, 1776.

⁸ The list of revolutionists sent home by Carleton May, 1777, contains 27 names and is apparently intended as a full one. *Ibid.*, Q. 13, p. 106.

intrigues it is true carried on through the whole war; but these were conducted in the main through the re-visits of those who had departed with the Americans, and were directed solely toward securing a hold upon the French Canadians. November 20, 1776, Carleton transmits loyal addresses from the British subjects of Quebec, and expresses himself as so well satisfied of the sincerity of the signers that there is "reason to hope that this part of His Majesty's Dominions may with proper arrangements be made the firm support of the British interests on this continent."¹ But although they had refused to go the full length desired by their more violent early leaders, the English-speaking party continued unanimously opposed to the Quebec Act, and maintained a more or less vigorous agitation against it down to its partial repeal in 1791. We hear of hostile petitions presented in 1778, and again in 1784, and an examination of the language of these shows that the position of the main body continued to be pretty much as represented by Masères. With the introduction of the Loyalist element at the close of the war the party gained immensely in weight, and attention to its representations could no longer be delayed.

But my main purpose in this chapter is to enquire into the results of the Quebec Act on the French Canadians. The generally accepted view that they were fully satisfied with the Act and thereby strongly attached to the British connection, is one which, without examination of evidence, proceeds naturally from the belief that the measure was based wholly or mainly upon their expressed desires. I have shown above that this was not the case, for the reason that the self-constituted interpreters of these desires had drawn their conclusions from very narrow and mistaken observation and very one-sided information. It is not surprising therefore to find that the results did not at all correspond with the expectations of the promoters of the measure.

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 12, p. 238.

Overwhelming evidence shows that the French Canadians were not faithful to British rule at this crisis, and that they were least faithful at the time when the Quebec Act might be supposed to have had most influence. Further evidence, equally strong, if not so great in quantity, shows that the effect of the Act on the mass of the people was one of alienation rather than conciliation.¹

It will be well to enquire first if there is any ground to expect these results, rather than those which have been so long assumed with such apparent reason. What do we know or what can we reasonably conclude as to the opinions of the mass of the people on the points which formed the main subject-matter of the Quebec Act? Of the four main provisions which I have discussed above, two,—the extension of the boundaries of the province and the decision against

¹As to the first of these statements—the hostility to British connection as shown by support of the invading revolutionists,—I do not assume any attitude of discovery. The evidence when really looked at is too overwhelming to have altogether escaped the observer. The latest and strongest expression of the truth I find in Kingsford's *History of Canada*, (V. 439,—published since my investigation was made), who says in regard to Montgomery's appearance:—"It was a rare case when the Canadians showed disfavor to the invaders; many joined their ranks." As will be seen later Mr. Kingsford however is mistaken in representing this attitude of the Canadians as only temporary. And that some more detailed and circumstantial statement is necessary to affect the general error, is shown by the wide extent of its assertion and its constant repetition. Lecky says in regard to the American invasion: "The Canadians remained loyal to England... The contagion of New England republicanism had not penetrated to Canada;" the people "were especially indignant at the invasion." (IV, 215). In a text book of the University of Toronto it is asserted that, "While the American War of Independence was in progress the French Canadian people remained faithful to their allegiance and resisted all the efforts of the Americans to induce them to revolt against the English." (Bourinot, *The Constitutional Hist. of Canada*. The statement is repeated with emphasis in the same writer's *Parliamentary Procedure and Practice*, Revised ed. 1892, p. 13.) It is needless to say that French Canadian writers have loudly and unanimously maintained the same position. A good example of the assertions of even the more enlightened and impartial of these is the following from Lareau (*Hist. Droit Can.* II, 148): "Cette concession [i. e. the Quebec Act] de la part de l'Angleterre eut sa récompense; pendant que les colonies anglaises brisaient le lien colonial, le Canada, comptant sur la justice du vainqueur resta fidèle au drapeau britannique." It seems therefore the function of such a special study as this to do what the general historian of course cannot, viz., so circumstantially to present the truth as to place it forever beyond cavil.

The second of the above statements,—as to the alienating effect of the Act,—has not I think been heretofore made, much less enforced.

an Assembly,—we may conclude to have been practically matter of indifference to the average *habitant*. The previous complaints as to the narrowing of the province had sprung from the greed of the trader or the historical pride of the educated; it was expressly testified by the most trustworthy of the witnesses before the Commons in 1774, that the mass of the Canadians neither knew nor cared anything about an Assembly, and that the few who did dreaded its establishment as likely to bring the Province into difficulties with the mother country. With regard to the third provision,—the reputed establishment of the Roman Catholic Church,—there is every ground for believing that the French Canadian would see in it only a dreaded and objectionable feature,—the re-establishment of the compulsory tithe.—As early as 1762 Murray asserts that the people “under sanction of the capitulation every day take an opportunity to dispute the tithes with their curés;”¹ and in the following year (as already pointed out), general petitions support his assertion that the people are not anxious for the continuance of the hierarchy, but will be content with the preservation of the priesthood as a devotional and educational body. Every year of British rule, there can be little doubt, increased this attitude of independence in regard to the once all-powerful church. It will be well in this connection to recall De Tocqueville’s remarks in discussing the isolation of the peasant in Old France at this time. He points out² that the clergy were the only members of the superior classes left in the country, and that the curé would thus have become the master of the rural population “s’il n’avait été rattache lui-même d’une facon si étroite et si visible à la hiérarchie politique; en possédant plusieurs des privilèges de celle-ci il avait inspiré en partie la haine qu’elle faisait naître;” a position which he emphasizes in a note which points out an ex-

¹ Can. Arch., B. 7, p. 1. See above, chapter 2.

² *Ancien Régime*, B. II, c. 12, with note.

ample from the year 1767 "de la manière dont les droits pécuniaires de clergé lui aliénaient les coeurs de ceux que leur isolement aurait du rapprocher de lui." As I have elsewhere pointed out, there is no good reason for regarding the Canadian *habitant* as so far removed from the state of mind of the peasant in Old France as has been generally assumed. With regard to the civil code provisions of the Act (in connection with which must be considered the previous reversion to the old forms of land tenure), it must be concluded that at the most the re-establishment of the old French civil law, in view of the fact that the peasant had never discontinued its use,¹ could have had very little effect on the average French Canadian. And when he considered that the tithe had been made compulsory, and that the seigneurial method of land grant was again in full operation, it would be strange if he should not feel some apprehension with regard to the reappearance of other old oppressive relations connected with the land. I have shown above that there is every reason to believe that the relations between the seigneur and the *habitant*, even early in the English period, were practically identical with those in old France, and that no part of the changed conditions had been so early and fully appreciated by the latter as their release from their former military and judicial subjection. In their ignorance of the real scope of the new measure they would naturally be apprehensive of the reviving of this old burden; and it is evident that before as after its enactment its English opponents took full advantage of their fears and ignorance.

Very little direct evidence has been found on this point, and still less that is free from suspicion. The British party, of course, before and after the Act, represented it as undesired and resented by the mass of the people. This contention is not to be regarded as weakened by the fact that a memorial and petition in favor of its main provis-

¹ See above, pp. 352-7.

ions were presented in their name to Parliament while deliberating on the measure.¹ For Masères' statement that these are not really representative may be easily conceded in view of the fact that of the fifteen signatures, most are those of members of the noblesse.² A movement of more importance and interest has been already referred to in the account of the English proceedings prior to the Act; it culminated in an offer from some French leaders in Quebec to join in the English petition for an Assembly provided that this should contain a request for the admission of Catholics to the House.³ On the rejection by the English of this condition the matter dropped. As indicating the attitude of a section probably larger in number and certainly more nearly in accord with popular feeling than the noblesse, this incident is of great interest;⁴ but it is still of little value in the determination of the question as to the views of the mass of the people on the points at issue. The very contradictory evidence given before the Commons in 1774 by the Provincial officials is no more helpful; it being evident that Masères and Lotbinière represent a small advanced portion of the traders and professional men, (perhaps also of the noblesse), and that Hey and Carleton speak for the clergy and the bulk of the noblesse. With regard to the first reception of the Act by the people we have equally

¹ For these see Masères, *Account of the Proceedings*, pp. 111-31.

² See on this point, Carleton's evidence before Commons, 1774. Also English petitions for an Assembly, Dec., 1773 (Can. Arch., Q. 10, p. 26). A curious letter in 1776 from one M. Pelissier to the President of Congress describes the signers of the French petition as "quelques adulateurs [i. e. of Carleton] et quelques ignorans fanatiques des anciennes coutumes." (4 *Amer. Arch.* IV., 596.)

³ See Masères, *Account of the Proceedings*, pp. 3-40.

⁴ It is noteworthy also as indicative of the rise of a new set of native leaders (distinct from noblesse and clergy). The lawyers and others of the lay educated class who had rapidly acquired some insight into English political ideas are evidently taking the place that had been opened up to them by the substitution for the feudal régime of the freer spirit of the English institutions. The new attitude is probably represented by the evidence of M. Lotbinière before the Commons in 1774; and the desire for forms of English self-government was undoubtedly inspired by the hope of thus giving effect to the great numerical preponderance of the French.

conflicting statements. It was not to go into force till May, 1775, and it is doubtful whether it was published in the province during 1774; so that statements as to public opinion during the latter year probably can have reference only to the few who beforehand would become intelligently acquainted with its provisions. September 20, 1774, Carleton writes to Gage of the "joy and gratitude and fidelity" of the Canadians in consequence of the late Act,¹ and three days later he reports to Dartmouth the great satisfaction of all classes of the French Canadians.² Nov. 11th³ he again speaks of their gratitude and represents their uneasiness at the measures which the old subjects are taking against the Act. But it is noticeable that he here refers to the noblesse and clergy as being apprehensive that some of the Canadians through ignorance and from their trade relations with the English, may be enticed to join the latter in their movements; especially as they are being told that the late Acts will reduce them to a state of slavery and oppression. At the same time he sends addresses, (three, from Montreal, Quebec, and Three Rivers),⁴ expressing the gratitude of French Canadians; addresses which beyond much doubt are from precisely the same quarter as the petitions immediately preceding the Act. The one from Quebec speaks apologetically of fellow-countrymen who "par des circonstances malheureuses" may have been drawn into common action with the English discontents. February 4, 1775,⁵ Carleton writes further to Gage that "all that have spoke or wrote to me upon the subject express the most grateful sense of what has been done for them;" but at the same time uses language in regard to the *habitants* which seems to show that he is beginning to perceive that the satisfaction and gratitude does not extend to them. And the indi-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 10, p. 123.

² *Ibid.*, Q. 10, p. 120.

³ *Ibid.*, Q. 11, p. 11.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 17-23.

⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 290.

cations of this soon became so unmistakable that even his obstinate prepossessions could no longer resist.

Of the suspicious attitude which in all probability the average French Canadian had maintained in regard to the re-establishment of old oppressive institutions the English discontents had been quick to take advantage, magnifying the provisions which might seem likely to operate for the revival of old burdens. We find Carleton writing November 11th, 1774,¹ that the people are being told the most extravagant stories of the arbitrary power put into the hands of the Governor and noblesse; and the French addresses of thanks of the same month (quoted from above), evidently imply that these representations were already perceived to have had effect. The most emphatic testimony on this matter comes from Masères.² Though prejudiced, and dependent for information on those who were more so, still his assertions here are so amply supported by other evidence and by later events that we cannot neglect them. He gives a letter to him from some of the English in the province³ which asserts in the most positive terms that "great numbers throughout the Province have offered to join us in petitioning for the continuance of English laws, and disavowing their consent and knowledge of the petition which was sent home last year in their names, though signed only by a few persons in the province;" but that they have been prevented from so joining by the intervention of their superiors, who told them that if they did so they would be deprived of their religion. More reliable proof of the attitude of the *habitant* is furnished in the fears entertained by those who best knew them. These are shown in a letter which was circulated among them by the clergy in December, 1774, and January, 1775, attempting to reas-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 11.

² See *Additional Papers*.

³ For letters of this tenor and probably from the same source, see Almon's *Remembrancer*, II (1776), pp. 130-44.

sure them on those provisions of the Act which were supposed to have alarmed them.¹

The new constitution went into force in the Spring of 1775 and the hostility of the people to it seems to have steadily increased. Two curiously roundabout and disconnected pieces of evidence deserve perhaps especial notice. One is an official intimation from St. John's Island, of October 13, 1775, to the effect that private letters have been received there from Quebec with the information that "the Canadians have absolutely refused to join us, assigning for reason that the English law is taken away from them, and that as the King has broken his word, they have a right to do the same."² The other is a letter of June 20, 1775, from two New Hampshire agents to Revolutionary leaders in that Province, reporting the information as to the disposition of the Canadians that has been gathered by Indian scouts. This is to the effect that the Canadians are waiting anxiously for the appearance of the Colonial forces; "they determine not to take their old law again, if we will but joyn with them, they will joyn with us."³ In August, 1775 Chief-Justice Hey writes from Quebec to the Lord Chancellor that His Lordship would be astonished to learn "that an Act passed for the express purpose of gratifying the Canadians and which was supposed to comprehend all that they either wished or wanted, is become the first object of their discontent and dislike;" the general wish being for English laws in peace and English officers in war.⁴ Thomas Gamble of the provincial commissariat department writes from Quebec September 6, 1775, to the Deputy Quartermaster General in emphatic language concerning

¹ Anonym, but said by Masères to be supposed to have been written by one of the Quebec Clergy. See Masères, *Account of the Proceedings*, pp. 264-75.

² Gov. Legge to Gen. Howe, *Hist. Mss. Comm. 11th Report*, App. V., p. 383.

³ *N. H. Prov. Papers*, VII, 525.

⁴ *Can. Arch.*, Q. 12, p. 203. Evidence stronger than this it would be difficult to imagine. For it will be remembered that Hey, who now laments the failure of the Act, had in large measure supported Carleton in the representations on which it was founded.

the ill-disposition of the people. "In short, the Quebec Bill is of no use; on the contrary the Canadians talk of that damned absurd word liberty."¹

It is only however when we come to the test of Canadian feeling which was afforded by the revolutionary invasion of 1775-76 that we reach firm ground in this matter. Previous to that event we have no definite references to French Canadian opinion in regard to the troubles in the other colonies. About the quarrel on its merits the average Canadian knew nothing² and cared little if anything. On the other hand the revolutionists had from the beginning seen the importance of Canada, and begun to guard against danger from that quarter.³ I have already narrated the earliest trace that appears of connection between the revolutionists and the English party in Quebec. A few days later, (October 26, 1774), the first Continental Congress, having drawn up those Addresses to the people of Great Britain and to the individual colonies in which the Quebec Act figured prominently as a grievance, adopted one also "to the inhabitants of the 'Province of Quebec.'" This is a skillfully drawn paper, largely occupied with an explanation of those principles of English constitutional liberty of which the Canadians had been defrauded by the Quebec Act; adjuring them to disregard religious differences, (for "the transcendent nature of freedom elevates above all such low-minded infirmities,")⁴ and by choosing delegates to the ensuing Congress to join in heartily with the other colon-

¹ 4 *Amer. Arch.*, III, 963.

² See Masères' *Freeholder*, written for their instruction on this assumption.

³ I have not found anywhere any connected statement of the early steps of Congress and other revolutionary authorities in regard to Canada, and have therefore attempted briefly to supply it.

⁴ The address to the people of Great Britain, which had referred to the Roman Catholic religion as having "deluged your island in blood, and dispersed impiety, bigotry, persecution, murder, and rebellion throughout every part of the world," had been adopted five days before. It is probable that the elevating nature of freedom has rarely operated with greater celerity. The good work went on apparently; for the Instructions of Congress to the Commissioners sent to Canada in 1776 ordered them to assure the clergy of "the full, perfect, and peaceable possession and enjoyment of all their estates." (4 *Amer. Arch.*, V, p. 411.)

ies, who had determined to "consider the violation of your rights by the act for altering the government of your Province, as a violation of our own."¹ Of this diplomatic document a translation was ordered to be made, and 2,000 copies to be struck off for distribution in Quebec by means of the delegates from the bordering Provinces. That it had been disseminated in Canada at least as early as March of the following year is shown by Carleton's correspondence;² and that a revolutionary agent had already by that time met with much success is shown by the letters of John Brown.³ Definite information of the results first appears from the official side in a letter of secret intelligence to Carleton from Montreal of May 6, 1775, stating that on May 4th most of the English residents of the town had assembled and been "harangued" by a "New Englander," the object of the meeting being supposed to be, "to choose two deputies to send to the Congress to be held at Philadelphia on the 10th of next May." On the following day the same agent reports that the attempt had failed, through the backing out of the most of the English.⁴ August 14, 1775, Carleton writes to Dartmouth of the continued efforts of the Congress to corrupt the Canadians, and encloses a copy of new letters from it and from the New York Legislature.

But before this, Congress had resolved to make a military demonstration against Canada for the double purpose of seizing the important points, and of establishing connections between the revolutionary forces and the disaffected Canadians. The first movement was one by Arnold by way of Lake Champlain in May, 1775, and on news of it Carleton called on the noblesse for assistance in raising the militia. The result was a sudden and complete shattering

¹ *Journals of Congress*, I, 40-5.

² *Can. Arch.*, Q. 11, p. 129.

³ See especially 4 *Amer. Arch.*, II, 243, where Brown speaks of the peasantry having been worked upon, "chiefly in *terrorem*;" by which must be meant misrepresentation as to the Quebec Act.

See above, p. 485.

of the expectations based on the Quebec Act. Carleton had wished to see revived the old feudal military conditions, and seems to have believed that under the new settlement they did again exist; and his attitude, in connection with the consequent efforts of the noblesse, at once confirmed the fears of the people as to the meditated re-establishment of all the obnoxious powers and privileges of their old masters. This conviction the latter seem to have done their best to foster; for Chief Justice Hey writes to the Lord Chancellor in August, 1775, of the just offense given to the people by the elation of the noblesse over the supposed restoration of their old privileges.¹ After speaking further of the misrepresentations which had been made to the Canadians by the English as to the results of the Act, Hey remarks that as the restraint of the sharp authority by which they had once been controlled was now removed, they break out "in every shape of contempt and detestation of those whom they used to behold with terror, and who gave them, I believe, too many occasions to express it."

Nothing is more certain than that the *habitants* universally resisted from the first every means of influence that the seigneurs brought to bear upon them, maintaining firmly that the latter had no military authority and that all they could demand of their tenantry was the payment of seigneurial dues. In some cases the noblesse did not escape physical violence.² As early as June 7, Carleton writes to Dartmouth of the utter failure of the noblesse to induce either the Canadians or the Indians to take up arms. The minds of the people he says, are poisoned with lies,

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 12, p. 203. See also Burgoyne to Germaine, May 14, 1777. (*Ibid.*, Q. 13, 107) for opinion that the attitude of the Canadians is largely due to the unpopularity of the seigneurs. We find it further asserted in a private letter of the time from Montreal, that though the people were in general averse to being commanded by the noblesse, they say they will go anywhere under British officers. (July 10, 1775. 4 *Amer. Arch.*, II, 1623.)

² For circumstantial accounts of several of these occurrences see letters from Quebec in Masères, *Additional Papers*, pp. 71-83. Also on the general attitude of the Canadians. *Ibid.*, pp. 91-111, 147-52. These letters of course (as well as Masères' comments on them) are partisan, and for that reason I have not brought them forward more prominently; but in view of other evidence, I have no doubt as to their practical truth and accuracy.

and the clergy and noblesse have lost much of their old influence.¹ The 20th of the following month one of the military officers at Quebec writes to a brother officer that not a single Canadian had yet been raised and that there was no hope of forming a militia.² August 14 Carleton informs Dartmouth that though the militia has been organized in some of the parishes, "the difficulty I have found in proceeding so far convinces me until their minds change, it will be inadvisable to attempt assembling any number of them, except it become absolutely necessary to try that measure for the defence of the Province, and that there is no other resource whatever."³

The Americans had now temporarily retired, leaving it fully understood that they would return shortly in greater force; and from this time on Carleton strained every nerve, with the aid of martial law, to organize a defence. His official correspondence furnishes us with the best information we can look for of the actual conduct of the people in this emergency. And we cannot hesitate to accept this evidence at its full import, when we consider that it is the disappointed confession of a man who had constantly represented that people in another light, and who was mainly responsible for the measures which were now proving so ineffectual. As of precisely the same nature we give with his also the reports of Cramahé, who commanded at Quebec while Carleton was defending Montreal. September 21, 1775, the former writes from Quebec that "no means have been left untried to bring the Canadian peasantry to a sense of their duty and engage them to take up arms in defence of the Province, but all to no purpose," though the better classes had done their utmost "to reclaim their infatuated countrymen;" and that Canadians are actually serving with

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 164. This is apparently Carleton's first perception or at least confession of the latter fact. It is significant that two days later he proclaimed martial law throughout the Province.

² *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1885, p. 177.

³ Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 222.

the Americans in every quarter.¹ On the same day Carleton writes from Montreal to the same effect, adding that "the rebels have been more successful with them [the *habitants*] and have assembled them in great numbers, . . . and with the assistance of the Canadians have invested the forts."² October 25, 1775, he reports that an attack made on the town by the rebels, of whom two-thirds were Canadians, had been repulsed, and that the success had had for a moment a good effect on the minds of the inhabitants of the surrounding country, who on the eve of the assault had resisted the orders to have all ladders in the suburbs brought in. Taking advantage of this effect, he says he had assembled some 900 militia (various other detachments coming in had been attacked and forced to disperse by other parishes, the seigneurs who had raised them being taken prisoners), but that these are now disappearing thirty and forty a night.³ November 5, 1775, he complains that his efforts have been frustrated by "the corruption and I may add by the stupid baseness of the Canadian peasantry, who have not only deserted their duty, but numbers of them have taken arms against the Crown."⁵ A few days later Cramahé sends news from Quebec, (then invested by Montgomery), of the inadequacy of the defending forces, the militia he has having with difficulty been brought to mount guard; adding that the rebels have on their side the Canadian peasantry.⁶ Not long after he says that the enemy without is not so formidable as that within, and that even if the town be kept 20 battalions will be needed to re-capture the country.⁴ On the 2nd November Carleton, (who had returned to Quebec on the fall of Montreal), writes of the "blind perverseness" and "unprecedented defection" of the people, "without even pretending the least cause of complaint." However with the defeat of

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 11, p. 249.

² *Ibid.*, p. 261.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 267.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 321.

⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 274.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 235.

Montgomery and the retreat of Arnold the Canadians assumed a less menacing attitude (a change largely due no doubt to the cantonment among them by Carleton of troops), and the Governor writes in September, 1776, that "there is nothing to fear from them in prosperity and nothing to hope for in distress, the multitude being influenced by hope of gain or fear of punishment."¹

Such is a small portion of the testimony of the main officers as to the conduct of the Canadians in the hour of greatest danger; it is abundantly supported from the side of the defenders by the scattered statements of inferior officials, civil and military, which my space will not allow me to dwell upon. I cannot, however, refrain from again reverting to the testimony of Chief-Justice Hey, who all this time had been quietly and judicially watching the progress of events from Quebec; as well as adding that of a French Canadian witness. August 28, 1775, Hey writes (to the Lord Chancellor)² that the behavior of the Canadians had greatly changed the views he had formerly entertained of them and that he is now convinced their former good conduct was due only to fear, and that no dependence can be placed on them, for they are either terrified or corrupted. The 11th September following he adds that hardly a Canadian will take up arms; on the 17th that "not one hundred except in the towns of Montreal and Quebec are with us." The French Canadian to whom I have referred is M. Badeau, a notary of Three Rivers, who from that very favorable point of observation watched with royalist sympathies the progress of the invasion, and who has left the result for us in a "Journal des operations de l'armée americaine."³ From this I take the following entries:—September 7th, 1775,—Carleton "partit pour Montreal et eut la douleur de voir que plus il s'avancait par en haut, plus il trou-

¹ Can. Arch., Q. 12, p. 188.

² His letters are in journal form.

³ *Collections* Quebec Hist. Society, 3d series, Montreal, 1871.

vait les habitants opposés à ses dessins."—Sept. 8th: A draft being ordered from St. John, the "paroisses de Chambly s'étant mis du côté des Bostonnais firent annoncer dans toutes les autres paroisses de ne point prendre les armes contre les Bostonnais, que ces gens là venaient pour nous tirer d'oppression, le peuple canadien crédule quand il ne faut point, donna dans le sentiment des paroisses de Chambly et presque toute le gouvernement des Trois-Rivières refusa de marcher à l'exception de quelques volontaires" from three parishes.—Sept. 12: News has been received that a detachment of 67 recruits which had set out for Montreal under two seigneurs has been stopped by "les habitants de la paroisse de Chicout," and the seigneurs made prisoners.¹—February 29, 1776: The American detachment in the town of Trois-Rivières having ordered a new election of militia officers, one part of the inhabitants objected to the captain nominated on the ground that "il a le coeur Anglais et qu'il a reçu de commission du Gen. Carleton."—April 30: A list of 16 names has been given to the Americans as comprising all the royalists in the town.—May 4: The passing of some American troops. "Il n'est pas possible exprimer combien la canaille triomphe de la passée de ces gens là; il semble que chaque brigade leur apporte une fortune."

If any corroboration of testimony such as the above is needed it will be found in the reports which come to us from the continental forces,—in the letters of commanding officers and the journals of less prominent persons. August 14, 1775, John Brown had written that the Canadians, "wish and long for nothing more than to see us with an army penetrate their country. They engage to supply us with everything in their power."² The following September 6, Ethan Allen reports the conclusion of an Indian alliance

¹ Full accounts of this (most probably) and other similar occurrences will be found in *Masères*, and in Almon's *Remembrancer* for 1775.

² To Gov. Trumbull, 4 *Amer. Arch.*, II, 138.

in presence "of a large auditory of Canadians who approved of the league, and manifested friendship to the colonies, and testified their good-will on account of the advance of the army into Canada."¹ Schuyler informs the New York Congress September 29, that "The Canadians were friendly to us and join us in great numbers."² November 3rd an anonymous report comes from the River Sorel that the Canadians there have armed and been embodied in favor of the Americans to the number of more than 1000,³ About the same time Arnold reports to Washington his most kindly and hospitable reception by the people.⁴ That the American observers were not deceived through their too sanguine expectations may be inferred from letters of Schuyler to Washington in which the belief is expressed that the Canadians would join Carleton if reverses overtook the invaders;⁵ as also by a caution from Montgomery about the same time.⁶ But the latter reports again from Montreal November 24, that "I can have as many Canadians as I know how to maintain; at least I think so, while affairs wear so promising a prospect."⁷ The expedition of Montgomery went on to its disastrous culmination, and on the following January 11, Arnold still asserts that "The disposition of the Canadians is very favorable," though they "are timorous and want encouragement."⁸ Gen. Wooster's report is however that "there is but little confidence to be placed in the Canadians;—they are fond of being of the strongest party."⁹ February 27 Arnold in-

¹ To Gen. Schuyler. 4 *Amer. Arch.*, III, 742.

² *Ibid.*, III, 841.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 1343. This seems confirmed by a letter of the same date from Montgomery to Schuyler. *Ibid.* III, 1392.

⁴ All the *Journals* of the Arnold expedition speak in the same tone. Though it is to be noticed that several of them speak also of the exceedingly high prices charged by the Canadians for provisions. See especially those of Wild, Dearborne, and Thayer.

⁵ 4 *Amer. Arch.*, III, 1373.

⁶ To Schuyler, December 5. *Ibid.*, IV, 1392.

⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 1695.

⁸ To Congress. *Ibid.*, IV, 627.

⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 668. On the previous January 2, Arnold had reported his force as including 400 Canadians. *Ibid.*, p. 670.

forms Washington, (apparently referring to the Canadians, though there is obscurity,) that he has received a reinforcement of 400 men, and that many are daily coming in.¹ An officer posted at Trois Rivières writes March 24, 1766, that he has been placed in charge of the business of replacing in that District, (comprising 17 parishes,) the militia officers appointed by Carleton with others in the Continental interest, and that he finds that though the Canadians are sometimes shy, "in general they seem to be fond of holding commissions under Congress;" that about thirty such officers have been elected in the District and that late Canadian recruits number 500.² In March the Commissioners of Congress, (Franklin, Chase, and Carroll), set out for Canada. On their arrival they found a surprising change in the attitude of the Canadians; but while dwelling on the fact and its causes they still think it possible "to regain the affections of the people, to attach them firmly to our cause."³ Gen. Thomas informs Congress May 7, that the French had become so much disaffected that it was now very difficult to get supplies from them;⁴ and a few days later Arnold writes from Sorel that he is "convinced they are in general our bitter enemies."⁵ But still on the following June 1, the more sanguine Sullivan reports "the lower and some of the higher class of French people in our favor," and that he had that day been offered 600 men from three parishes.⁶ June 5th he writes to Washington of the despair of the people at the leaving of the Americans and

¹ *Amer. Arch.*, IV, p. 674.

² *Ibid.*, V, 431. The new officers were chosen by popular election, and it is reported that in some parishes there have been several candidates and high party feeling. "I receive information that bribery and corruption is already beginning to creep into their elections. At some the disputes run so high that I am obliged to interfere." That similar elections took place in the District of Montreal is shown by a letter of Gen. Wooster. *5 Amer. Arch.*, I, 12.

³ See letters of the Commissioners of Congress, May 1 and 8, 1776. Lossing, *Schuyler* II, 43-50. See also an important letter from Col. Hazen to Schuyler. *Ibid.*, pp. 46-7.

⁴ *Amer. Arch.*, VI, 451.

⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 530.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 679.

of their joy at his arrival. "It really was affecting to see the banks of the Sorel lined with men, women and children, leaping and clapping their hands from joy to see me arrive. . . . Our affairs have taken a strange turn, . . . The Canadians are flocking by hundreds to take a part with us. . . . I really find by the present behaviour . . . that the only reason of their disaffection was because our exertions were so feeble that they doubted much of our success, and even of our ability to protect them . . . ; a vast majority will be for us, and perhaps as many, according to their numbers, are really in our favor as in some other colonies upon the Continent; many of them are with Gen. Thompson in this expedition and great numbers are here, ready equipped, waiting my orders."¹ And even after the final break-up had come Sullivan reports that "the Canadians were in general very kind to them upon their retreat, and gave them every assistance in their power."² That Canadians remained enrolled in considerable numbers till the end is shown by the General Orders of July 21, 1776, directing the march to Albany of "the Regiment of Canadians with all the Canadian families, now at Ticonderoga."³

From the above testimony it is very evident not only that the Canadians had overwhelmingly declared in favor of the invaders from the first down till the disaster at Quebec, but that even after that event a considerable number clung to the colonial cause and were still ready at any moment to attach themselves to any enterprise of vigor sufficient to give any promise of success. The ordinary judgment with regard to their conduct both from the British who saw in their neutrality even only the basest ingratitude, and from the Americans who experienced a very considerable change in the later months of disaster, is not sufficient or satisfactory. According to this the people

¹⁴ *Amer. Arch.*, VI. 921. These extravagant assertions are answered by Washington with a caution against fickleness and treachery. (*Ibid.*, p. 927.)

² *Ibid.*, VI. 1037.

³ *Amer. Arch.*, I. 656.

were moved mainly by fear and the desire of being on the stronger side; they embraced or acquiesced in that cause which was for the moment locally predominant.¹ But to say that the Canadians were a timid race is to disregard wholly the facts of their military origin and training, and especially the strong testimony from both sides to their valor and conduct under the most disheartening circumstances in the last war. Nor is it sufficient to say that they had no interest in, as no knowledge of, the present colonial quarrel; that they had been growing prosperous, had devoted themselves wholly to the repairing of the ravages of the old struggle, and were now anxious only to be left in peace. The inevitable result of such a temper would have been the offering to the invader of their peace, if not active opposition, at least a stolid and hostile indifference; from which, as we have seen, their real conduct could not have been further removed. And this furthermore, takes no account of the strong influences that were brought to bear on the people from the British side. The chief of these were the strenuous measures resorted to by the clergy. Admitting all I have said as to the decreasing command of the popular mind by the church, it must still be admitted that for an *indifferent* community, the extreme step of refusing absolution to any one who had joined the invaders, might be supposed to have been a most powerful deterrent. Yet we are told that every priest in the country except one had taken this course.² That the step was en-

¹Frequent assertions of this kind are to be found, especially from the British side. As early as September 6, 1775, Ethan Allen reports that the Canadians "keep under arms throughout most of their parishes, and are now anxiously watching the scale of power." (4 *Amer. Arch.*, III. 742).

²See Col. Hazen to Antill, April 20, 1776. *Can. Arch.*, B. 27, p. 398. See also letter of Col. Caldwell (British), in *Transactions Quebec Lit. and Hist. Society*, New Series, Pt. 8 (1871). Also Jones, *Expedition to Canada*, p. 33. For the general attitude of the clergy see *Journal of Chas. Carroll*, (Md. Hist. Society, 1876), *Introd. Mem.*, pp. 30-4. This shows that their faithfulness was based not only on the general British treatment and the Quebec Act, but also on strong and well founded suspicion of the tolerance of the colonists. Later however, after the conclusion of the French alliance, there are indications in Gov. Haldimand's correspondence of disaffection even here.

tirely without efficacy can not be supposed; no doubt it did much to prevent a more open and general rising.¹ That *any* defection occurred in the face of it must be taken as the strongest proof that the Canadians were neither timid nor indifferent, but that they conceived themselves to have strong ground for discontent and apprehension. Their national feeling was not yet involved, for there was as yet no open connection between the revolution and France. In the entire absence of evidence of the existence before the Quebec Act of such discontent or apprehension as would now explain their conduct, we are driven for that explanation to the Act itself. It seems not too much to say that, supplemented as it was by the misrepresentation of its opponents, and still more by the most ill-advised attempt to establish through it the old military position of the noblesse, it drove the people into the arms of the revolutionists.

But it is further necessary to show that the defection of the Canadians at this crisis was not the momentary effect of sudden panic or of a passing wave of popular feeling.² Active misrepresentation might go far to explain such; though only on the hypothesis that the English agitators and the colonial emissaries had suddenly acquired an influence very much greater than the natural leaders of the people. The Quebec Act went into force May 1, 1775, and was superseded on the following June 9 by a condition of

¹ See "Journal of the Principal Occurrences during the Siege of Quebec . . . ; collected from some old MSS originally written by an officer during the Period of the gallant Defense made by Sir Guy Carleton." (London, 1824.) This refers to the action of the clergy in refusing the sacraments, especially extreme unction, as "a most potent spell," and therein finds the cause for the fact asserted [incorrect] that only about 300 Canadians joined the invaders.

² This seems to be the position taken by Mr. Kingsford, who has stated clearly the first defection, but who later (V. 486), says: "It is simply a duty to record that this feeling passed rapidly away, and never again obtained activity. During the period of the whole struggle, the French Canadians remained attached to the British government, and no encouragement was given for a second invasion of the Province." This positive assertion however is not to be reconciled with facts which are stated in a later volume (VII. pp. 11-14; 30).

martial law that continued about eighteen months; consequently before 1777 the people were not in a position to judge of or be influenced by it except as a matter of speculation. But misrepresentation as to it ought certainly to have been dispelled long before that time¹; from the spring of 1775 the government was in a position to do the worst that could have been apprehended. Nevertheless we find still in existence throughout the war a strong popular leaning toward the continental cause. There was of course no occasion or opportunity for open demonstrations; we must judge by the reports of the provincial officials. The value of these is emphasized by the fact that the conclusions arrived at were not hastily formed or insufficiently grounded, but were the result of the most careful examination by the best methods available into the real sentiments of the *body of the people*, not as before of the few who had thrust themselves forward as their spokesmen. A vigorous investigation was set on foot by Carleton and continued by his successor Haldimand, and in the autumn months of 1776 we meet with frequent examinations by the judicial authorities of suspected persons and of intercepted emissaries from the revolted colonies. These were continued all through the period down to the conclusion of peace (and therefore long after the civil government had been re-established). It will be impossible to go into them fully, but the calendaring of the Haldimand Collection by the Canadian Archivist² will afford an easy and accurate index to their contents. Further, we find that after the retreat of the

¹ It will be remembered however that this point is not material to my main inquiry. That is directed, not toward the practical working and effect of the Act, but with reference to the question as to whether the measures it embodied were as necessary and politic at this juncture as they have always been represented by its upholders. The matter may be summed up in the questions: Were the French Canadians laboring under such grievances as to make welcome the measures adopted for their relief, and to cause these measures to have over them the expected influence? In view of the acknowledged effect of the Quebec Act on the minds of the American revolutionists, was it nevertheless justified as a matter of policy by its effect on the French Canadians?

² See *Rep. Can. Arch.*, 1888, pp. 892-942, and *ibid.*, 1890, p. 130.

Americans, Carleton had caused troops to be cantoned through the parishes, and had thus kept himself informed of the state of public feeling. Riedèsel, who was in command of the German auxiliaries, writes to Haldimand November 29, 1787, that Carleton had given him a commission to learn the sentiments and conduct of the *habitants* in the districts in which the German troops were quartered in 1776; that he (Riedèsel) had procured the information from the captains of militia, the curés, and the commanders of the troops, had sent the same to Carleton, and had received his thanks therefor. He adds that he has still duplicates and will send them to Haldimand if desired.¹ And that the latter availed himself of this means, is shown by a second letter to him of Riedèsel in the following April, stating that as desired he has traversed the parishes of his own district several times, and has compared information got from the militia captains, from the curés, and from the German commanders, and that he sends as a result the adjoined lists of names. In the Canadian Archives we find further a collection of papers marked "Instructions to Captain Breckenridge, sent to find out the people that harboured the rebel spies, with the report of his proceedings in 1780."²

These facts mark the care exercised by the Government in at least their later reports. The various depositions show that emissaries from Congress and disaffected persons within the province were constant in their activity among the people through the whole period; and the frequent bitter references of Haldimand to the impossibility he finds in catching or tracing these firebrands³ is sufficient proof in itself of the more than passive sympathy of the people. The salient points of the official reports will

¹ Calendar Hald. Coll., p. 390. See here also for the letters of the following April, spoken of below. It will be seen that Riedèsel uses the words "lists," showing how minute the enquiry and information was.

² Report Can. Arch. for 1888, p. 906.

³ Cal. Hald. Coll., pp. 272, 236. (Early in the period Carleton complains that the emissaries of Congress can travel with more ease and safety than the King's messengers.)

be best noted in brief extracts chronologically arranged.¹ May 9th, 1776, Carleton sends home the Ordinances that had just been passed in the first legislative meeting in the Province under the new constitution, and adds that these "have been framed upon the principle of securing the dependence of this Province upon Great Britain, of suppressing that spirit of licentiousness and independence that has pervaded all the British Colonies upon this continent, and was making, through the endeavors of a turbulent faction here, a most amazing progress in this country." In the same month he writes to Burgoyne that "these people have been governed with too loose a rein for many years, and have imbibed too much of the American spirit of licentiousness and independence to be suddenly restored to a proper and desirable subordination." This letter was in answer to complaints from Burgoyne concerning the difficulty he found in procuring enough Canadians to perform the necessary batteaux service for his expedition;—a difficulty to the serious nature of which we have various further references, the Canadians even when started deserting at every opportunity and frequently refusing obedience. In the spring of 1778 Carleton was replaced in the Governorship by Haldimand, and the first official communication of the latter (July 25, 1778), is to the effect that beyond the upper classes and clergy "the Canadians are not to be depended upon especially if a French War breaks out."² In October of the same year he writes of the caution he is exercising, "not to make demands that from exciting murmurs might lead to a declaration of sentiments which the French Alliance with the rebels has undoubtedly raised in numbers of them, who in regard of the rebellion were unquestionably attached to Government, and renewed in the others;—the symptoms of which change in

¹ For exact references see the *Reports Can. Arch.*, as above.

² This and the immediately following letters are from the Haldimand Collection. See *Calendar*, in *Reports Can. Arch.*, under dates.

the Canadians is everywhere manifest." June 7th, 1779, he states that "the Canadian inhabitants both above and below" had "become adherent to the united cause of France and the Americans." By "above" he seems to mean in the Western region, for the letter is written in connection with the failure in that quarter of an important expedition under Hamilton against Vincennes and other posts; writing to Germaine in the following year¹ Hamilton speaks bitterly of the unlooked for treachery and unexampled ingratitude of the Canadians. The testimony shows therefore the widespread nature of the dissafection.² June 18, 1779, Haldimand writes further in regard to the French alliance and the proclamation to the Canadians of d'Estaing, commander of the French fleet, that "any considerable misfortune happening to me just now would raise the whole country in arms against us; and this opinion is not founded upon distant and precarious information, but upon a precise information of the general disposition of the inhabitants."³ October 25, 1779, he says that he believes the appearance of the enemy "would be followed by the revolt of a great part of the province."⁴

¹ Can. Arch., Q, 18, p. 9.

² There seems to be no question that the French Canadians scattered through the northwestern regions favored the revolutionary cause more or less actively throughout the war. See on this Roosevelt, *Winning of the West*, I, and Hinsdale, *Old Northwest*, pp. 150-9. In regard to the expedition of George Rogers Clark the latter says, "It is perfectly clear that had they [the French, Canadians] taken the side of the British, Clark could never have done his work." (p. 159.)

³ This latter statement is to be carefully noted. For the sources of information see above.

⁴ As part of the investigation of this matter from another standpoint it may be worth seeing how much help the government actually received from the French Canadians in the defense of the Province. The material we have is sufficient to show that, the statement of Hey above was almost literally true; that outside the noblesse, not more than 100 actually bore arms in any sort of fashion at any time during the period. Nov. 16, 1775 the number of Canadian militia at Quebec is officially given as 300, May 1, 1766, as 508; there is no likelihood that it ever exceeded this latter figure. Outside of the town of Quebec there were practically none in arms. May 6, 1779, Haldimand writes to an officer (apparently in answer to an offer of service), that the raising of 200 or 300 Canadians at that time would be a much more difficult operation than he (the officer) imagined; from which and other indications we may conclude that very few if

The above examination has been directed solely to the conduct of the mass of the people, *bourgeois*¹ and *habitant*. The clergy and the noblesse remained faithful, though unmistakable indications of wavering were to be perceived even amongst them after the conclusion of the French all-

any Canadians of the class we refer to were then in arms. Among the military papers we have complete commissariat returns giving the description and number, monthly, of the different classes to whom rations were issued, and from these I have extracted the numbers set down as "Canadians" from Nov., 1778, to the end of 1780. This most probably includes those upon *corvée* service, which was performed during the summer months. In these months the average amounts to from 500 to 600; outside of them to not more than 50. This is for the whole Province and apparently for all classes of Canadians. It shows that even fewer were under service in the later years than in those I have more fully considered, and warrants the conclusion that outside of the actual service given by about 150 noblesse and by about the same number of the better class of *bourgeois*, the people (embracing 15,000 able bodied men), contributed practically nothing toward the defense of the Province.

¹ I have referred above to the *bourgeoisie* generally as apparently not sufficiently differentiated from the *habitants* to justify a close separate examination. In the main this may also be concluded of their conduct at this crisis; but an exception must be made with regard to a few of the better situated. The approving notices of the government class with the noblesse and clergy the better sort of the "*bourgeoisie*" or "*citizens*." But that these references are really applicable only to a very small number,—the government vision here, as in the representations previous to the Quebec Act, being cognizant only of those whose position brought them into prominence,—is abundantly proved by the exact statements given of the number of French Canadians who took part in the defence of Montreal and Quebec. The population of the towns together must have been about 20,000 (in 1765 was 14,700), of which eight-tenths would come under the class we are considering. Yet we find that not more than 500 Canadians of all classes took part in the defence of Quebec, and Carleton writes from Montreal (then closely invested by Montgomery), Oct. 28, 1775, that the walls are defenceless, and it is doubtful if a guard for the gates could be procured from the militia. Later he writes from Quebec that though it could hold out if the townsmen could be depended upon, there are so many traitors within that a successful defence is very doubtful. Jan. 11, 1776, Arnold reports from before Quebec that he has been assured that more than one-half of the inhabitants would willingly open the gates. July 25, 1778, Haldimand classes "some part of the *bourgeoisie* in the towns" with the noblesse and clergy as not included in his statement that the Canadians were not to be depended upon. But in September of the following year he complains of the unlooked for ingratitude of even the better sort. On the whole there seems to be no ground for supposing that in this crisis any more than in their general attitude, the body of the inhabitants of the towns differed essentially in sentiment from those of the country; though it is evident that in the narrow compass of the towns, directly under the official eye, it would be impossible for disaffection to be so openly shown as in the open unrestraint of the widespread country settlements. It is safe to conclude that the section of the *bourgeoisie* which showed decided attachment to the cause of Government was made up mainly of those closely connected in various ways with the official or higher classes, or of those who were more or less directly influenced by English commercial relations.

iance. This was to be expected however; and it will be remembered that the same national instinct would be operative with the mass of the people also after that event. I have spoken above of the strenuous efforts of the clergy in the early years in behalf of the established government. The noblesse seem at the same time to have enlisted for the defence of the Province almost to a man. As late as October, 1780, Haldimand writes that "the Quebec Act alone has prevented or can in any degree prevent the emissaries of France and the rebellious colonies from succeeding in their efforts to withdraw the Canadian clergy and noblesse from their allegiance to the crown of Great Britain."¹ This may be correct for the time at which it was written (after the French alliance), but there is no reason to suppose it so for the earlier more critical years. The hereditary feeling of hostility to the British colonies was very vivid among the noblesse, the leaders of the old border wars. They were also naturally prejudiced against the forms of government and the constitution of society prevailing throughout these colonies; institutions which had now become all the more distasteful from their supposed influence in the lately-developed independent attitude of the Canadian peasantry. The noblesse had been well treated by the English authorities in Quebec; the aristocratic governors had deferred constantly to them in all matters, and had steadily held out hopes of employment and the restoration of old privileges; in no particular whatever could they look for the same degree of favor or influence from a connection with the doubtful cause of the rebellious colonies. Previous to the French alliance, no influence whatever can be discovered which was likely to incline them in the least toward the continental cause; all the material conditions and every instinct of caste and education operated to range them on the imperial side. After the French alliance, the British hold was too firmly established

¹ Can. Arch., B. 54, p. 354.

in the Province for their defection to have made any difference. At no time as I have shown, could they have thrown into the scale the weight of more than their own small number. Indeed there is strong reason to believe that if they had embraced the colonial cause, that fact alone would have done much to place the mass of the people on the opposing side.

As to the clergy the same course of argument applies, with the addition of the fact that the church in Canada was convinced of the intolerant temper of the colonists in regard to their religion, and was well aware that at the most it could not hope in that connection for as much as it had enjoyed in Quebec from the conquest. There is no reason whatever to believe that in any event would the clergy in those earlier years have refrained from active opposition to the continental cause.

It must therefore be concluded that the Quebec Act had added no element of strength to the British cause in the Province; that on the contrary, while it had confirmed the allegiance of those whose allegiance needed no confirmation, it had been the main cause of the disaffection of those who otherwise would have been at least quiescent.

B. The Failure of the American Expeditions.

If the conclusion reached above be correct, we are confronted with a difficulty in the utter failure of the expedition. It might not unreasonably be concluded that such a failure bears strongly against the position I have taken; that if the Canadians were thus so favorably disposed toward the invaders, the utmost vigor and ability on the part of the few British defenders would have been wholly inadequate to the prevention of the definite attachment of the Province to the Revolutionary cause. To answer this objection it will be necessary to view the enterprise from the American side to see if any other factors enter into the situation. Such I think will be found to be the case; it

will be found that not only did the revolutionists fail to make any effective use of the Canadian alliance, but that by the mismanagement and misconduct of both officers and men, the Canadians were from the first impressed with the incapacity of their would-be emancipators, and were gradually driven by actual ill-treatment to neutrality if not to hostility. The favorable moment was let slip and did not return. With the spring of 1776 not only was the British force strengthened to a degree which enforced caution upon the most hostile of the peasantry, but by that time that peasantry had had its revolutionary fervour cooled by treatment as arbitrary and injurious as anything that could be expected from the dreaded revival of the conditions of the old régime. The evidence on this point leaves us wondering, not at the cooling off of the Canadians, but at the retention by them of any degree of respect for or sympathy with the revolutionary cause. That a very considerable degree was retained is shown above, and the fact testifies to the strength of the original feeling; but until the Franco-American alliance it did not again in all probability reach sufficient vigor to afford any likelihood of active manifestation.

It is not my intention to enter upon any full consideration of the invasion of Canada by the Revolutionary forces in 1775-6; full accounts already exist for all parts of this enterprise except for that Canadian side which it is here attempted to supply. The general causes assigned for the failure of the movement are well-known, and it is assumed that sufficient explanation thereof is given under the heads of such apparently unavoidable drawbacks as disease among the troops, short terms of enlistment, lack of ready money. Even if these difficulties had existed in the degree usually stated, it would be rash to assume that the responsibility of the authorities for the disaster is thereby much reduced. But the extent of these obstacles can be shown to have been greatly exaggerated. The degree of disease among

the troops would have been found a comparatively small factor if disease alone had interfered with their efficiency; the lack of specie was at no time a fatal defect. It seems very evident that Congress never made efforts adequate to the degree of importance attached to the enterprise by leading military authorities.¹ What that degree was is shown by many emphatic utterances. Washington, in his Instructions to Arnold, September 14, 1775, especially impresses upon him that the command is "of the utmost importance to the interest and liberties of America," and that upon it the safety of the whole continent may depend; further adjuring him solemnly to pay every regard to the attitude of the Canadians, "bearing in mind that if they are averse to it, [i. e., the expedition], and will not coöperate, or at least willingly acquiesce, it must fail of success. In this case you are by no means to prosecute the attempt. The expense of the expedition and the disappointment are not to be put in competition with the dangerous consequences which may ensue from irritating them against us, and detaching them from that neutrality which they have adopted."² "In the following October, R. H. Lee writes to Washington of the expedition: "The ministerial dependence on Canada is so great that no object can be of greater importance to North America than to defeat them there. It appears to me that we must have that country with us this winter, cost what it may."³

¹ It has been impossible for me to enter on a close examination of the responsibility of Congress with regard to its earlier insufficient support of the expedition. A severe view will be found expressed in very pointed terms in Lossing's *Schuyler* (II. 55-7). Congress is there charged with general ignorance as to the military operations, and especially with a failure to apprehend the great importance of the Canadian ones. Its efforts were spasmodic and its promises rarely fulfilled; it replied to reports of the desperate condition of things with indefinite resolutions which sounded like mockery. In the dread of a standing army it had adopted the ruinous policy of short enlistments; persisting in this even when the evil effects had been fully felt. While appreciating the difficulties of the situation, it seems to me that there are very strong grounds for these reproaches. With regard to enlistment, Richard Smith makes the following diary entry of proceedings in Congress January 19, 1776: "A motion that the new troops be enlisted for 3 years or as long as the war shall continue was opposed by the Northern Colonies and carried in the negative." (*Amer. Hist. Rev.*, April, 1896, p. 494.)

² *Amer. Arch.*, III, 765.

³ *Amer. Arch.*, III, 1137.

And four days later¹ Washington impresses upon Schuyler, who was about to lead the western part of the force, that "The more I reflect upon the importance of your expedition, the greater is my concern lest it should sink under insuperable difficulties. I look upon the interests and salvation of our bleeding country, in a great degree to depend upon your success." To Arnold in the following January he states that "To whomsoever it [i. e., Quebec and in consequence Canada], belongs, in their favour probably will the balance turn. If it is in ours, success, I think, will most certainly crown our virtuous struggles; if it is in theirs, the contest at least will be doubtful, hazardous, and bloody."² That Congress shared in this opinion at a later stage at least is shown by a letter from the President to Gen. Thomas, May 24, 1776, in which it is stated that Canada is "an object of the last importance to the welfare of the United Colonies. Should our troops retire before the Enemy and entirely evacuate that Province, it is not in human wisdom to foretell the consequences."³ On the same day Congress forwarded to the Commissioners in Canada all the hard money it had been able to procure;⁴ sending in addition about three weeks later \$20,000 in specie and \$190,000 in paper. These funds might earlier have had an important effect that now was impossible; that the main obstacle was not now at least of a financial character may be seen from the statement to Congress by the Commissioners at Montreal, in May, that though there was plenty wheat and flour in the country, "it was with difficulty that either could be procured a few days ago, for ready money."⁵ It cannot be questioned of course that the money problem was present from the first, and that it had an important bearing. The journals of the Arnold expedi-

¹ *Amer. Arch.* p. 1196 (Oct. 26, 1776).

² *Ibid.*, IV. 874.

³ *Ibid.*, VI. 558.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 580.

⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 587.

tion show that however friendly the Canadians had been at the first contact, they were even then thriftily endeavoring to turn an honest penny from the necessities of the troops;¹ insisting in some cases on the immediate payment of hard cash. But this dislike of paper money is easy to understand quite apart from any special distrust of the Americans, if we remember the ruinous experiences of the Province with it under the French régime, and the losses thus experienced since the war in spite of all the efforts of the English Government.² However friendly in feeling, the Canadians were not anxious to run much risk either of person or property. But that they did risk something, and that the failure of ready money alone would not have seemed to them a fatal drawback, is very evident. The American force could not have existed in amity a month if the Canadians had not accepted promises, written and spoken, in lieu of hard cash; it was not until even these promises had failed and past ones had been disgracefully repudiated, that in combination with other matters, the financial element became serious. February 21, 1776, Wooster informs the President of Congress that he should soon, in the absence of specie, be forced to "lay the country under contribution; there is no other alternative. We have not by us one half money enough to answer the pressing demands of the country people to whom we are indebted."³ About a week later (March 4), Arnold issued a Proclamation giving paper money currency, "declaring those enemies who refuse it." "Many (he says), received it willingly, but the greater part were averse to taking it."⁴ The supply even of paper was however apparently soon exhausted, and we hear of the inhabitants being forced to accept receipts for services or supplies in the

¹ See especially Wild's *Journal* (Nov. 5, 1775), Dearborne's (Nov. 6), Thayer's (Nov. 5).

² See on this subject the paper by Mr. Breckenridge in the *Chicago Journal of Political Economy* June, 1893, pp. 406-31.

³ *Amer. Arch.*, IV. 1470.

⁴ Arnold to Deane, *Ibid.*, V. 549.

form of "certificates not legible, with only one half a signature, and of consequence rejected by the Quarter-Master General."¹ The situation is probably accurately enough described by the Commissioners to Canada in their statement May 1st, that, "The general apprehension that we shall be driven out of the Province as soon as the King's troops can arrive concurs with the frequent breaches of promises the inhabitants had experienced, in determining them to trust our people no further."² A week later they report that £14,000 is owed in the colony, and that with the payment of this and some ready money, together with a change in the ill-conduct of the expedition in other respects, "it may be possible to regain the affections of the people, . . . in which case the currency of our paper money will, we think, follow as a certain consequence."³ It is evident, therefore, that, in the opinion of those best qualified to judge, the absence of ready money was but a comparatively minor difficulty; that if the Canadians were otherwise well treated it would present no more difficulties than in the other Provinces.

To what ill treatment then had the Canadians otherwise been subjected? What misfortunes had they experienced from the American occupation, other than the lack of prompt payment for supplies voluntarily furnished? The evidence for the answer of this question is entirely sufficient, and undoubtedly shows that at least in the latter part of the expedition, they had been treated, not with the forbearance and tact so strongly recommended by Washington, not even as neutrals from whom nothing was to be expected, but rather, in spite of their abundant evidence of good will, as irreconcilable enemies.

One of the earliest explicit statements on this point that I find is contained in a letter from Col. Moses Hazen to Gen.

¹ Hazen to Schuyler, April 1st, 1776. Lossing, *Schuyler*, II. 467.

² To Congress, May 1st, 1776. *Amer. Arch.*, V. 1166. It is to be noted that it is here clearly shown that up to this time the inhabitants had trusted the invaders.

³ May 8, 1776. *Ibid.*, p. 1237.

Schuyler, April 1, 1776.¹ After making some strong statements about the changed attitude of the Canadians, he proceeds to give reasons therefor: "Their clergy have been neglected and sometimes ill-used; . . . the peasantry in general have been ill-used; they have in some instances been dragooned, with the point of the bayonet, to furnish wood for the garrison at a lower rate than the current price; half of the imperfect certificates given in payment being moreover later dishonored by the Quarter-Master General. Hazen encloses as evidence of his representations a letter from one Captain Goforth of the Continental force, commanding at Three Rivers, detailing outrages committed by the troops on their march to Quebec.² "A priest's house (Goforth writes), has been entered with great violence, and his watch plundered from him. At another house they ran in debt about 20sh. and because the man wanted to be paid, run him through the neck with a bayonet. Women and children have been terrified, and forced, with the point of the bayonet, to furnish horses for private soldiers without any prospect of pay." That these complaints are accepted as just by Schuyler, or that he had abundant other evidence, is shown by his statement to Washington shortly after, that "The licentiousness of our troops, both in Canada and in this quarter, is not easily to be described; nor have all my efforts been able to put a stop to those scandalous excesses."³ He had previously expressed to Congress his apprehension "that the imprudent conduct of our troops would create a disgust to our cause in Canada; it even hurts it in this colony."⁴ These representations are thoroughly supported by the investigations of the Commissioners of Congress, whose statements as to the non-

¹ *Amer. Arch.*, V. 869. Reprinted in Lossing's *Schuyler*, II. 46-7.

² *Ibid.*, V. 871. The letter is undated but cannot be later than March. It will be noticed that from the reference to the march to Quebec, this seems to show a high degree of lawlessness and violence in the troops early in the expedition, when there was little or no excuse through the pressure of want.

³ *Amer. Arch.*, V. 1098. (From Fort George, April 27, 1776.)

⁴ To President, April 12. (*Ibid.*, p. 868.) The colony referred to is New York.

fulfillment of pecuniary obligations to the inhabitants have been already referred to. May 8th they write from Montreal that the Canadians "have been provoked by the violences of our military, in exacting provisions and services from them without pay,—a conduct towards a people who suffered us to enter their country as friends that the most urgent necessity can scarce excuse, since it has contributed much to the changing their good dispositions toward us into enmity, and makes them wish our departure."¹ Congress did not need this report to be convinced of the truth of the charge, for we find it on April 23 resolving, "That the Commissioners of Congress to Canada be desired to publish an address to the people of Canada, signifying that Congress has been informed of injuries offered by our people to some of them, expressing our resentment at such misconduct." Matters, however, evidently did not improve; for May 10, 1776, Gen. Sullivan writes to Washington that "the licentiousness of some of the troops that are gone on has been such that few of the inhabitants have escaped abuse either in their persons or property. . . . Court-martials are vain where officers connive at the depredations of the men."² In the following June Washington expresses his conviction that "many of our misfortunes [in Canada] are to be attributed to a want of discipline and a proper regard to the conduct of the soldiery."³ A few days later (June 21, 1776), an investigation was ordered by Congress. The report of the investigating committee on the following July 30, placed as the first of the causes of the failure the short terms of enlistment, which had made the men

¹ *Amer. Arch.*, V, 1237.

² *Ibid.*, VI, 413. Sullivan writes from Albany on his way to Canada, and evidently is inspired by the traces of depredations he has come across. This is in New York therefore; but it may well be imagined that conduct would not improve in the enemy's country. The statement of Sullivan probably throws light on an entry in the Diary of Richard Smith (*Amer. Hist. Rev.*, April, 1896, pp. 510). Under date March 8, 1776 it is here noted that "Accounts transmitted from Canada by Col. Hazen of the damages done to him by our soldiers who had destroyed or damaged his house at St. Johns and killed his cattle &c. were referred to a committee."

³ To Sullivan. *Ibid.*, p. 927.

"disorderly and disobedient to their officers," and had precipitated the commanders "into measures which their prudence might have postponed, could they have relied on a longer continuance of their troops in service."¹

There would seem therefore abundant ground for the conclusion that the colonial forces had conducted themselves in such a manner as to expose to serious maltreatment even the most friendly portion of the Canadian people. The conviction will be strengthened by a glance at some evidence with regard to the general character and conduct of the rank and file of the troops; evidence which shows clearly that the invading force as a whole was, throughout the latter part of the expedition at least, afflicted with a degree of disorganization and disaffection fitted to deprive it of all claim to respect on the part of the Canadians, and to make misconduct inevitable. Very much allowance is of course to be made for the unavoidable defects that attach to a militia, and that were bound to be magnified in troops enlisted and serving under the conditions of the early part of the war. The fatal use of the short enlistment plan was something for which Congress was responsible; the lack of harmony and union as between troops of different colonies was certainly to be looked for.²

¹ *Journal of Congress*, v. 239. I have thought it necessary for my purpose to detail some of the more striking evidence on this point. But that the conduct in question has not been without recognition even from partial writers, is shown by Bancroft's statement that, "The Canadian peasantry had been forced to furnish wood and other articles at less than the market price, or for certificates, and felt themselves outraged by the arbitrariness of the military occupation." (IV, 376.)

² An indication of the existence and nature of this difficulty in the matter I am treating is afforded by the following Resolution of the General Assembly of Connecticut, Oct., 1775. (*Col. Records of Conn.*, XV, 138.) "This Assembly being informed that certain questions and disputes had arose amongst the troops lately raised by this colony . . . and now employed against the ministerial forces in Canada, which disputes, unless prevented, may be attended with unhappy consequences. Therefore it is hereby resolved by this Assembly that all the Troops . . . lately raised by this Colony . . . are and shall be subject to the rules, orders, regulations and discipline of the Congress of the Twelve United Colonies during the time of their inlistment." See also as to Montgomery's difficulties, Lossing, *Schuyler*, I. 426-7. Under date Dec. 13, 1775, a British officer in Quebec writes that news has just been received that "the besiegers were greatly dis-

These features are found in all the early operations of the Continental troops, and the special difficulties and disasters of the Canadian expedition were sure to make them more manifest and injurious. But that in this expedition there was also displayed other and more serious and fundamental defects in the character and bearing of the men is hardly to be denied. The impartial observer is forced to the conclusion that the word mercenary would not on the whole be an unjust appellation. It will be remembered that the word occurs in the exceedingly strong language used by Washington himself at this time about the force under his command. He writes to Congress in the latter part of 1775 that "Such a dearth of public spirit and such a want of virtue . . . I never saw before; . . . such a mercenary spirit pervades the whole [force] that I should not be at all surprised at any disaster that may happen."¹ And if this could be said of the troops assembling for defence in the heart of the country, we cannot be surprised to discover the same unsatisfactory condition in offensive operations of such magnitude and difficulty as those in Canada.

That the spirit in the Canadian expedition was unsatisfactory in the extreme from the beginning is shown clearly in Montgomery's statements. October 31, 1775, he writes: "The New England troops are the worst stuff imaginable for soldiers. They are homesick; their regiments have melted away, and yet not a man dead of any distemper. There is such an equality among them, that the officers have no authority, and there are very few among them in whose spirit I have confidence. The privates are all gen-

satisfied with their General's proceedings, and that their body of men appears backwood in doing the duty required of them." ("Journal of principal occurrences during the siege of Quebec." Edited by Shortt, London, 1824.) Col. Trumbull (as quoted below), in describing the remains of the expedition as he encountered it on the retreat, says that there was "neither order, subordination, or harmony; the officers as well as men of one colony, insulting and quarrelling with those of another." (*Reminiscences*, p. 302.)

¹ Sparks, *Washington*, III, 173.

erals, but not soldiers; and so jealous that it is impossible, though a man risk his person, to escape the imputation of jealousy."¹ The most strenuous efforts were found necessary to induce the troops to enter at all upon the enterprise; it seems most probable that, but for the general belief in the weakness of the enemy and the warm support of the French-Canadians, it would have been found impossible. The force steadily diminished; on the 20th of November, Schuyler writes to Congress that "The most scandalous inattention to the public stores prevails in every part of the army. . . . The only attention that engrosses the minds of the soldiery is how to get home the soonest possible."² With this temper it was to be expected that the force would diminish even more rapidly under disaster. On the receipt of the news of the failure of Montgomery's attack on Quebec, Gen. Wooster writes to Schuyler from Montreal: "Many of the troops insist upon going home, the times of enlistment being out. Some indeed have run away without a pass or Dismissal, expressly against orders. I have just been informed that a Capt. Pratt of the 2nd Battalion of Yorkers has led off his Company for St. Johns."³

There is some direct testimony as to the behaviour of the troops at Quebec in the journals of survivors. In that of Henry we have under date December 12 an account of the sacking by the troops of the house of a prominent Canadian near the town, and the evil results on the soldiery. "Though our Company was composed of freeholders, or the sons of such, bred at home under the strictures of re-

¹ To Schuyler, from St. Johns. See Lossing, *Schuyler*, I. 427. The justice of these and similar complaints, Lossing says, "impartial history, enlightened by facts, fully concedes."

² Lossing's *Schuyler*, I. 466. It is but fair to say that a more favourable impression is given by other statements in this letter, which however in their isolation do not seem on the whole to effect my general conclusion. In the *Diary* of Richard Smith (*Amer. Hist. Rev.*, Jan., 1896, p. 296) we have the following entry of Dec. 18, 1775: "Montgomery's soldiers very disobedient and many of them come Home without Leave."

³ Jan. 5, 1776. (*New Hampshire Prov. Papers*, VII. 720.)

ligion and morality, yet when the reins of decorum were loosed, and the honourable feeling weakened, it became impossible to administer restraint. The person of a tory, or his property, became fair game, and this at the denunciation of a base domestic villain."¹ This writer indeed takes pains to assert expressly that only Tories were plundered, and that the peasantry were especially protected and respected; but the mass of adverse evidence forbids us to consider the statement of weight further than with regard to his own company. In Caleb Haskell's *Journal*² we have a glimpse of the attitude of the time-expired troops. Under date Jan. 30-1, he tells how the writer's Company, "looking upon ourselves as free men," in that their time of enlistment had expired, were tried and punished by Court-Martial for disobedience to orders, and how, "finding that arbitrary rule prevailed," they had finally concluded to remain and serve (which they did until the beginning of May, decamping then at a critical moment). Some interesting particulars are further found in these journals of the conduct of those who were taken prisoners on the occasion of the assault. Ebenezer Wild tells us under date January 3-4, (i. e., on the third and fourth days of captivity), that Carleton having sent for a list of the names of the prisoners, especially of those who were old countrymen, "they, [i. e., presumably, the old countrymen; in all probability meaning thereby those born in the British Islands], chiefly enlisted in the King's service."³ More particular information is given by Capt. Simeon Thayer⁴ who says that the old countrymen were threatened by Carleton with being sent to England and tried as traitors. In the lists given by Thayer with regard to the American losses in the assault on Quebec, we find the following figures for all ranks:—killed, 35; wounded, 33; prisoners, 372; enlisted, 94.

¹ *Account of the Campaign against Quebec* (Albany, 1877), p. 98.

² Newburyport, 1881. (Pamphlet.)

³ *Proceedings Mass. Hist. Society*, April, 1886.

⁴ *Collections R. I. Hist. Society*, VI (Providence, 1867). App. to *Journal*.

We see therefore that fully 25 per cent. of the prisoners at Quebec took service with their late enemies, apparently without much delay. If these comprised only "old countrymen," it is an interesting fact with regard to the composition of the troops. But we have little ground for confidence as to the firmness even of the acknowledged colonists. Col. J. Trumbull, (Acting Adjutant General with Gage), writes to his father, Governor Trumbull of Connecticut, on July 12, 1776,¹ of encountering the remnants of the Canadian expedition "ruined by sickness, fatigue, and desertion, and void of every idea of discipline or subordination." Of the 10,000 men of the previous spring, 6,000 are left; of the other 4,000, "the enemy has cost us perhaps one, sickness another thousand, and the others God alone knows in what manner they are disposed of. Among the few we have remaining, there is neither order, subordination, or harmony; the officers as well as men of one colony, insulting and quarreling with those of another." About the same time Lt. Ebenezer Elmer says of the same troops, "The whole of their conduct at Canada since the death of the gallant Montgomery seems nothing but a scene of confusion, cowardice, negligence and bad conduct."² In an account of the naval operations on Lake George in October, 1776, Trumbull further describes the dangerous influence exerted by Carleton over the prisoners then taken by him. "These had all been allowed to return home on condition of not bearing arms again till they were exchanged; when encountered by Trumbull on the homeward march "all (he says) were warm in their acknowledgment of the kindness with which they had been treated and which appeared to me to have made a very dangerous impression." He therefore "placed the boats containing the prisoners under the guns of a battery and gave orders that no one

¹ Trumbull, *Reminiscences*, p. 302. (Appendix.).

² *Proceedings New Jersey Hist. Society*, II, 132. This is written at the Mohawk river, in the relief expedition of Gen. Sullivan. It is a significant fact that this very detailed journal is very largely taken up with Court-martial proceedings.

should be permitted to land, and no intercourse take place with the troops on shore until orders should be received from Gen. Gage."¹ When the situation had been presented to Gage the latter ordered that the troops should return home immediately without being allowed to land. This seems to show not only the ease with which the prisoners had been shaken in their patriotism, but also a very great lack of confidence in the main force. A glimpse of the genesis of these forces in the spring of 1776 is to be obtained from a letter of one Capt. James Osgood to the Chairman of the New Hampshire Committee of Safety. He informs him that he has enlisted for Canada about 60 good men; adding "I have had a great number Deserted after paying them the Bounty and part of advance pay to support their families."²

I shall add but little on this general point. An account by an officer of the American force of the final withdrawal from Quebec seems to show that this closing act was by no means creditable; the writer describes it as a "disgraceful retreat," marked by the "utmost precipitation;" he himself "meeting the roads full of people, shamefully flying from an enemy that appeared by no means superior to our strength."³ The commissioners to Canada write to Congress May 17, 1776: "We want words to describe the confusion which prevails through every department relating to the army," and point out "the unfeeling flight and return at this juncture of all the soldiers and the greater part of the officers who were entitled to be discharged."⁴ On May 27, after dwelling on the distressed condition of the army, they tell of the plundering of the baggage "by those whose times were out, and have since left Canada. We are informed by Capt. Allen *that the men who, from pretended indisposition, had been exempted from do-*

¹ *Reminiscences*, p. 34.

² *New Hampshire State Papers* VIII, 164.

³ *Amer. Arch.*, VI. 398.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 587.

*ing duty, were the foremost in the flight, and carried off such burdens on their backs as hearty and stout men would labour under."*¹

In view of these facts we must at least concur in the words of Washington, already quoted, "I am convinced many of our misfortunes are to be attributed to a want of discipline and a proper regard to the conduct of the soldiery." Nor can we demur from the belief expressed by the President of Congress that "there has been very gross misconduct in the management of our affairs in Canada."² I am not interested here to point out that this misconduct on the part of the troops was supplemented by gross mismanagement on the part of the leaders, from Congress down; as stated before it is not my purpose to write a history of the expedition, or seek the full explanation of its failure. That purpose is rather to show that the revolutionary cause, as expressed in this movement, could in no sense attract the French-Canadians; that on the contrary, this contact with that cause must in every respect have acted strongly to repress the zeal of the ardent among them, to bring doubt to the most sanguine, to anger and antagonize not only the indifferent but even the amicably inclined. Herein is the explanation of the failure to secure for the movement that effective aid from the strong predilections of the Canadian people which had been confidently and justly expected. It is an explanation which is consistent with the existence of such a predilection in a high degree; in it I am confident, is comprised in the main the explanation of the non-inclusion of the Province of Quebec (and of consequence all Canada), in the regions destined to form the United States. It is, I think, not to be doubted that had the favorable attitude of the Canadians been carefully cultivated, had the *personnel* of the invading force been of

¹ Introductory Memoir to Carroll's *Journal*, p. 38. (Maryland Hist. Soc., 1876.) The italics seem to be the commissioners'.

² To Washington, June 21, 1776. (4 *Amer. Arch.*, VI, 1009.)

higher grade, had the means been furnished, both to enable that army to avoid all arbitrary conduct, and to avail itself more thoroughly of the French Canadian assistance, the campaign would have ended in an altogether different manner. Even if the disaster at Quebec had still been experienced, it would not have had the demoralizing effect it did have; the invaders would have been still strongly sustained by a friendly people until adequate reinforcements had arrived. It is useless to contend that the French Canadians were a timid race, and of little help to whatever cause they might embrace; students of the previous war find them in it, as throughout their whole history, displaying under the most discouraging circumstances, in very high degree the qualities of regular troops.¹ It is inconceivable that in fifteen years they could have so degenerated. They embraced about 15,000 able-bodied men, practically all trained to arms; here was certainly a factor that, well managed, might indeed prove the decisive one. At the very least we are justified in concluding that with this aid organized and kept effective, the American force could have maintained itself in the country until the French alliance had formed a basis for more decisive operations. That alliance alone, when it did come, was sufficient to stir again to the depths the whole Canadian people, including even the classes which before had immovably supported the British cause; it is surely not too much to say that if the total withdrawal of the Continental forces had not enabled the British to get a firm control of the country, and to take all possible measures of precaution against new attacks or uprisings, the province would have presented a most favorable field of effort; a field the French would have been only too eager to occupy.

¹ See above, p. 283, for Carleton's testimony (that of an antagonist), as to their conduct.

CONCLUSION.

The latter part of the foregoing study has had for its central point the relations of the Province of Quebec with the American Revolution, as gathered about the Quebec Act of 1774 and the revolutionary invasion of the Province in 1775-6. I have attempted to examine the Quebec Act in the light of its origins and environment, and thus to show, at this great crisis for America and for English colonial empire, the nature and degree of the connections, conscious and unconscious, existing in the British administrative mind between the new fortunes of Canada and the West and the conditions and problems of the older colonies. And from the side of the Revolution especially I have followed up that crisis until the parting of the ways has (as we see it now), fully declared itself; until the British North America of the future has been clearly differentiated from the British North America of the past. How unnecessary and indeed surprising that differentiation was, and how it came about, the last chapter has been intended to show.

In addition to these two important aspects of the Revolutionary connections of the Quebec Act, reference has also been briefly made to the effect of the Act in the hastening or aggravating of the difficulties with the other colonies. This however I have not been able to fully enquire into. Closer investigation will, I feel sure, show that the disastrous influence of the measure upon the colonial temper was as great as that of the more direct attacks upon colonial institutions. It would seem as if this most unfortunate of enactments had been specially under the patronage of some malign genius; for the unfortunate nature of its provisions is equalled by the unhappy moment of its appearance. We cannot wonder at its evil influence on the colonial troubles, nor at the misconceptions of the irri-

tated colonists. It was most natural to suppose that it had a vital connection with the coercive measures in whose company it appeared; it needed but a slight degree of suspicion to invest it with the most sinister aspect. Rather than being surprised at the ideas of the Revolutionary fathers in regard to it, I have been surprised instead at finding that their suspicions are so utterly without foundation. The reasonableness of these suspicions and the impress that they have left on later historical writing, though not the only reasons for the care with which I have traced the origins of the Act, seem to me alone sufficient to justify that care. I have attempted to show that it had a natural and altogether explainable genesis apart altogether from the special difficulties in the other colonies; that practically no evidence seems to exist that any one of its objectionable provisions was, in origin or development, appreciably affected by these difficulties. The matter has been treated not merely negatively; it has been shown also that these provisions had been fully determined upon years before the events occurred to which their origin has been supposed to be due, and upon grounds, entirely apart from them, which might well seem amply sufficient to justify such action.

I may possibly be accused of viewing this matter with too particular an eye for the exact date; it may be said that colonial difficulties had existed and been steadily growing from 1764 down. It should perhaps be sufficient to reply that these difficulties previous to the close of 1773 had not called forth or seemed likely to call forth, any seriously repressive measures on the part of the home government; that still less is it to be supposed that they could possibly have evoked such deeply laid and carefully concealed plans of hostile far-reaching action as the Canadian and Western measures have been ascribed to. It is indeed I think undeniable that the belief in such plans, at that day or since, has been held or at least advanced only in

connection with the idea that the provisions of the Quebec Bill were subsequent in origin to the more serious and aggravated phase of colonial difficulties that may be said to date from the latter part of 1773.¹ But a more conclusive line of answer to this objection will probably be furnished in a reference to the lack of continuity in the Imperial executive as between 1764 and 1774, in connection with a real continuity in Canadian policy, so far as can be discerned, from the very beginning of serious attention to Canadian matters. I have shown above that all the important provisions of the Act, except that in regard to an Assembly, had been fully discussed and to all appearances practically decided upon, not only before the formal establishment of the Tory Ministry of 1770, but also before the termination of the Chatham influence in 1768. That is, if the Quebec Act had been passed in 1768 or even in 1767, it would, so far as we can judge, have been mainly identical with the measure of 1774. It was in July 1766 that the Chatham ministry was formed, and Shelbourne placed in charge of the Colonial Office; yet in September, 1766, we find Carleton the new Quebec governor, fresh from conference with the home executive, entering upon a strong pro-French administration in the Province, and evidently fully confident from the first of the support of the home government along lines of action which ended logically in the Quebec Act of 1774. A reference to the pages in which I have described above the origins of the Act will show the Chatham administration to all appearance fully committed to three of the four important provisions which make up its substance.² The extension of the bounds of the province was, I have contended, simply the following out of the long-established

¹ As bearing on this as well as on the estimation as to the effect of the Act, it may be worth while to note a curious British opinion of a few years later. In the debate in the House of Lords on the Quebec Government Bill of 1791, Lord Abingdon referred to the Quebec Act as one of the most unfortunate in the statute book, in that it "laid the foundation-stone of division between the North American colonies and this country." (*Parl. Hist.* XXIX, p. 659.)

² See pp. 411-31; 432-35; 450-56.

colonial-commercial policy; the action in regard to the Church of Rome was merely the attempt to fulfill (with a certain degree of political liberality), the engagements of the treaty of 1763, and was not in excess of the previous steady attitude of the government toward that Church; the advisability of reversion to French law at least in part had been officially recommended by the crown lawyers and by the Board of Trade as early as the spring of 1766, and its likelihood had been officially intimated by Shelbourne to Carleton in June 1767; in regard to an Assembly we find even Fox admitting in 1774 that he would not assert that it was expedient that one should be then granted. It is thus clear that the party (so far as we can hold by party lines in this chaotic period), which in the main stood for the more liberal and advanced colonial policy, was practically committed to the same Canadian policy as their opponents. But neither the most distrustful colonist of the revolutionary period nor the most pronounced Anglophobist of our later historical literature, would be likely to ascribe to Fox or Burke or Shelbourne that line of far-reaching and insidious hostility to colonial freedom and growth which has been ascribed to the authors of the Quebec Bill. The fact that party lines were more closely drawn when the bill actually came before Parliament must be ascribed mainly to the irresponsible position of an opposition,—an opposition too which was acting more as individuals than as a unit;¹ especially as the debates show that that opposition, instead of fighting specific provisions or pointing out better ones, confined its efforts mainly to generalities, or to such favorable points of popular agitation as Popish establishment and the absence of trial by jury. And in these debates the position that the French Canadians alone were to be considered and the neglect or disregard of the English element and prospects, was almost as marked on the opposition as on the governmental side. The whole consideration of

¹ See Fitzmaurice, *Shelbourne*, II., 310.

this phase of the matter must therefore I think support my conclusion as to the lack of connection between the Canadian measures and the strained relations with the older colonies.

But it is not only in this light that my study centres about the Quebec Act. That measure has two aspects with regard to which we must consider it:—(1) the temporary and long-past one, now of purely historical interest, of its various connections with the American Revolutionary crisis; and (2) the permanent living one, of strong interest to every student of institutions, and of vital interest to every modern Canadian, of its effects on the after history of British North America,—of its place in the development of that great commonwealth which the Dominion of Canada seems destined to become. If it does become such, it will only be after surmounting, mayhap at great cost, those most serious obstacles which, placed in its path by that Imperial policy of which the Quebec Act of 1774 was the controlling basis, have grown steadily with its growth. They are the obstacles presented to Anglo-Saxon domination and to political unity in modern Canada through the continued and magnified existence there of an alien and hostile nationality, rooted in and bound up with an alien and hostile ecclesiastical domination.¹

This opinion is my apology for the care with which I have dwelt upon the more purely institutional aspects of the period. I have tried to present a full statement of the social and political conditions of the province during the early years of the British occupation, in the belief that it is only by their study that we can claim to pass judgment upon their treatment. The misfortune for the country of the non-assimilation of French and English through these 130 years of common political existence in British North America has of course been frequently dwelt upon; but it has usually been in a tone of resignation to those mysterious dispensations of Providence which made the Quebec

¹ See Goldwin Smith, *Canada and the Canadian Question*. Chapter 2.

Act an unavoidable necessity, and would have made any other course then, or any counter course since, disastrous and impossible. What else could have been done, we are asked,—usually with extravagant laudation of the humanity and generosity of the British government in thus pursuing the only path open to it. It has been one of my objects to try and show that something else, something very different, *could* have been done; that the policy that was adopted with such far-reaching and disastrous consequences, was precisely also the one that was the most dangerous with regard to the conditions of the moment. It is no part of the historian's (and certainly not of the special investigator's) task to enter upon constructive work, to replace everything that he has pulled down; and therefore I do not feel called upon to go into particulars with regard to the possible legislation of 1774. But I do not wish to evade the problem; it should be manifest from the above examination that the alternative course was simply to set the new English Province firmly and definitively upon an *English* instead of a *French* path of development. As shown above, the way was clearly pointed out by other advisers as well qualified to speak as those whose advice was taken in 1774. I know that in this our age of highly-defined and all-pervading nationality, this apparently light hearted and reckless treading upon the holy ground of national development may bring down upon me the severest censures. But my critics will remember that we are dealing with another age, one in which nationality was not the breath of the political nostril; one in which new and alien acquisitions were absorbed and assimilated as an every day process.¹ And I hope I shall

¹The contemporary history of the French colony of Louisiana is a case in point, and will I think support my argument in every respect. Ceded to Spain in 1762, the new rule began in 1763 with infinitely worse prospects than that of the English in Canada; for the Spanish were driven away by a revolt of the colonists in 1763, and after re-establishing themselves by overwhelming force in the following year, began their régime anew by taking summary vengeance upon the colonial leaders. It had moreover been under-

not be further reproached with a slavish respect for legal enactment, in attaching the importance I do to the measures, actual and possible of 1774. An enactment which determines the ecclesiastical conditions and the whole civil code of a people is surely not to be spoken of lightly; but I regard it only as the first step in a progress which under its pressure became the inevitable one; as the opening of an easy and secure path and the providing of encouraging and helpful guides in a journey for which no other route or guide was available.

It may seem that it is to place too much emphasis on the effect of the Quebec Act even to represent it as the first step in a development which it made inevitable. The matter is one which I do not feel at liberty to stop and discuss fully here; but some considerations must be briefly referred to. The main one has regard to the probably different history of early English colonization in the Province if the British government in 1774 had not so avowedly and definitely handed it over to a French future. In the discussions in

stood at the time of cession that in deference to the express wish of Louis XV., the colony would be allowed to retain its old laws and usages; but after the insurrection the Spanish government proceeded to thoroughly assimilate it in law and governmental forms to the other Spanish colonies in America. The degree of success attained in the face of circumstances so much more discouraging than those which existed in Canada, is shown in the statement by Gayarré, (*Louisiana under Spanish Domination*, p. 310), that when in 1791 the fourth Spanish governor ended his administration, "He left Louisiana entirely reconciled to the Spanish domination, which had been gradually endeared to the inhabitants by the enlightened and wise deportment of almost every officer who had ruled over them." Yet the colony had remained thoroughly French in stock; for in 1800 a distinguished Louisianian official states in a memoir intended for Napoleon I, that "Almost all the Louisianians are born French or are of French origin." Napoleon in that year re-acquired the colony for France; and when in 1803 the United States were negotiating for its purchase, he was informed by M. Barbé Marbois (later the author of a *History of Louisiana*), that "These colonists have lost the recollection of France." When in the same year the French officials took possession of the province they were received with suspicion rather than enthusiasm. M. Marbois reports: "Every one will be astonished to learn that a people of French descent have received without emotion and without any apparent interest a French magistrate. . . . Nothing has been able to diminish the alarm which his mission causes. His proclamations have been heard with sadness, and by the greater part of the inhabitants with the same indifference as the beat of the drum is listened to when it announces the escape of a slave or a sale at auction." (*Gayarré*, p. 52.) There was here of course an additional element in the apprehensions as to the French attitude with regard to slavery; but in view of the evi-

Parliament and out with regard to that measure, both before and after its enactment, we find that its advocates insist with strong self-righteousness that in Canada it is the French Canadian only who is to be considered; that the small English section there has scarcely a right to be heard; that Canada (as Carleton had urged), was French and destined to remain French; that it was probably for the interest of Great Britain to discountenance any large English admixture. This view I have shown above was no doubt largely due to the incorrect ideas which Murray and Carleton had fostered with regard to the origin and character of the English already in the Province. Whatever its full explanation the tone is unmistakable. It may be considered a part of the striking inadequacy of the prevailing British mind at that time to the Imperial position that had so wonderfully come to the nation; an inadequacy which was being most generally shown in the petty legality and short-sighted selfishness which were marking all the rela-

dence as to the temper of the colony before that question could have arisen, it does not seem that it can be assumed to have much to do with the point at issue.

Lack of space prevents my following the development of the colony in its more complex history as a part of the United States. What the nature of that development has been however may I think be correctly inferred from the fact that even by 1823 we are told of "the adoption of that people into the great American family having now super-added many features of the English jurisprudence to those already stamped upon the institutions of Louisiana by the French and Spanish." (North American Review, XVII, 244.) When in 1820 Edward Livingstone was appointed by the General Assembly of Louisiana to draw up a report on a new criminal code, one of the objects of the same was laid down as being, "To abrogate the reference which now exists to a foreign law for the definition of offences and the mode of prosecuting them." (Ibid.) Before 1839 we find that the success achieved in the Americanizing of the territory is such as to attract the envious attention of the English element which in Quebec was at that moment struggling with the culmination of the long period of increasingly bitter hostility there between the French and English. Lord Durham tells us (*Report on Canada*, 1839) that they [the English] "talk frequently and loudly of what has occurred in Louisiana, where . . . the end . . . of securing an English predominance over a French population has undoubtedly been attained;" and in his final recommendations as to remedying the Canadian troubles he points out that "The influence of perfectly equal and popular institutions in the effacing distinctions of race without disorder or oppression and with little more than the ordinary animosities of party in a free country, is memorably exemplified in the history of the State of Louisiana, the laws and population of which were French at the time of its cession to the American Union."

tions with the older colonies. What I wish especially to call attention to here is the effect that this attitude and its results already in Quebec, must have had at the close of the war upon those who were compelled to seek refuge from the victorious colonists in other parts of the British dominions. These United Empire Loyalists were of the same temper, I have shown above, as the English already resident in Quebec; even if the Quebec Act did not fill them with the same lively apprehension of tyranny that it aroused in these and in the revolting colonists, it must yet have been in a high degree obnoxious. The immediate effect is doubtless to a very considerable degree expressed in the fact that of the 50,000 Loyalists (approximately), who settled in the remaining British Provinces during and within a few years after the war, only about one-quarter chose the oldest and presumably much the most attractive part of the country. And of those who did choose the Province of Quebec, practically none it would seem, elected to settle amongst the French Canadians (where previous to the new constitution a large amount of land had been eagerly taken possession of by their compatriots), but went instead into the untrodden wilderness. It is true that by so doing they did not escape the dominion of the new order of things, for they remained subject to the Quebec Act till 1791; but they could hope thereby to reduce the necessary evil to a minimum (as proved the case), and to build up with greater prospects of success the active opposition to it that they at once entered upon.

What would have been the consequences at the time of this migration of the existence in Quebec of a constitution, not indeed wholly English either in fact or promise, but with an English admixture sufficient to afford a working basis and a guarantee with regard to the line of development? It can scarcely be doubted that the English immigration into the Province would have been so largely increased that the balance of population would thereby have been at

once in considerable degree redressed. As a result a security would have been thereby provided that all the English conditions that had already obtained would have been upheld with accelerating influence, and that development would have proceeded mainly along that line. The large degree of influence that had been so rapidly gained by the few English over the French Canadian masses in the period 1763-1774, would probably have steadily increased; the new French Canadian native leaders, who had already shown a very considerable degree of knowledge of and aptitude for English conditions, would have coalesced more and more with the English element; the whole history of Quebec and Canada would in short have run a different course. As it was, we find that the Quebec Act bestows on the Province, even from the French standpoint, only misfortune; that under it the law is uncertain and its administration almost anarchy;¹ that the English and French elements enter with the addition to the numbers of the former after the war, on a period of bitter political strife; that finally in 1791 the British government, while pacifying the main body of the English discontents by forming them into a new Province, at the same time continues and confirms thereby the policy of 1774, with apparently a more conscious purpose of such a use of the French nationality as might perhaps be justly expressed in the maxim *divide et impera*. It was a development of the Quebec Act policy that was largely due to the intervening revolutionary war; but such a development was possible only on the basis of that Act and the results of its seventeen years' operation. It denotes the unaccountable persistence in the British mind of the idea as to the efficacy of the measure in preserving the Province from the grasp of the revolutionists, and a determination to guard against similar danger in the future by keeping to and developing this line of action. As Lord Durham ex-

¹ See above, pp. 477-9.

pressed it in 1839, "the system of Government pursued in Lower Canada has been based on the policy of perpetuating that very separation of the races, and encouraging these very notions of conflicting nationalities which it ought to have been the first and chief care of Government to check and extinguish. From the period of the conquest to the present time the conduct of the Government has aggravated the evil, and the origin of the present extreme disorder may be found in the institutions by which the character of the colony was determined."¹ The "extreme disorder" referred to was the result of the fact that by the act of 1791 the way was left clear within the province of Quebec for that period of embittered resistance on the part of the small English minority which was to end in civil war, and in the vain attempt of 1840 to undo the work of the previous sixty-six years by stifling the French majority in a reunion with the English mass of Upper Canada. What degree of responsibility for this crisis of race hostility rested on the policy definitely inaugurated in 1774 and confirmed in 1791, is forcibly shown above in the words of the special Imperial Commissioner who was sent out in 1839 to deal with that crisis. His report further points out how from the Conquest "the continued negligence of the British Government left the mass of the people without any of the institutions which would have elevated them in freedom and civilization. It has left them without the education and without the institutions of local self-government, that would have assimilated their character and habits, in the easiest and best way, to those of the empire of which they became a part."² The evil policy of 1774 was, he adds, adhered to in 1791, when "instead of availing itself of the means which the extent and nature of the province afforded for the gradual introduction of such an English population into

¹ *Report*, p. 27.

² *Ibid.*, p. 12.

the various parts as might have easily placed the French in a minority, the Government deliberately constituted the French into a majority, and recognized and strengthened their distinct national character. Had the sounder policy of making the province English in all its institutions been adopted from the first and steadily persevered in, the French would probably have been speedily outnumbered, and the beneficial operation of the free institutions of England would never have been impeded by the animosities of origin."¹ And as noticed above he points to the history of Louisiana as an example of what might and should have been done.

It therefore does not seem an extreme view to regard the great difficulties that have beset English rule in Canada, as well as the grave problems that still confront the Dominion, as a natural and logical development from the policy of the Quebec Act. And if I am mistaken in my opinion of the comparative ease and completeness with which these difficulties and problems could have been avoided, and with which from the time of the conquest the province could have been started on the path of assimilation to English conditions, it must be admitted that I err in good company, both of that time and of this. In the tract reputedly Franklin's, entitled, "The Interest of Great Britain considered, with regard to her colonies, and the acquisition of Canada and Gaudaloupe," the following opinion is expressed of the future of the new province: "Those who are Protestant among the French will probably choose to remain under the British government,² many will choose to remove if they can be allowed to sell their lands, improvements and effects; the rest in that thinly settled country will in less than one-half a century, from the crowds of English settling round and among them, be blended and incorporated with our people both in language and manners." Lord

¹ *Report*, p. 29.

² See p. 288 above for the facts as to emigration.

Durham's opinion of the policy that should have been followed, and of the degree of success that might have been attained from the first, has already been quoted. So convinced was he of its necessity and practicability that he strongly urged the adoption of that policy even at the late date at which he wrote. "Without effecting the change so rapidly or so roughly as to shock the feelings and trample on the welfare of the existing generation, it must henceforth" he declared, "be the first and steady purpose of the British Government to establish an English population with English laws and language in this Province, and to trust its government to none but a decidedly English Legislature."¹ In his view this apparently harsh policy was the truest mercy to the French Canadians, "isolated in the midst of an Anglo-Saxon world." For, "it is but to determine whether the small number of French who now inhabit Lower Canada shall be made English under a Government which can protect them, or whether the process shall be delayed until a much larger number shall have to undergo, at the rude hands of its uncontrolled rivals the extinction of a nationality strengthened and embittered by continuance."² Finally on this point I will quote the words of the most prominent of modern students of Canadian history and prospects,—Goldwin Smith. To Anglicize Quebec at the Conquest he declares "would not have been hard. Her French inhabitants of the upper class had, for the most part, quitted her after the conquest and sailed with their property for France. There remained only 70,000 peasants, to whom their language was not so dear as it was to a member of the Institute, who knew not the difference between codes so long as they got justice, and among whom, harsh and abrupt change being avoided, the British tongue and law might have been gradually and painlessly introduced."³

¹ *Report*, p. 128.

² *Ibid.*, p. 130.

³ *Canada and the Canadian Question*, p. 81.

Apart from speculation or the consideration of national or natural rights, my judgment of the Quebec Act and my opinion as to alternative measures must rest upon the facts which I have brought forward. I have tried to show that in ten years of British civil rule, the French Canadian had advanced steadily in the comprehension of English principles of society and government, and had lived in prosperity and fair contentment;¹ that by 1774 he was ready for a compromise civil code which might have left him the principles of the regulation of landed property to which he was most wedded, and yet have proclaimed itself as an *English* code, the starting point of English accumulation. This would have established a system which with regard to land would not from the very beginning have been without analogy in England itself at that period, and which on all other important sides, including procedure, would have been exclusively English in spirit, substance and development. With this aspect the Province could not have presented to English-speaking immigrants at the close of the American war the forbidding features that it did present under French law. This does not seem a visionary outcome with regard to the most difficult of the matters involved, the Civil Code. The grant of representative institutions and the fostering of local self-government would naturally accompany the English legal aspect. Connected with settlement there might have been, and would almost necessarily have been, an avoidance of those other features of the Quebec Act settlement which I have shown above were objectionable to the mass of the people, and the only discoverable causes of their disloyalty in the American invasion. With a system distinctly and avowedly English in spirit and main substance there would have

¹ How speedily the Quebec Act had operated for the undoing of this work may be judged from Pitt's declaration in 1791 in regard to the separation into two Provinces by the Constitutional Act, that "he had made the division of the province essential, because he could not otherwise reconcile their clashing interests" [i. e. of the English and French elements]. *Parl. Hist.* XXIX, 404.

been no room for those fears as to reversion to the old feudal order which so aroused the peasantry, and consequently no field of labor for the revolutionary agitator; in the absence of the so-called establishing of the Church there would have been lacking that most distasteful re-fastening upon them of compulsory tithes. In other words, without any conceivable antagonizing on other grounds of the ordinary French Canadian, there would have been avoided all those aspects of the Act by which alone can be explained the hostile attitude of the *habitant* during the war; while the greatest of all steps would have been taken for the preserving of the future from the perils of racial hostility and alien institutions. The various lines along which Anglicising might for the future have proceeded can be as easily imagined as described; the way of every one was effectually barred by the Quebec Act.

APPENDIX I.

THE QUEBEC ACT, 1774.¹

An act for making more effectual Provision for the Government of the Province of Quebec in North America.

Whereas his Majesty, by his Royal Proclamation, bearing date the seventh Day of *October*, in the third Year of his Reign, thought fit to declare the Provisions which had been made in respect to certain Countries, Territories and Islands in *America*, ceded to his Majesty by the definitive Treaty of Peace, concluded at *Paris* on the tenth Day of *February*, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-three: And whereas, by the Arrangements made by the said Royal Proclamation, a very large Extent of Country, within which there were several Colonies and Settlements of the Subjects of *France*, who claimed to remain therein under the Faith of the said Treaty, was left without any Provision being made for the Administration of Civil Government therein; and certain Parts of the Territory of *Canada*, where sedentary Fisheries had been established and carried on by the Subjects of *France*, Inhabitants of the said Province of *Canada*, under Grants and Concessions from the Government thereof, were annexed to the Government of *Newfoundland*, and thereby subjected to regulations inconsistent with the Nature of such Fisheries: May it therefore please your most Excellent Majesty that it may be enacted; and be it enacted by the King's most Excellent Majesty, by

¹ 14 Geo. III., Cap. 83. In full from *British Statutes at Large* (London, 1776), xii., pp. 184-187.

and with the Advice and Consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Commons, in this present Parliament assembled, and by the Authority of the same, That all the Territories, Islands and Countries in *North America*, belonging to the Crown of *Great Britain*, bounded on the South by a Line from the Bay of *Chaleurs*, along the High Lands which divide the Rivers that empty themselves into the River *Saint Lawrence* from those which fall into the Sea, to a point in forty-five Degrees of Northern Latitude, on the Eastern bank of the River *Connecticut*, keeping the same Latitude directly West, through the Lake *Champlain*, until, in the same Latitude, it meets the River *Saint Lawrence*; from thence up the Eastern Bank of the said River to the Lake *Ontario*; thence through the Lake *Ontario*, and the River commonly called *Niagara*; and thence along by the Eastern and the South-eastern Bank of Lake *Erie*, following the said Bank, until the same shall be intersected by the Northern Boundary, granted by the Charter of the Province of *Pennsylvania*, in case the same shall be so intersected; and from thence along the said Northern and Western Boundaries of the said Province, until the said Western Boundary strike the *Ohio*: But in case the said Bank of the said Lake shall not be found to be so intersected, then following the said Bank until it shall arrive at that Point of the said Bank which shall be nearest to the North-western Angle of the said Province of *Pennsylvania*, and thence by a right line, to the said North-western Angle of the said Province; and thence along the Western Boundary of the said Province, until it strike the River *Ohio*: and along the Bank of the said River, Westward, to the Banks of the *Mississippi*, and Northward to the Southern Boundary of the Territory granted to the Merchants Adventurers of *England*, trading to *Hudson's Bay*; and also all such Territories, Islands, and Countries, which have, since the tenth of February, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-three. been made Part of the Government of *Newfoundland*, be, and they are hereby,

during his Majesty's Pleasure, annexed to, and made Part and Parcel of, the Province of *Quebec*, as created and established by the said Royal Proclamation of the seventh of *October*, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-three.

II. Provided always, That nothing herein contained, relative to the Boundary of the Province of *Quebec*, shall in anywise affect the Boundaries of any other Colony.

III. Provided always, and be it enacted, That nothing in this Act contained shall extend, or be construed to extend, to make void, or to vary or alter any Right, Title, or Possession, derived under any Grant, Conveyance, or otherwise howsoever, of or to any Lands within the said Province, or the Provinces thereto adjoining; but that the same shall remain and be in Force, and have Effect, as if this Act had never been made.

† IV. And whereas the Provisions, made by the said Proclamation, in respect to the Civil Government of the said Province of *Quebec*, and the Powers and Authorities given to the Governor and other Civil Officers of the said Province, by the Grants and Commissions issued in consequence thereof, have been found, upon Experience, to be inapplicable to the State and Circumstances of the said Province, the Inhabitants whereof amounted, at the Conquest, to above sixty-five thousand Persons professing the Religion of the Church of *Rome*, and enjoying an established Form of Constitution and System of Laws, by which their Persons and Property had been protected, governed, and ordered, for a long Series of Years, from the first Establishment of the said Province of *Canada*; be it therefore further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That the said Proclamation, so far as the same relates to the said Province of *Quebec*, and the Commission under the Authority whereof the Government of the said Province is at present administered, and

all and every the Ordinance and Ordinances made by the Governor and Council of Quebec for the time being, relative to the Civil Government and Administration of Justice in the said Province, and all Commissions to Judges and other Officers thereof, be, and the same are hereby revoked, annulled, and made void, from and after the first Day of *May*, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five.

† V. And, for the more perfect Security and Ease of the Minds of the Inhabitants of the said Province, it is hereby declared, That his Majesty's Subjects, professing the Religion of the Church of *Rome* of and in the said Province of *Quebec*, may have, hold, and enjoy, the free Exercise of the Religion of the Church of *Rome*, subject to the King's Supremacy, declared and established by an Act, made in the first year of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, over all the Dominions and Countries which then did, or thereafter should belong, to the Imperial Crown of this Realm; and that the Clergy of the said Church may hold, receive, and enjoy, their accustomed Dues and Rights, with respect to such Persons only as shall profess the said Religion.

VI. Provided nevertheless, That it shall be lawful for his Majesty, his Heirs or Successors, to make such Provision out of the rest of the said accustomed Dues and Rights, for the Encouragement of the Protestant Religion, and for the Maintenance and Support of a Protestant Clergy within the said Province, as he or they shall, from Time to Time, think necessary and expedient.

VII. Provided always, and be it enacted, That no Person, professing the Religion of the Church of *Rome*, and residing in the said Province, shall be obliged to take the Oath required by the said Statute passed in the first Year of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, or any other Oaths substituted by any other Act in the place thereof; but that every such

Person who, by the said Statute, is required to take the Oath therein mentioned, shall be obliged, and is hereby required, to take and subscribe the following Oath before the Governor, or such other Person in such Court of Record as his Majesty shall appoint, who are hereby authorized to administer the same; *videlicet*,

I A. B. do sincerely promise and swear, That I will be faithful, and bear true Allegiance to his Majesty King George, and him will defend to the utmost of my Power, against all traitorous Conspiracies, and Attempts whatsoever, which shall be made against his Person, Crown, and Dignity; and I will do my utmost Endeavour to disclose and make known to his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, all Treasons, and traitorous Conspiracies, and Attempts, which I shall know to be against him, or any of them; and all this I do swear without any Equivocation, mental Evasion, or secret Reservation, and renouncing all Pardons and Dispensations from any Power or Person whomsoever to the contrary.

So help me God.

And every such person, who shall neglect or refuse to take the said Oath before mentioned, shall incur and be liable to the same Penalties, Forfeitures, Disabilities, and Incapacities, as he would have incurred and been liable to for neglecting or refusing to take the Oath required by the said Statute passed in the first Year of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth.

VIII. And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That all his Majesty's *Canadian* Subjects within the Province of *Quebec*, the Religious Orders and Communities only excepted, may also hold and enjoy their Property and Possessions, together with all Customs and Usages relative thereto, and all other their Civil Rights, in as large, ample, and beneficial Manner, as if the said Proclamation, Commissions, Ordinances, and other Acts and Instruments, had not been made, and as may consist with their Allegiance to his Majesty, and Subjection to the Crown and Parliament of *Great Britain*; and that in all Matters of Controversy, relative to Property and Civil Rights, Resort shall be had to the Laws of *Canada*, as the Rule for the Decision of the same; and all Causes that shall hereafter be instituted in any of the Courts of Justice, to be appointed

within and for the said Province by his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, shall, with respect to such Property and Rights, be determined agreeably to the said Laws and Customs of *Canada*, until they shall be varied or altered by any Ordinances that shall, from Time to Time, be passed in the said Province by the Governor, Lieutenant Governor, or Commander in Chief, for the time being, by and with the Advice and Consent of the Legislative Council of the same, to be appointed in Manner herein-after mentioned.

IX. Provided always, That nothing in this Act contained shall extend, or be construed to extend, to any Lands that have been granted by his Majesty, or shall hereafter be granted by his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, to be holden in free and common Soccage.

X. Provided also, That it shall and may be lawful to and for every Person that is owner of any Lands, Goods, or Credits, in the said Province, and that has a right to alienate the said Lands, Goods, or Credits, in his or her Lifetime, by Deed of Sale, Gift, or otherwise, to devise or bequeath the same at his or her Death, by his or her last Will and Testament; any Law, Usage, or Custom, heretofore or now prevailing in the Province, to the contrary hereof in any-wise notwithstanding; such will being executed either according to the Laws of *Canada*, or according to the Forms prescribed by the Laws of *England*.

XI. And whereas the Certainty and Lenity of the Criminal Law of *England*, and the Benefits and Advantages resulting from the Use of it, have been sensibly felt by the Inhabitants, from an Experience of more than nine years, during which it has been uniformly administered; be it therefore further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, that the same shall continue to be administered, and shall be observed as Law in the Province of *Quebec*, as well in the Description and Quality of the Offence as in the Method of

Prosecution and Trial; and the Punishments and Forfeitures thereby inflicted to the Exclusion of every other Rule of Criminal Law, or Mode of Proceeding thereon, which did or might prevail in the said Province before the Year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and sixty-four; any Thing in this Act to the contrary thereof in any respect notwithstanding; subject nevertheless to such Alterations and Amendments as the Governor, Lieutenant-governor, or Commander-in-Chief for the Time being, by and with the Advice and Consent of the legislative Council of the said Province, hereafter to be appointed, shall, from Time to Time, cause to be made therein, in Manner herein-after directed.

XII. And whereas it may be necessary to ordain many Regulations for the future Welfare and good Government of the Province of *Quebec*, the Occasions of which cannot now be foreseen, nor, without much Delay and Inconvenience, be provided for, without intrusting that Authority, for a certain time, and under proper restrictions, to Persons resident there: And whereas it is at present inexpedient to call an Assembly; be it therefore enacted by the Authority aforesaid, that it shall and may be lawful for his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, by Warrant under his or their Signet or Sign Manual, and with the Advice of the Privy Council, to constitute and appoint a Council for the Affairs of the Province of *Quebec*, to consist of such Persons resident there, not exceeding twenty-three, nor less than seventeen, as his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, shall be pleased to appoint; and, upon the Death, Removal, or Absence of any of the Members of the said Council, in like Manner to constitute and appoint such and so many other Person or Persons as shall be necessary to supply the Vacancy or Vacancies; which Council, so appointed and nominated, or the Major Part thereof, shall have Power and Authority to make Ordinances for the Peace, Welfare, and

good Government, of the said Province, with the Consent of his Majesty's Governor, or, in his Absence, of the Lieutenant-governor, or Commander-in-Chief for the time being.

XIII. Provided always, That nothing in this Act contained shall extend to authorize or empower the said legislative Council to lay any Taxes or Duties within the said Province, such Rates and Taxes only excepted as the Inhabitants of any Town or District within the said Province may be authorized by the said Council to assess, levy, and apply, within the said Town or District, for the purpose of making Roads, erecting and repairing publick Buildings, or for any other Purpose respecting the local Convenience and Oeconomy of such Town or District.

XIV. Provided also, and be it enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That every Ordinance so to be made, shall, within six months, be transmitted by the Governor, or, in his absence, by the Lieutenant-governor, or Commander-in-Chief for the time being, and laid before his Majesty for his Royal Approbation; and if his Majesty shall think fit to disallow thereof, the same shall cease and be void from the Time that his Majesty's Order in Council thereupon shall be promulgated at *Quebec*.

XV. Provided also, that no Ordinance touching Religion, or by which any Punishment may be inflicted greater than Fine or Imprisonment for three Months, shall be of any Force or Effect, until the same shall have received his Majesty's Approbation.

XVI. Provided also, That no Ordinance shall be passed at any Meeting of the Council where less than a Majority of the whole Council is present, or at any Time except between the first Day of *January* and the first day of *May*, unless upon some urgent Occasion, and in such Case every Member thereof resident at *Quebec*, or within fifty miles

thereof, shall be personally summoned by the Governor, or, in his Absence, by the Lieutenant-governor, or Commander in Chief for the Time being, to attend the same.

XVII. And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That nothing herein contained shall extend, or be construed to extend, to prevent or hinder his Majesty, his Heirs or Successors, by his or their Letters Patent under the Great Seal of *Great Britain*, from erecting, constituting, and appointing, such Courts of Criminal, Civil, and Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction within and for the said Province of Quebec, and appointing, from Time to Time, the Judges and Officers thereof, as his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, shall think necessary and proper for the Circumstances of the said Province.

XVIII. Provided always, and it is hereby enacted, that nothing in this Act contained shall extend, or be construed to extend, to repeal or make void, within the said Province of Quebec, any Act or Acts of the Parliament of *Great Britain* heretofore made, for prohibiting, restraining, or regulating, the Trade or Commerce of his Majesty's Colonies and Plantations in *America*; but that all and every the said Acts, and also all Acts of Parliament heretofore made concerning or respecting the said Colonies and Plantations, shall be, and are hereby declared to be, in Force, within the said Province of *Quebec*, and every Part thereof.

THE QUEBEC REVENUE ACT, 1774.¹

An Act to establish a fund towards further defraying the charges of the Administration of Justice, and support of the Civil Government within the Province of Quebec in America.

Whereas certain duties were imposed by the Authority of his Most Christian Majesty upon Wine, Rum, Brandy, *eau*

¹ 14 Geo. III., Cap. 88. In full from *British Statutes at Large*, London, 1776.

de vie de liqueur, imported into the Province of *Canada*, now called the Province of *Quebec*, and also a duty of three pounds *per centum ad valorem* upon all dry Goods imported into and exported from the said Province, which Duties subsisted at the Time of the Surrender of the said Province to your Majesty's Forces in the late War: And whereas it is expedient that the said Duties should cease and be discontinued, and that in Lieu and in Stead thereof other Duties should be raised by the authority of Parliament for making a more adequate Provision for defraying the Charge of the Administration of Justice and the Support of Civil Government in the said Province: We, your Majesty's most dutiful and loyal Subjects, the Commons of *Great Britain* in Parliament assembled, do most humbly beseech your Majesty that it may be enacted; and be it enacted by the King's most Excellent Majesty, by and with the Advice and consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal and Commons, in this present Parliament assembled, and by the Authority of the same: That from and after the fifth Day of *April*, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five, all the duties which were imposed upon Rum, Brandy, *eau de vie de liqueur*, within the said Province, and also of three pounds *per centum ad valorem* on dried goods imported into or exported from the said Province under the Authority of his most Christian Majesty, shall be and are hereby discontinued; and that in Lieu and in Stead thereof there shall from and after the said fifth Day of *April*, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five be raised, levied, collected, and paid unto his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, for and upon the respective Goods hereinafter mentioned, which shall be imported or brought into any Part of the said Province, over and above all other Duties now payable in the said Province, by any Act or Acts of Parliament, the several Rates and Duties following: that is to say,

For every Gallon of Brandy, or other Spirits, of the Manufacture of *Great Britain*, Three-pence.

For every Gallon of Rum, or other Spirits, which shall be imported or brought from any of his Majesty's Sugar Colonies in the *West Indies*, Six-pence.

For every Gallon of Rum, or other Spirits which shall be imported or brought from any other of his Majesty's Colonies or Dominions in *America*, Nine-pence.

For every Gallon of Foreign Brandy, or other Spirits of Foreign Manufacture imported or brought from *Great Britain*, one Shilling.

For every Gallon of Rum or Spirits of the Produce or Manufacture of any of the Colonies or Plantations in *America*, not in the Possession or under the Dominion of his Majesty imported from any other Place except *Great Britain*, one Shilling.

For every Gallon of Molasses and Syrups which shall be imported or brought into the said Province in Ships or Vessels belonging to his Majesty's subjects in *Great Britain* or *Ireland*, or to his Majesty's subjects in the said Province, Three-pence.

For every Gallon of Molasses and Syrups, which shall be imported or brought into the said Province in any other Ships or Vessels in which the same may be legally imported, Six-pence; and after those Rates for any greater or less Quantity of such Goods respectively.

II. And it is hereby further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That the said Rates and Duties charged by this Act shall be deemed, and are hereby declared, to be Sterling Money of *Great Britain*, and shall be collected, recovered, and paid, to the Amount of the Value of which such nominal Sums bear in *Great Britain*; and that such Monies may be received and taken according to the Proportion and Value of five Shillings and Sixpence the Ounce in Silver; and that the said Duties hereinbefore granted shall be raised, levied, collected, paid, and recovered, in the same Manner and Form, and by such Rules, Ways and Means, and under such Penalties and Forfeitures, except in such Cases where any Alteration is made by this Act, as any other Duties payable to his Majesty upon Goods imported into any *British* Colony or Plantation in *America* are or shall be raised, levied, collected, paid, and recovered, by any Act or Acts of Parliament, as fully and effectually, to all Intents and Purposes, as if the several Clauses, Powers, Directions, Penalties, and Forfeitures relating thereto, were particularly repeated and again enacted in the Body of this present Act: and that all the Monies that shall arise by the said Duties (except the necessary Charges of raising, col-

lecting, levying, recovering, answering, paying, and accounting for the same) shall be paid by the Collector of his Majesty's Customs, into the hands of his Majesty's Receiver-General in the said Province for the Time being, and shall be applied in the first place in making a more certain and adequate Provision towards defraying the Expenses of the Administration of Justice and of the Support of Civil Government in the said Province; and that the Lord High Treasurer, or Commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury, or any three or more of them for the Time being, shall be, and is, or are hereby impowered, from Time to Time, by any Warrant or Warrants under his or their Hand or Hands, to cause such Money to be applied out of the said Produce of the said Duties, towards defraying the said Expenses; and that the Residue of the said Duties shall remain and be reserved in the hands of the said Receiver-General, for the future Disposition of Parliament.

III. And it is hereby further enacted by the Authority aforesaid that if any Goods chargeable with any of the said Duties herein-before mentioned shall be brought into the said Province by Land Carriage, the same shall pass and be carried through the Port of *Saint John's*, near the River *Sorrel*, or if such Goods shall be brought into the said Province by any inland Navigation other than upon the River *Saint Lawrence*, the same shall pass and be carried upon the said River *Sorrel* by the said Port, and shall be there entered with, and the said respective Rates and Duties paid for the same, to such Officer or Officers of his Majesty's Customs as shall be there appointed for that Purpose; and if any such Goods coming by Land Carriage or inland Navigation, as aforesaid, shall pass by or beyond the said place before named, without Entry or Payment of the said Rates and Duties, or shall be brought into any Part of the said Province by or through any other Place whatsoever, the said Goods shall be forfeited; and every Person who shall

be assisting, or otherwise concerned in the bringing or removing such Goods, or to whose Hands the same shall come, knowing that they were brought or removed contrary to this Act, shall forfeit treble the Value of such Goods, to be estimated and computed according to the best Price that each respective Commodity bears in the Town of *Quebec*, at the Time such Offence shall be committed; and all the Horses, Cattle, Boats, Vessels, and other Carriages whatsoever, made use of in the Removal, Carriage, or Conveyance of such Goods, shall also be forfeited and lost, and shall and may be seized by any Officer of his Majesty's Customs, and prosecuted as hereinafter mentioned.

IV. And it is hereby further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That the said Penalties and Forfeitures by this Act inflicted, shall be sued for and prosecuted in any Court of Admiralty, or Vice-Admiralty, having jurisdiction within the said Province, and the same shall and may be recovered and divided in the same Manner and Form, and by the same Rules and Regulations in all Respects as other Penalties and Forfeitures for Offences against the Laws relating to the Customs and Trade of his Majesty's Colonies in *America* shall or may, by any Act or Acts of Parliament be sued for, prosecuted, recovered and divided.

V. And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That there shall from and after the fifth Day of *April*, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five, be raised, levied, collected and paid unto his Majesty's Receiver-General of the said Province for the Use of his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, a Duty of one Pound sixteen Shillings, Sterling Money of *Great Britain*, for every License that shall be granted by the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, or Commander-in-Chief of the said Province to any Person or Persons for keeping a House or any other place of publick Entertainment, or for the retailing Wine, Brandy, Rum, or

any other Spirituous Liquors within the said Province; and any Person keeping any such House or place of Entertainment, or retailing any such Liquors without such License shall forfeit and pay the Sum of ten Pounds for every such Offence, upon Conviction thereof; one Moiety to such Person as shall inform or prosecute for the same, and the other Moiety shall be paid into the Hands of the Receiver-General of the Province for the Use of his Majesty.

VI. Provided always, That nothing herein contained shall extend or be construed to extend to discontinue, determine, or make void any Part of the territorial or casual Revenues, Fines, Rents, or Profits whatsoever, which were reserved to, and belonged to his Most Christian Majesty, before and at the Time of the Conquest and Surrender thereof to his Majesty, the King of Great Britain; but that the same and every one of them, shall remain and be continued to be levied, collected, and paid in the same Manner as if this Act had never been made; anything therein contained to the contrary notwithstanding.

VII. And be it further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, That if any Action or Suit shall be commenced against any Person or Persons for any thing done in pursuance of this Act, and if it shall appear to the Court or Judge where or before whom the same shall be tried, that such Action or Suit is brought for any thing that was done in pursuance of, and by the Authority of this Act, the Defendant or Defendants shall be indemnified and acquitted for the same; and if such Defendant or Defendants shall be so acquitted; or if the Plaintiff shall discontinue such Action or Suit, such Court or Judge shall award to the Defendant or Defendants Treble Costs.

APPENDIX II.

AUTHORITIES.

No attempt is made here to furnish a complete bibliography. I have tried to make use of all the material that might bear on the subject; to give a full catalogue of the books consulted would scarcely be possible, and would certainly appear pedantic. In the following list I include in the main therefore, only titles to which reference has actually been made. The arrangement is alphabetical:

- ALBEMARLE (Earl of). *Memoirs of the Marquis of Rockingham and his Contemporaries*. (2 v. London, 1852.)
- ALMON (J.). *Anecdotes of the Life of Mr. Pitt, Earl of Chatham*. (London, 1793.)
- ALMON (J.). *The Remembrancer: A Repository of Passing Events*. (J. Dodsley, London, 1774, 1775, 1776.)
- FORCE (Editor), *American Archives*. (Fourth Series, 1774-6, 6 vols.—Washington, 1837-46. Fifth Series, 1776-83, 3 vols.—Washington, 1848-53.)
- ASHLEY (W. J.). *Lectures on Canadian Constitutional History*. (University of Toronto.)
- BANCROFT (George). *History of the United States*. (Author's last revision. 6 v. New York, 1884-5.)
- BOURINOT (J. G.). *Manual of the Constitutional History of Canada*. (Montreal, 1888.)
- BOURINOT, (J. G.). *Parliamentary Procedure and Practice in Canada*. (Montreal, 1892.)
- BURKE (Edmund). *Correspondence*. (8 v. London, 1852.)
- British Statutes at Large*. (London, 1776.)
- Calendar of Home Office Papers of the Reign of George III.* (1760-5; 1766-9; 1770-2. London, 1878-81.) Published under direction of the Master of the Rolls.
- CANADIAN ARCHIVES. Furnishing the substance of the greater part of the study. The material therefor is collected in the following series of copies of British State Papers:
- a. *State Papers and Correspondence concerning the Province of*

Quebec, 1760-80. [The MS. copies of the more important documents have been compared with the originals or original duplicates in the Record and Colonial Offices, London. The series is calendared as Q in the Reports of the Canadian Archivist, beginning with that for 1890. It includes the complete official correspondence between the Secretaries of State for the Southern Department and the Colonies, the Board of Trade, and the Colonial officials, together with copies of the more important papers belonging more properly to the Privy Council and the Treasury. With all documents concerned.]

- b. *The Haldimand Papers.* [A copy in 232 MS. volumes of the collection (deposited in the British Museum) of official and other matter accumulated by General Haldimand, long and prominently connected with Quebec, and Governor-in-Chief 1778-83. This series has been calendared as B in the Reports of the Canadian Archivist (1884-9), and has been used mainly through that guidance.]

CARROLL (John). *Life of.* (Md. Hist. Soc. 1876.)

CHATHAM (Earl of). *Correspondence.* Edited by Taylor and Pringle. (London, 1838. 4 vol.)

CHRISTIE (Robert). *History of the late Province of Lower Canada.* (Montreal, 1866. 6 v.)

CLARK (Charles). *A Summary of Colonial Law, etc.* (London, 1834). *Collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society.* (Providence, 1827-85.)

Connecticut, The Public Records of the Colony of. [Referred to as *Col. Records of Conn.*] (Hartford, 1850-90.)

STEPHENS (Editor), *Dictionary of National Biography.* Vol. XXVI. Article *Hill, Wills.* (London.)

DURHAM (Earl of). *The Report on the Affairs of British North America.* (London, J. W. Southgate.)

EDWARDS (Bryan). *The History, Civil and Commercial, of the British Colonies in the West Indies.* (4 v. Phila., 1806.)

FITZMAURICE (Lord Edmund). *Life of William, Earl of Shelburne.* (3 v. London, 1876.)

FRANKLIN (Benjamin). *Complete Works.* Compiled and edited by John Bigelow. (10 v. New York and London, 1887-8.)

GARNEAU (F.X.). *Histoire du Canada depuis la decouverte jusqu'à nos jours.* (2 v. Quebec, 1845-6.)

GAYARRÉ. *Louisiana under Spanish Domination.* (New York, 1854.) *Grenville Papers.* (London, 1852.)

HART (A. B.). *Formation of the Union, 1750-1829.* (New York, 1892.)

HENRY (J. J.). *Account of the Campaign against Quebec.* (Albany, 1877.)

HINSDALE (B. A.) *The Old Northwest.* (New York, 1888.)

- Historical Manuscripts Commission, Reports of.* (London,—Eyre and Spottiswoode.)
- HOUSTON (William). *Documents illustrative of Canadian Constitutional History.* (Toronto, 1891).
- JONES (C. H.). *Campaign for the Conquest of Canada, 1775-6.* (Phila., 1882.)
- Journals of the survivors of Arnold's Expedition against Quebec, 1775-6.*
[These can be easily referred to through the names and dates given in the text. A full list, with exact titles and references for finding, will be found in the *Proceedings Mass. Hist. Soc.* 2nd Series II (1885-6), pp. 265-7. Another list with further bibliographical information is furnished as a Preface to Thayer's *Journal*, in *Coll. Rhode Island Hist. Soc.* (Providence, 1867) pp. IV-VII].
- Journal of the Principal Occurrences During the Siege of Quebec . . . ; collected from some old MSS. originally written by an officer during the period of the gallant defense made by Sir Guy Carleton.* With Preface and notes by W. T. P. Shortt. (London, 1824.)
- Journal of Charles Carroll of Carrollton, during his visit to Canada in 1776.* Edited by Brantz Meyer. (Md. Hist. Soc. Papers. Centennial Memorial volume, 1876.)
- Journal of Congress.* Vols. I. II. (Phila. 1777.)
- KINGSFORD (W). *The History of Canada.* (8 volumes published. Toronto, 1887-95.)
- LAREAU (Edmund). *Histoire du Droit Canadien.* (2 v. Montreal, 1888-9.)
- LECKY (W. E. H.). *A History of England in the Eighteenth Century.* (8 v. London, 1892.)
- LOSSING (B. J.), *Life of General Philip Schuyler.* (2 v. New York, 1873.)
- Lower Canada Jurist.* Vol. I.
- MARRIOTT (James). *Plan of a Code of Laws for the Province of Quebec.* (London, 1774.)
- MASÈRES (Francis), [Attorney-General of the Province of Quebec, 1766-9. The most acute and voluminous of contemporary writers on Canadian affairs. Hasty, prejudiced, religiously intolerant, and much given to legal discussions; but on the whole an invaluable witness. A careful study has led me to an agreement with many of his main statements and conclusions.]
- (a) *A collection of several commissions, and other public instruments proceeding from his Majesty's Royal Authority, and other papers relating to the state of the Province of Quebec.* (London, 1772.)

- (b) *An account of the Proceedings of the British and other inhabitants of Quebec.* (London, 1775.)

- (c) *Additional papers concerning Quebec.* (London, 1776.)

(d) *The Canadian Freeholder.* 3 vols. (London, 1767.)

New York, Documents relating to the Colonial History of the State of. (Albany.)

New Hampshire Provincial Papers.

New Hampshire State Papers.

Official Returns on Public Income and Expenditure. Ordered to be printed by the House of Commons, 1869.

Proceedings Massachusetts Historical Society. (Boston, 1879-95.)

Proceedings New Jersey Historical Society. (Newark, 1845-77.)

Parliamentary History. Vols. XV, XVI, XVII, XVIII, XXIX. (London, T. C. Hansard, 1813.)

QUEBEC Literary and Historical Society, Publications of.

- a. *Historical Documents.* Series 1-5, Quebec, 1840-77.)

- b. *Transactions.* (Quebec, 1837-62.)

- c. *Transactions.* (New series, Quebec, 1863-86.)

1. *Quebec, Ordinances made for the Province of, by the Governor and Council of the said Province since the Establishment of the Civil Government.* (Brown and Gillmore, Quebec, 1767.) [Compared with State Paper copies.]

2. *Quebec, Ordinances of, 1767-8.* [MS. in Toronto Public Library with no place or date affixed.]

- *Quebec, Report of the Debate in the Commons on the Bill for the Government of, 1774.* From notes of Sir Henry Cavendish, member for Lostwithiel. Edited by Wright. (London, 1839.) [Referred to as *Cavendish* or *Report.*]

ROOSEVELT (Theodore). *Winning of the West.* (3 v. New York, 1889-94.)

SMITH (Goldwin). *Canada and the Canadian Question.* (Toronto, 1891.)

SMITH (Richard). *Diary of, 1775-6.* (In *American Hist. Review*, January and April, 1896.)

- SMITH (William). *History of Canada from its First Discovery to 1791.* (2 v. Quebec, 1815.)

SOUTHEY (Captain Thomas). *Chronological History of the West Indies.* (3 v. London, 1827.)

SPARKS (Editor.) *Writings of George Washington.* (12 v. Boston, 1855.)

TRUMBULL (Colonel). *Reminiscences.* (New Haven, 1841.)

TURNER (F. J.). *Character and Influence of the Indian Trade in Wisconsin.* (Johns Hopkins University Studies. Ninth Series XI-XII.)

TRACTS AND PAMPHLETS, COLONIAL AND POLITICAL. [The following are of special importance in this connection.]

A Letter Addressed to Two Great Men, on the Prospects of Peace; and on the Terms Necessary to be Insisted Upon in the Negotiation. (London, 1760. 2d edition.) [Anonymous. Attributed by Sparks to Earl of Bute.]

Remarks on the Letter addressed to two Great Men. In a letter to the Author of that Piece. (London, 1760.) [Anonymous. Attributed sometimes to Edmund or to William Burke.]

The Interest of Great Britain Considered with regard to her Colonies, and the acquisition of Canada and Gaudaloupe. (London, 1760.) [Anonymous. Attributed by Sparks to Franklin.]

An examination of the Commercial Principals of the late negotiation between Great Britain and France in 1761. (London, 1762.) [Anonymous. Attributed to Edmund Burke.]

A letter to the Earl of Bute on the Preliminaries of Peace. From neither a noble lord, a candid Member of Parliament, or an impartial Briton, but an Englishman. (London, 1762.) [Anonymous.]

A full and free Inquiry into the Merits of the peace; with some strictures on the Spirit of Party. (London, 1765.) [Anonymous.]

Observations upon the Report made by the Board of Trade against the Grenada Laws. (W. Flexney, London, 1770.) [Anonymous.]

History and Policy of the Quebec Act Asserted and Proved. By William Knox. (London, 1774.)

Letter to the Earl of Chatham on the Quebec Bill. By Sir William Meredith. (London, 1774.)

The Rights of Great Britain Asserted Against the Claims of America. By Sir John Dalrymple. (London, 1776.)

Answer to Sir William Meredith's Letter to the Earl of Chatham. [Anonymous.] (London, 1774.)

An appeal to the Public; stating and considering the objections to the Quebec Bill. [Anonymous.] (2nd Edition, London, 1774.)

WALPOLE (Horace). *Letters.* Edited by Peter Cunningham. (9 v. London, 1861.)

WINSOR (Justin.) *The Mississippi Basin.* (Boston and New York, 1895.)

INDEX TO VOLUME I, No. 1.

- ALBANY, N. Y., a Federal City, 18, 48.
- ANTI-FEDERAL AND FEDERAL AREAS, interstate groupings, 46-49.
- AREAS OF OPPOSITION AND SUPPORT TO THE FEDERAL CONSTITUTION.
- , Connecticut, 14-17.
 - , Delaware, 29-31.
 - , Georgia, 44-45.
 - , Maryland, 32-34.
 - , Massachusetts, including Maine, 12-14.
 - , New Hampshire, 7-11.
 - , New Jersey, 32.
 - , New York, 18-26.
 - , North Carolina, 38-42.
 - , Pennsylvania, 26-29.
 - , Rhode Island, 17.
 - , South Carolina, 42-44.
 - , Virginia, 34-37.
- BAPTISTS in Va., attitude toward Federal Constitution, 37.
- BATCHELLOR, A. S., 1.
- BRECKENRIDGE, H. H., cited, 27.
- BROCK, R. A., 1, note.
- CHAPMAN, A. S., 1, note.
- CHARLESTOWN, N. H., 9-10.
- CHESHIRE, JOS. B. JR., 1, note.
- COLDEN, GOV., N. Y., 23.
- CONNECTICUT, Federal towns in, 103.
- , areas of opposition and support to Federal Constitution in, 14-17.
 - , instruction to delegates in, 79-80.
 - , paper money in, 57-58.
 - , sources for local geography of, 103-104.
 - , towns of, not voting on Federal Constitution, 103.
 - , vote on Federal Constitution, 113.
- CONNECTICUT VALLEY, attitude on Federal Constitution, 8-11, 13.
- CONVENTIONS, county in Mass., 55-6.
- DAVIS, R. MEANS, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- DELAWARE, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 29-31.
- , reasons for Federalism of, 31.
- DIVIDED COUNTIES in Pennsylvania, 28.
- DEACUT CONVENTION of Massachusetts, 1776, 8-9.
- EGLE, WM. H., acknowledgments, 1, note.
- ELLIOT'S DEBATES, correction to Massachusetts roll of delegates in, 105-109.
- ELLSWORTH, OLIVER, cited, 20.
- , speech in Connecticut Convention on New York imposts, 16.
- FARMS, ABANDONED, 8, 12.
- FEDERAL AND ANTI-FEDERAL AREAS, how mapped, 3.
- , interstate groupings, 46-49.
- FEDERAL CONSTITUTION in Maryland, opposition and support for, 33.
- FOSTER, WM. E., acknowledgments, 1, note.
- FRANKLIN COUNTY, PENN., evidence as to the attitude of, 83, 84.
- GEORGIA, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 44, 45.
- , paper money in, 68, 69.
 - , sources for the local geography of, 104.
- GERMANS in N. C., attitude toward Federal Constitution of, 42.
- HAMILTON, MORRIS R., acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- HAMMOND, O. G., acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- HARRISON, J. L., acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- HASKINS, CHAS. H., acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- HENRY, PATRICK, OF VA., attitude on paper money, 67.
- , cited, 38.
- HENRY, WM. WIET, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- HUDSON, N. Y., a Federal city, 13.
- HUDSON RIVER VALLEY, N. Y., reasons for its general anti-Federal attitude, 21.
- IMPOST DUTIES of New York, 16.
- INSTRUCTIONS TO DELEGATES:
- , Connecticut, 79, 80.
 - , Maine, province of, 77, 78.
 - , Maryland, 85, 86.
 - , Massachusetts, 75, 78.
 - , New Hampshire, 70-75.
 - , New York, 80-82.
 - , North Carolina, 83.
 - , Pennsylvania, 82-84.
 - , Rhode Island, 80.
 - , Virginia, 86-92.
- INSTRUCTIONS VIOLATED by delegates, list of such members, 94, note 3.
- JAMESON'S ESSAYS ON CONSTITUTIONAL HISTORY of the United States, 3.
- JONES, WILLIE, Anti-Federal leader in N. C., 40.
- KENTUCKY, (DISTRICT) attitude toward Federal Constitution, 35.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 115.
- KNOX, HENRY, Letter to Washington concerning parties in Massachusetts in 1788, 13.
- LANDHOLDING, aristocratic features of, in New York, 25-6.
- LAUGHLIN, WM. M., acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- LAWYERS, importance of, in colonial period of N. Y. history, 23-24.
- LETTERS OF A LANDHOLDER, cited on character of opposition in Connecticut to the Federal Constitution, 14.
- LIVERMORE, JUDGE, Grafton Co., N. H., influential in the State Convention of 1788, 11.

- MCMMASTER, J. B.**, cited as to the make-up of the Anti-Federal party in Pennsylvania 27.
- MADISON, JAMES**, letter to Washington, statement of the opposition to the Federal Constitution, 13.
- MAINE**, province of, elements of opposition in, to the Federal Constitution, 14.
- , instruction to delegates in, 77, 78.
- , sources for the local geography of, 102.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 112, 113.
- MAP** of the Federal and Anti-Federal areas, plan of, 3.
- , showing distribution of population in 1790, referred to, 3.
- MARTIN, LUTHER**, leader of Anti-Federalism in Maryland, 33.
- MARYLAND**, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 32-34.
- , instructions to delegates in, 85, 86.
- , paper money in, 64-66.
- , sources for the local geography of, 104.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 114.
- MASON, GEO.**, cited on Anti-Federal attitude in Va., 36.
- MASSACHUSETTS**, additions and corrections to Elliot's list of delegates of state convention, 101, 105-109.
- , (including Maine), areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 12-14.
- , instruction to delegates, 75-77.
- , paper money in, 54-57.
- , sections in, per cent. of Federal and Anti-Federal strength in each, 12.
- , sources for the local geography of, 98-101.
- , towns of, not voting on Federal Constitution, 101.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 111, 112.
- MISSISSIPPI** river, opening of, a factor in the Virginia contest, 35.
- NEW HAMPSHIRE**, additions and corrections to Walker's list of delegates of state convention, 97, 98.
- , areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 7-11.
- , instruction to delegates in, 70-75.
- , paper money in, 52-54.
- , sources for the local geography of, 95.
- , towns of, not voting on Federal Constitution, 98.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 110, 111.
- NEW HAVEN GAZETTE**, cited as to the Anti-Federalist leaders in Connecticut, 15.
- NEW JERSEY**, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 32.
- , paper money in, 60-61.
- , analysis of vote of Legislature on, 60-61.
- , reasons for Federalism of, 32.
- NEW YORK**, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 18-26.
- , divided counties in, 82.
- , influence of her imposts on Connecticut and New Jersey, 16.
- , instruction to delegates in, 80-82.
- , landed aristocracy of, in 18th century, its effect on the state development, 26.
- , paper money in, 59-60.
- , sources for the local geography of, 103.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 114.
- NORTH CAROLINA**, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 38-42.
- , attitude of Anti-Federalists in, 40.
- , character of Federal and Anti-Federal areas in, 41, 42.
- , divided area of, 38.
- , Federal towns in, 41.
- , instruction to delegates in, 93.
- , paper money in, 67, 68.
- , sources for the local geography of, 104.
- , Tories in, attitude of, toward Federal Constitution, 39.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 115.
- , vote in 1789 on Federal Constitution of local units in, 42, 116.
- PACA, WM., Harford Co., Md.**, reasons for violating his instructions, 86.
- PAPER MONEY** in Connecticut, 57-58.
- , Georgia, 68, 69.
- , Maryland, 64-66.
- , Massachusetts, 54-57.
- , New Hampshire, 52-54.
- , action of state legislature on, in 1786, analysis of vote, 53.
- , town vote on, analyzed, 53-54.
- , New Jersey, 60-61.
- , New York, 59-60.
- , action of state Legislature on, 59.
- , North Carolina, 67, 68.
- , Pennsylvania, 62-64.
- , Rhode Island, 58-59.
- , South Carolina, 68.
- , Virginia, 66, 67.
- PAPER MONEY, AND ANTI-FEDERALISM**:-
- , general conclusions concerning, 69.
- , Maryland, 65.
- , Massachusetts, 57.
- , New York, 60.
- , Pennsylvania, 63.
- , Virginia, 67.
- PAPER MONEY FACTION**, important in contest over Federal Constitution, 50-52.
- PAPER MONEY ISSUES** in the states, 1785-87, 52.
- PAYNE, COL. ELISHA**, Lebanon, N. H., influence in Vermont union, and adoption of Federal Constitution, 10-11.
- PENNSYLVANIA**, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 26-29.
- , divided counties in, 83, 84.
- , instruction to delegates in, 82-84.
- , paper money in, 62-64.
- , sections in, as given by Breckenridge, 27.
- , sources for the local geography of, 103.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 114.
- PICKERING, TIMOTHY**, cited in a letter to Wingate as to the binding force of instructions to delegates in N. H., 74.
- PITTSBURG, PENN.**, a Federal city, 23.
- PORTSMOUTH, R. I.**, resolutions of, on ratifying Federal Constitution, 17.
- POWELL, LYMAN P.**, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- PRESBYTERIANS** in PENNSYLVANIA, attitude toward the Federal Constitution, 27.
- , in Virginia, 37.
- READ, GEO.**, letter to John Dickinson as to attitude of Delaware toward the Federal Constitution, 29.

- RHODE ISLAND**, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 17.
- , instruction to delegates in, 80.
- , paper money in, 58-59.
- , sources for the local geography of, 103.
- RIDER, SIDNEY S.**, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- ROLFE, HENRY P.**, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- SCOTCH, IRISH** in New Hampshire, attitude on the Federal Constitution, 8.
- , Pennsylvania, 27.
- , Virginia, 35.
- SCOTT, AUSTIN**, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- SCOTT, JOHN**, his Lost Principle cited on divided counties in Virginia, 87-91.
- SECTIONALISM IN NEW YORK**, threatened secession of southern counties, 19.
- SECTIONS IN PENNSYLVANIA**, on the question of the Federal Constitution, 29.
- SHAY'S REBELLION**, 54-5.
- SHENANDOAH VALLEY**, 47.
- SMITH, MELANCTHON**, 16.
- SOUTH CAROLINA**, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 42-44.
- , character of opposition and support in, 43.
- , instruction to delegates in, 93, 94.
- , paper money in, 68.
- , sources for the local geography of, 104.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 115.
- STATE CONVENTIONS** as representative of public opinion, 4-6.
- STEINER, BERNARD C.**, 1.
- STONE, F. D.**, 1.
- SUMNER, W. G.**, 2.
- TENNESSEE**, attitude toward Federal Constitution, 39.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 115.
- , vote in 1789 on Federal Constitution of local units in, 116.
- THWAITES, R. G.**, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- TORIES**, attitude toward Federal Constitution:
- , Maryland, 33.
- , New York, 20.
- , Pennsylvania, 23.
- , South Carolina, 44.
- TRYON, Gov., N. Y.**, cited as to the forces in N. Y. opposed to Great Britain in 1773, 25.
- VERMONT**, union with New Hampshire border towns, 1778 and 1781, 9.
- VIRGINIA**, areas of opposition and support to the Federal Constitution, 34-37.
- , divided counties in, 86-92.
- , influence of, on North Carolina, 39.
- , instruction to delegates in, 86-92.
- , paper money in, 66 and 67.
- , sectional groupings in, 34.
- , sources for the local geography of, 104.
- , vote on Federal Constitution of local units in, 114.
- WALKER, J. B.**, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- WASHINGTON COUNTY, Penn.**, evidence as to the attitude of, 84.
- WEEKS, STEPHEN B.**, acknowledgments to, 1, note.
- WEST VIRGINIA DISTRICT**, Federalism in, 35.
- WILKINSON**, letter to Gov. Miro, La., cited on attitude of Kentucky toward the union, 36.
- WILMINGTON, N. C.**, factions in, 41.
- WILSON**, cited as to the character of the opposition to the Federal Constitution in Pennsylvania, 28.
- WINTERBOTHAM**, cited as to the relative advance of N. Y. in 1796, 25.

INDEX TO VOLUME I, No. 2.

- ARTICLES OF CONFEDERATION**, financial provisions of, 118-119; attempts to amend, 155, 156, 157; authorize establishment of post, 167-168.
- BANKS OF NORTH AMERICA**, 205.
- BEAUMARCHAIS**, agent of France, 166.
- BILLS OF CREDIT**, see Paper Money.
- BOARD OF TREASURY**, 195, 210.
- BRECK, S.**, on operation of paper money, 127.
- BRONSON, H.**, on value of Continental paper money, 131, 132; on the policy of Congress, 139.
- BUDGET**, defined, 211; unity in budgetary procedure, 211-212; propriety of use of term in United States, 212; development of English budgetary methods, 213-214; budgetary methods in the colonies, 214-232; separation of powers, 214-215; legislative control of revenue, 215-216; legislative control of appropriations, 216-218; restrictions upon transfers of appropriations, 218-220; powers of lower branch of legislature in budgetary questions, 220-224; unified budgetary procedure 224-232; the development of a budget by the Continental Congress, 233-253; early management of budget by special committees, 233-234; looseness of early appropriations, 234-235; Treasury Board acts as a Committee of Ways and Means, 235-237; "plan of finance" and the improvement of budgetary methods in 1778, 237-238; European expenditures loosely managed, 239; financial statement of 1781, 241; further development of systems of appropriations, 242-243; the budget for 1783, 244; reasons for the development of budgetary unity, 245-247; budgetary methods remain unchanged after 1782, 247-250; but action becomes tardy, 250, 251, 253.
- COMMISSIONERS OF CLAIMS**, 193.
- COMMITTEE OF ACCOUNTS**, 190, 191.
- COMMITTEE OF FINANCE**, 193.
- CONFEDERATION**, the American, marks a period of transition and gradual growth, 120, 262.
- CONFEDERATIONS**, financial characteristics of, 120; these exemplified in the Continental Congress, 120-121.
- CONGRESS**, weakness of, in matters of finance, 119-120; resorts to issues of paper money, 123-124; but appreciated dangers of paper issues, 124; repudiates the paper, 137-138; policy of Congress in issuing paper, 138-139; resorts to domestic loan, 142; resorts to requisitions upon states, 153-164; establishes lottery, 166-167; establishes postoffice, 167-168; acquires a public domain, 169-171; hesitates to create strong executive departments, 189; finally creates unified department of finance, 199-201; develops a system of budgetary procedure, 233-253; financial weakness and final bankruptcy of, 252; seeks to develop methods of control, 254-261; influence of, 262.
- CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION**, prohibits states from issuing paper money, 139; intended to prohibit Congress from so doing, 139; view of the supreme court in the legal tender decisions, 140; provides for apportioning direct taxes, 1-5; gives Congress the power to levy taxes, 164.
- CONTINENTAL CONGRESS OF 1775**; a revolutionary body, 117-118; policy of, 118.
- CONTROL**, financial, 222, 254; peculiar position of Congress in the matter, 255; lack of knowledge on the subject, 255; restricts heads of finance department, 256; restricts subordinate officials, 256; slowly develops system of finance reports, 257; publicity of accounts, 257-258; checks on collection and issue, 258-259; Congressional investigations of the finance department, 259; system of audit, 259-261.
- DEANE, S.**, agent of the U. S. in France, 197.
- DEBT**, domestic, 143; various forms of indebtedness, 144-145; amount of domestic debt in 1789, 145; amount of foreign debt, 143; debts of the states, 149, 150.
- DEPARTMENT OF FINANCE**, delay in creating, 189, 190; first attempts to create, 190, 193; remodeling of department in 1778, 193; importance of this act, 194; reorganization in 1779, 195; investigations of department, 196; faults of administration, 196, 199; is finally unified, 199, 201; administration of Morris, 200, 207; new Board of Treasury, 210.
- DUTIES ON IMPORTS**, Congress seeks power to levy duties, 156, 157.
- EXPENDITURES**, difficulty of estimating, 173; expenditures 1775-1783 estimated by Jefferson, 174; actual expenditures, 1781-1783, 176; author's estimate of expenditures, 176, 180; expenditures, 1784-1788, 181, 187.
- FEES, FINES, AND FORFEITURES**, 167.
- FRANKLIN, B.**, urges Congress to resort to loans, 141; appointed postmaster general, 167; financial agent of U. S. in France, 197.

- HAMILTON, A.**, estimates cost of Revolution, 174.
- HILDRETH, R.**, on value of Continental paper, 131; estimates cost of Revolution, 174.
- IMPOST DUTIES**, Congress urges States to grant federal impost, 243.
- INDENTS**, or loan office interest certificates, 145.
- JEFFERSON, T.**, on value of Continental paper, 131; reckless estimate of land sales, 169-170; estimates expenses of Revolution, 174.
- LEGAL TENDER LAWS**, 123-129.
- LOANS**, Congress attempts to secure domestic loan, 126; establishes loan office, 142; interest on domestic debt payable in specie, 142; results of loan office systems, 143; specie value of loans, 143; vain efforts to fund and extinguish the debt, 144-145; temporary loans from Bank of North America, 146; foreign loans, 146-143; amounts secured from France, Holland and Spain, 147-143.
- LOAN OFFICE SYSTEM**, 142, 191-192.
- LOTTERY**, 166-167.
- MORRIS, G.**, appointed Assistant Financier, 201-202.
- MORRIS, R.**, urges Congress to fund debt, 144; secures establishment of bank, 146; urges need of taxes, 156; appointed Superintendent of Finance, 200; constructive plans of, 202; ability and heroic efforts of, 202-206; encounters bitter opposition, 208-207; manages to pay army, 207; resigns his position, 207; testimony concerning his efficiency, 208, 209; his connection with budgetary methods, 233, 243; urges Congress to provide for public debt, 243; improves financial reports and accounting, 257-253.
- PAPER MONEY**, the first financial expedient of Congress, 123; issues for 1775, 124-125; issues for 1776, 125; issues for 1777, 126; issues for 1778, 126; depreciation of the paper, 127; methods of forcing its circulation, 128-129; paper issues by the states, 129; issues for 1779, 130; Continental paper becomes worthless in 1780, 130; estimates of the specie value of the Continental issues, 131-136; table of depreciation in various states, 133; question as to date when depreciation began, 133-134; paper money repudiated by Congress, 136-137; bills of the "new tenor," 137-138; results of the Continental issues, 138-139; fate of the old issues, 137-138; Constitutional Convention opposes paper money, 139-140.
- POST-OFFICE**, established by Congress, 167-168.
- , income from, 168.
- PRICE CONVENTIONS**, 127.
- PRICE, RICHARD**, invited to become superintendent of finance, 194-195.
- PRICES**, regulation of, 127-123.
- PRIVATE CLAIMS**, 235, 243.
- PUBLIC DOMAIN**, ceded by states, 169; considered as a source of revenue, 169-170; receipts from land sales, 170; ordinance of 1785, 170.
- RAMSAY, D.**, on forcing laws, 128.
- REQUISITIONS**, to be apportioned by Congress, 118-119; the first requisition, 126, 153; results of the system, 153-154; difficulty of apportioning requisitions, 154-155; amounts contributed on the requisitions, 157-164; weakness of the system, 252.
- REVENUE AND SUPPLY**, necessity for coordination of, 211-212; in England, 213-214; in the American colonies, 214-232; in the Continental Congress, 233-253.
- REVENUE** from miscellaneous sources, 169, 171.
- ROSCHER**, on financial characteristics of confederations, 120.
- SMITH, W.**, on legislative control of appropriations in New York, 213.
- SUBSIDIES**, from France, 166-167; from Spain, 166.
- SUPERINTENDENT OF FINANCE**, 200.
- SUMNER, W. G.**, on value of Continental paper money, 131, 133; on expenditures by France, 180; his careful investigation into Morris's administration of the finances, 202.
- STATES**, jealous disposition of, 118, 120; hold price conventions, 127; pass legal tender laws, 128-129; issue paper money, 129; refuse to redeem the Continental issues of paper, 129; debts of, 149-150; fail to meet requisitions, 154; cede western lands to Congress, 169.
- TAXES**, to be apportioned by Congress, but levied by the states, 118-119; opposition of colonists to all taxes, 123-124, 152; Congress urges states to levy taxes, 126, 153; light burden of colonial taxes, 151-152; the requisitions of Congress, 153-164; Congress asks power to tax, 243; experience of Confederation led to preference for indirect taxes for federal purposes, 263.
- TOTAL REVENUES**, 171-172.
- TREASURERS**, appointed by Congress, 190.
- TREASURY BOARD**, 191-194.
- WEBSTER, PELATIAH**, on views of members of Congress, 124.

INDEX TO VOLUME I, No. 3.

- ADMINISTRATION, spirit and development of, 365.
- AMERICAN EVIDENCE as to French-Canadian feeling, 501.
- AMERICAN INVASIONS, Canadians alienated by, 514.
- , Canadians despoiled by, 517.
- , end of, 526.
- , failure in, to use Canadians, 514.
- , general character and conduct of troops in, 521.
- , general reflections in regard to, 627.
- , hard money element in, 516.
- , ill-treatment of Canadians by, 518.
- , influence of Carleton upon privates, of, 525.
- , insufficient explanations of failure of, 514.
- , possibilities of, 523.
- , statements of participants in, 522.
- AUTHORITIES, 553.
- BADEAU, evidence of, as to American invasions, 500.
- BOARD OF TRADE, expression of policy of 1768, 424.
- , consistency of policy of, 424.
- , Vandalia grants and, 426.
- BOSTON, letter to Quebec from Revolutionary Committee of, 1774, 484.
- BOUNDARIES OF QUEBEC, preliminary measures about, 413.
- , Proclamation of 1763 in regard to, 275, 415.
- , settlement of, demanded by fur-trade, 419.
- , uncertainty as to, 1763, 412.
- BOURGEOISIE, equally disaffected with peasantry, 511.
- BRITISH PARTY, American spirit among, 309.
- , antagonism between, and government, 306.
- , apparent intolerance of, 310.
- , Carleton in regard to, 308, 483.
- , civil laws and, 320.
- , commercial position of, 1770, 318.
- , conduct of, through war, 487.
- , connection of, with older colonies, 312.
- , correspondence of, with revolutionists, 484.
- , demands of, as to assembly, 318.
- , difficulty as to antecedents of, 303.
- , evidence about American section of, 305.
- , explanation of official attitude toward, 307.
- , general political attitude of, 309.
- , general British view about, 304.
- , grand jury and, 1764, 311.
- , hostility to noblesse of, 321.
- , influence of, with people, 322.
- , injustice of government toward, 309.
- , judicial conditions and, 1770, 318.
- , knowledge of other colonies among, 304.
- , leadership of American section of, 304.
- , Maseres as to customs duties and, 315.
- BRITISH PARTY, Murray in regard to, 307.
- , need of discrimination as to periods and sections, 310.
- , occupations of, in Quebec, 305.
- , opposition of, to English bankruptcy law, 1767, 321.
- , opposition of, to Murray, 1765, 313.
- , partial statistics of, 303.
- , petitions of, for Assembly 1763-71, 318.
- , political vigor of, 324.
- , practically all urban in residence, 305.
- , political importance of, 303.
- , relative strength of, sections of, 486.
- , Stamp Act and, 316.
- , split in, 485.
- , two classes among, 304, 310.
- CANADA, capitulation of 1763 and Church of Rome, 433.
- , acquisition of, by England, 275.
- , freedom of England as to boundaries of, 275.
- , references to affairs of, 1764-74, 393.
- , not regarded as lever against other colonies, 401.
- , modern political problems of, and Quebec Act, 540.
- , revolutionary comprehension of strategic importance of, 515.
- , possible better development of, 542.
- , underestimation of, 1763, 402.
- , acquisition of, in relation to general colonial policy, 400.
- , discussion as to retention of, 1760-3.
- , material conditions of, 278.
- , population of 1760-74, 280.
- CARLETON, advocacy of French law by, 374.
- , advantages of, 371.
- , Commissions and Instructions of, 384.
- , considerate treatment of Church of Rome by, 438.
- , dependence of Imperial government upon, 375.
- , disqualifications for government, 372.
- , efforts of, to organize defence of Quebec, 498.
- , general views as to Canadian conditions, 373.
- , important results of mistakes of, 372, 375.
- , later evidence of, as to Canadian conditions, 498.
- , likeness to Murray in prejudices, 372.
- , personal characteristics of, 369.
- , policy of, 371.
- CIVIL GOVERNMENT, institution of, 277.
- , bases of, 1763-91, 277.
- CIVIL LAW, Quebec Act and, 450.
- , Board of Trade in regard to, 1765-6, 453.

- , British crown lawyers and, 453.
- , Carleton in regard to, 455.
- , Carleton's instructions 1775 in relation to, 461.
- , confusion in administration of, 1775-91, 473.
- CIVIL LAW**, English, not abolished, 451.
- , English, to be gradually introduced, 451.
- , first indications of reversion to French, 452.
- , Imperial reports about, 1771-3, 457.
- , Murray in regard to, 451.
- , official reports about, 1769, 456.
- , Proclamation of 1763 and, 461.
- , Provincial Council and, 1767, 454.
- , reversion to French, in regard to land, 1771, 457.
- , Quebec Act debates and, 460.
- , Quebec Act and, 450.
- , status of English, in Province, 332.
- CIVIL SERVICE**, abuses of, 357.
- CHURCH OF ROME**, treaty obligations and government attitude, 443.
- , contentment of, with government attitude, 443.
- , colonial apprehensions as to, 443.
- , disadvantages to, of Quebec Act settlement, 443.
- , government and, in Quebec Act debates, 442.
- , illustration of position from history of Granada, 444.
- , office-holding and, 443.
- , position of, not necessarily improved by Quebec Act, 442.
- , question as to establishment of, 1774, 441.
- , religious privileges alone conceded, 440.
- CLERGY, ROMAN CATHOLIC**, satisfactory conduct of, 301.
- , continued great influence of, 300.
- , in military period, 299.
- , petition from, 1763, 301.
- , sections of, 300.
- COMMONS, HOUSE OF**, slight attendance in, during Quebec Act debate, 397.
- CONGRESS, CONTINENTAL**, inadequate Canadian efforts of, 515.
- , Commissioners of, in Canada, 1776, 503.
- , Commissioners of, as to ill-conduct of troops in Canada, 520.
- , measures of, in regard to Canada, 495.
- CHURCH OF ENGLAND**, provisions as to, 1774-5, 440.
- COUNCIL, PROVINCIAL**, developments in, 473.
- COURTS**, slight use by people of, 354.
- , confusion and uncertainty in administration of, 355.
- , burdensome procedure of, 356.
- DURHAM, LORD**, report of, 1839, 539.
- ENGLISH ADMINISTRATION**, instability of, 1760-70, 392, 531.
- , effects of instability of, on Canada, 392.
- ENGLISH SETTLERS**, influence of, over French Canadian masses, 322.
- , no irreconcilable discord between, and French, 325.
- FEES**, continuance of abuse of, under Quebec Act, 497.
- FINANCES**, dependent position of Province as to, 390.
- , expenditures, 363.
- , sources of revenue, 361.
- FRANKLIN, BENJAMIN**, opinion of, as to Anglicizing of Canada, 540.
- FUR TRADE**, disorganization of, 416.
- FRENCH CANADIANS**, absence of popular movements among, 292-296.
- , absence of direct representation of, 294.
- , action of Congress in regard to, 495.
- , apprehensions of, in regard to Quebec Act, 490.
- , attitude toward Quebec Act, 457, 490, 494.
- , attitude of, in American invasions, 495, 495-513.
- , bourgeoisie element of, 295.
- , Carleton's later reports about, 492.
- , Chief Justice Hey, about 1775, 494.
- , close official scrutiny of, 291.
- , continued use of own law by, 334.
- , effects of Quebec Act on, 457.
- , failure of Carleton to arm, 497.
- , fears of the native leaders of, 493.
- , general pictures of, 282.
- , general non-recognition of changed conditions among, 290.
- , government discouragement of petitions among, 291.
- , indifference among, as to exclusion from office, 290.
- , influence of English on, 493.
- , local self government among, 293.
- , loyal addresses from 1775, 492.
- , military operations among, 1775, 496.
- , official observations of, 1762-3, 284.
- , peasantry, improved position of, 288.
- , political education of, 294.
- , political efforts of English among, 1773, 491.
- , possibility of anglocizing of, demonstrated, 295.
- , religious petitions of, 284, 288, 301.
- , relations between classes of, 285.
- , satisfactory attitude of, during military rule, 286.
- , slight emigration of, 288.
- , slight legal grievances of, 355.
- , Stamp Act and, 317.
- , statistics as to British support among, 510, (note).
- FRENCH NATIONALITY**, development of, as result of Quebec Act, 538.
- GOVERNMENT**, long delay in settlement of, 391.
- GOVERNOR**, Instructions to, 1775, 473.
- , position of, 337.
- , relations between Council and, 333.
- , executive work of, Council and, 338.
- , judicial work of Council and, 333.
- , legislative work of, Council and, 341.
- , unusual importance of, 365.
- GOVERNORS**, common errors of, 372.
- GRANADA**, government and Church of Rome in, 444.
- GRAND JURY**, presentment of, 1774, 311-13.
- HALDIMAND**, relation of, to Council, 475.
- HEY, CHIEF JUSTICE**, evidence of, about French-Canadians, 500.
- HILLSBOROUGH**, and provincial congresses, 389.
- IMPERIAL GOVERNMENT**, action of, in regard to Assembly, 387.
- , attitude in regard to Council, 1774, 475.
- , attitude of, about judiciary, 1767-72, 377.
- , attitude of, toward English settlers, 378.
- , attitude of, shown by constitutional documents, 380.
- , continuity of policy of, 411.
- , commission of Gov. Murray, 1765, and, 382.
- , commissions of Gov. Carleton and, 384.

- , general Canadian policy of, 375.
- , ignorance and neglect, normal conditions of, 380.
- , neglect of Canadian matters by, 391.
- , opposition of, to colonial colonial congresses, 1771, 389.
- , policy that should have been adopted by, 534.
- , reprimand of Grand Jury by, 1764, 373.
- , reprimand of Assembly agitation by, 379.
- , special Canadian interpositions of, 386.
- , slight recognition of peculiar Canadian conditions by, 383.
- , unconstitutional judicial action of, 1768, 389.
- JESUITS**, property of, 450.
- , government attitude toward, 449.
- JUDICIARY**, non-recognition of conditions through, 346.
- , organization of, 344.
- LAND**, conditions of grants of, 1764-1771, 457.
- LAW**, anarchy in administration of, 1775-91, 478.
- , Carleton in regard to, 455.
- , continued use of French civil, 352.
- , confusion and uncertainty in, after 1774, 473.
- , development of policy in regard to, 1763-74, 451.
- , difficulty as to, 349.
- , establishment of French civil, 1774, 450.
- , English civil, not "abolished," 451.
- , instructions to Carleton about, 1775, 461.
- , of land, change in, 1771, 457.
- , official reports about, 456.
- , Quebec Act, debate about, 460.
- LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY**, Board of Trade reports, 1765, and, 463.
- , Board of Trade about, 1765, 463.
- , Carleton's Instructions, 1768, and, 464.
- , colonial attitude as to withholding of, 463.
- , debates in Commons about, 1764, 469.
- , denial of, 1774, 463.
- , design of government and, 471.
- , discussion of, by Maseres, 1773, 467.
- , ground of Wedderburne's decision against, 466.
- , how far colonial apprehensions as to withholding of, were founded, 471.
- , indications as to continued purpose of, 1768, 464.
- , only deferred by Quebec Act, 470.
- , presumption of, in instructions, 464.
- , proclamation of, in 1763, 463.
- , provincial officials in regard to, 467.
- , Quebec Act and, 462.
- , Quebec Act debates and, 469.
- , real attitude of government about, 470.
- , report of Wedderburne about 1772, 465.
- LEGISLATION**, range of Provincial, under Quebec Act, 473.
- MASERES**, Attorney-General, as to attitude of British party about laws, 321.
- , on customs situation, 315.
- MURRAY**, Governor James, attitude of, toward French Canadians, 367.
- , commission of, 381.
- , comparative view of commission of, 382.
- , general difficulties of, 367.
- , indications as to general line of policy of, 368.
- , personality of, 366.
- , personal character of, 366.
- , policy of, 368.
- , views of, concerning government, 368.
- MILITARY RULE**, nominal character of, 276.
- , period of, 276.
- , principles of administration in, 276.
- , satisfactory attitude of Canadians during, 276.
- MISSISSIPPI**, only Canadian boundary, 1763, 275.
- MONTREAL**, Capitulation of September 8, 1760, 275.
- NOBLESSE**, approval of military government by, 298.
- , Carleton concerning, 1767-8, 298.
- , emigration of, to France, 1763, 298.
- , first political manifestation of, 1766, 298.
- , general official representations about, 1766, 297.
- , influence of, only military, 298.
- , not country gentlemen, 298.
- , petition of, in favor of Murray, 1766, 299.
- , political manifestations of, 298.
- , poverty of, 298.
- , small importance of, at crisis, 512.
- , faithfulness to British government of, 511.
- NOVA SCOTIA**, revolutionary indications in, 316.
- OFFICIAL RELATIONS** between home and Provincial governments, 386.
- OHIO COUNTRY**, rapidly changing character of, 1768-71.
- , changing views in regard to, 427.
- , withdrawal of older policy in regard to, 1772, 429.
- OLD COLONIAL POLICY** reasserted in Quebec Act, 423.
- PATENT OFFICES** not stopped by Quebec Act, 477.
- PEASANTRY**, Hey as to relations between, and noblesse, 1775, 497.
- PONTIAC RISING OF 1763**, significance of, 408.
- PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT**, abuse of patent offices under, 357.
- , abuse of fees under, 357.
- , actual unconstitutionality of, 1764-74, 328.
- , actual continuance of French civil law by, 349.
- , based on Proclamation of, 1763, 328.
- , bearing of, Governor's instructions upon, 330.
- , Capitulation of Canada and legislative conditions under, 332.
- , changes in position of Governor in, 337.
- , character of, 326.
- , comparison of legislation under, with that of Nova Scotia, 328.
- , commission of Governor Murray, and, 337.
- , conditions and procedure of Council in, 339.
- , constitutional basis of, 328.
- , contemporary statements as to legal confusion under, 351.
- , circumstances mitigating legal confusion, 352.
- , customs revenue under, 362.
- , definite legislative change in judicial system, 348.
- , early official opinion as to law under, 350.

- , English council as compared with French, 340.
- , English aspect of judiciary under, 346.
- , executive aspects of, 343.
- , expenses of, 363.
- , finances of, 360.
- , friction and complaints as to judicial administration, 356
- , general status of, 1764-74, 326.
- , general administration of, 337.
- , general judiciary under, 344.
- , general civil service under, 357.
- , judicial conditions inferior to old French, 356.
- , judicial aspects of, 343.
- , large place of government in, 365.
- , laws in use under, 349.
- , legislative methods and work of, 341.
- , legislative basis of judiciary under, 345.
- , later judicial aspects of, 347.
- , Mansfield Granada decision as applied to, 326.
- , nature of, 326.
- , no sufficient reform of fee abuse under, 360.
- , opinions as to civil law under, 331.
- , policy of legal compromise, 350.
- , Proclamation of 1763 and legislative conditions under, 333.
- , procedure in higher courts under, 353.
- , relation between governor and council under, 333.
- , revenue as compared with French conditions, 361.
- , spirit and development of, 365.
- , standpoint of constitutional law and, 326.
- , taxable incompetency of, 361.
- , Treaty of Paris and legislative conditions of, 333.
- , unconstitutionality of legislation by, 328.
- PROVINCIAL LEGISLATION**, nullity of, 331.
- PROVINCIAL AND IMPERIAL GOVERNMENTS**, relations between, 386.
- PROCLAMATION OF 1763**, 405.
- , a culmination of previous acts, 400.
- , as expression of British policy, 400.
- , boundary provisions of, in view of origin, 414.
- , implied duplicity of, 406.
- , provisional and temporary aspects of, 415.
- , provisions of, 405.
- , preliminary history of, 406.
- , Quebec Act of 1774 and, 423.
- , regard to Indians shown in, 406.
- PROTESTANT CHURCH**, provisions of Quebec Act for, 440.
- PROVINCE OF QUEBEC**, material conditions of, 1760-1774, 278.
- QUEBEC ACT, 1774**, 544-5.
- , abstract of, 278.
- , absence of evidence about indirect designs of, 472.
- , aspects of importance of, 391.
- , appearance of, May 2, 1774, 394.
- , attendance in Commons during passage of, 397.
- , boundaries of Quebec and, 39.
- , boundary provisions of in connection with general British colonial policy, 399.
- , colonial apprehensions about, 472.
- , coercive intent of, not likely to be carefully concealed, 462.
- , Cavendish report of Commons' Debates on, 395.
- , character of opposition to, 395.
- , debates concerning repeal of, 1775, 473.
- , disastrous character of the Western policy of, 431.
- , definite settlement of government by, 391.
- , different points of interest of, 391.
- , direct developments from, 538.
- , disastrous general colonial influence of, 381.
- , evidence as to origin in connection with development of colonial troubles, 530.
- , exact character and effect of religious provisions of, 434.
- , effect on English in Quebec of, 482.
- , earlier colonial troubles in regard to, 530.
- , error as to effects of, 481.
- , general French Canadian feeling as to particular provisions of, 488.
- , importance of boundary provisions of, 398.
- , influence of, on revolutionary development, 481.
- , indication colonial feeling about, 481.
- , Lecky, in regard to, 432.
- , later Canadian history and, 533.
- , large practical failure, 1774-1791, 477.
- , Mills, about authorship of, 396.
- , movements of English in Quebec, against, 1774, 483.
- , main subject, matters of, 396.
- , natural character of the colonial apprehensions, 530.
- , no reason for concealment about, 472.
- , possible legislation instead of, 534-42.
- , purpose of examination of origins of, 530.
- , policy of, 480.
- , preliminary history of, not in support of colonial apprehensions about, 472.
- , progress of, through parliament, 395.
- , results of, not what supposed, 480.
- , real practical grievance not redressed by, 497.
- , religious provisions and debates concerning, 432-441.
- , religious provisions of, in view of earlier administration, 439.
- , reasons for open avowal about, 472.
- , relation to English colonization in Quebec of, 535.
- QUEBEC EXTENSION**, William Knox, in regard to, 1774, 430.
- , illiberal expressions about, only indicative of the general illiberal policy long established, 423.
- QUEBEC EXTENSION**, Wedderburne and Lyttleton about, 420.
- , importance of, in general Western history, 398.
- , modern views concerning, 398.
- , asserted change in British policy about, 1760-3, 399.
- , Treaty of Paris, 1763, with regard to, 400.
- REGULAR CLERGY**, condition and treatment, 449.
- RELIGIOUS TOLERATION**, degree of, in Quebec, 447.
- RELIGIOUS POLICY**, consistency of, in regard to Canada, 435.
- , Governor Murray as to, 1763, 435.
- , Earl of Halifax as to, 1763, 436.
- , Board of Trade as to, 1766, 436.
- , administration in regard to, 1764-72, 437.

- , discussion in Commons about, 1774, 431.
- , instructions to Carleton about, 1763, 457.
- REPRESENTATIVE ASSEMBLY**, British movements for, 1766-73, 318-20.
- , development of British party in regard to, 320.
- , mooted French-English union in regard to, 1773, 319.
- REVOLUTIONARY INVASION**, character of the end of, 526.
- , conduct of, likely to repel Canadians, 527.
- , enlistment of revolutionary troops in British ranks, 523.
- , evidence as to, from *Journals of Arnold's expedition*, 524.
- , failure of, due mainly to misconduct, 514.
- , general instability of troops engaged in, 1776, 525.
- , general causes assigned for failure of, 514.
- , general ill-treatment of Canadians during, 518.
- , indications as to colonial forces in, 521.
- , poor general character of colonial troops in, 522.
- , money difficulty in, 516.
- , possible results of, 523.
- , spoliation of Canadians during, 517.
- , testimony of commanders about colonial troops, 523.
- , utter failure of, 513.
- , value of, in testing Canadian feeling, 495.
- REVOLUTIONARY IDEAS** as to importance of Canada, 515.
- ROCKINGHAM MINISTRY**, fall of, and Canada, 393.
- ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH**, bishop permitted at Quebec, 1766, 436.
- , Carleton's instructions about, 1775, 439.
- , effect of Quebec Act on, 442.
- , government and, 433.
- , government attitude towards, in Granada, 1763-3, 444.
- , liberal treatment of, in Canada, 447.
- , position of, by Quebec Act, 439.
- , position of, in Granada compared, 444.
- SMITH, GOLDWIN**, opinion as to anglicizing of Quebec, 541.
- SOCIAL RELATIONS** between English and French Canadians, 321.
- STAMP ACT** in Quebec, 316-18.
- SUMMARY OF OBJECTS** of study, 529.
- SULPITIANS**, 449.
- TREATY OF PARIS**, 275.
- , Bancroft and Lecky as to, 404.
- , in regard to Roman Catholic faith, 433.
- , limited scope of religious articles of, 434.
- VANDALIA**, grant of, 1772, 426.
- , in relation to, general policy, 423.
- WASHINGTON**, statements of, as to ill-conduct of colonial troops in Canada, 519.
- WEST**, continuity as to land policy in, —, disorder and turbulence of, 417.
- , disastrous character of policy in, 331.
- , government neglect of, 1763-74, 416.
- , injury to trade from unsettled conditions in, 417.
- , lack of joint colonial action as to, 418.
- , plans as to government of, 416.
- , why annexed to Quebec, 1774, 419.
- WHIG PARTY** and Quebec Act, 531.

BINDING LIST AUG 15 1928

47001

Wisconsin, University of
Bulletin. Economics, political science
and history series. Vol. 1

P
Univ
W

University of Toronto
Library

DO NOT
REMOVE
THE
CARD
FROM
THIS
POCKET

Acme Library Card Pocket
Under Pat. "Ref. Index File"
Made by LIBRARY BUREAU

